38.

600.

THE

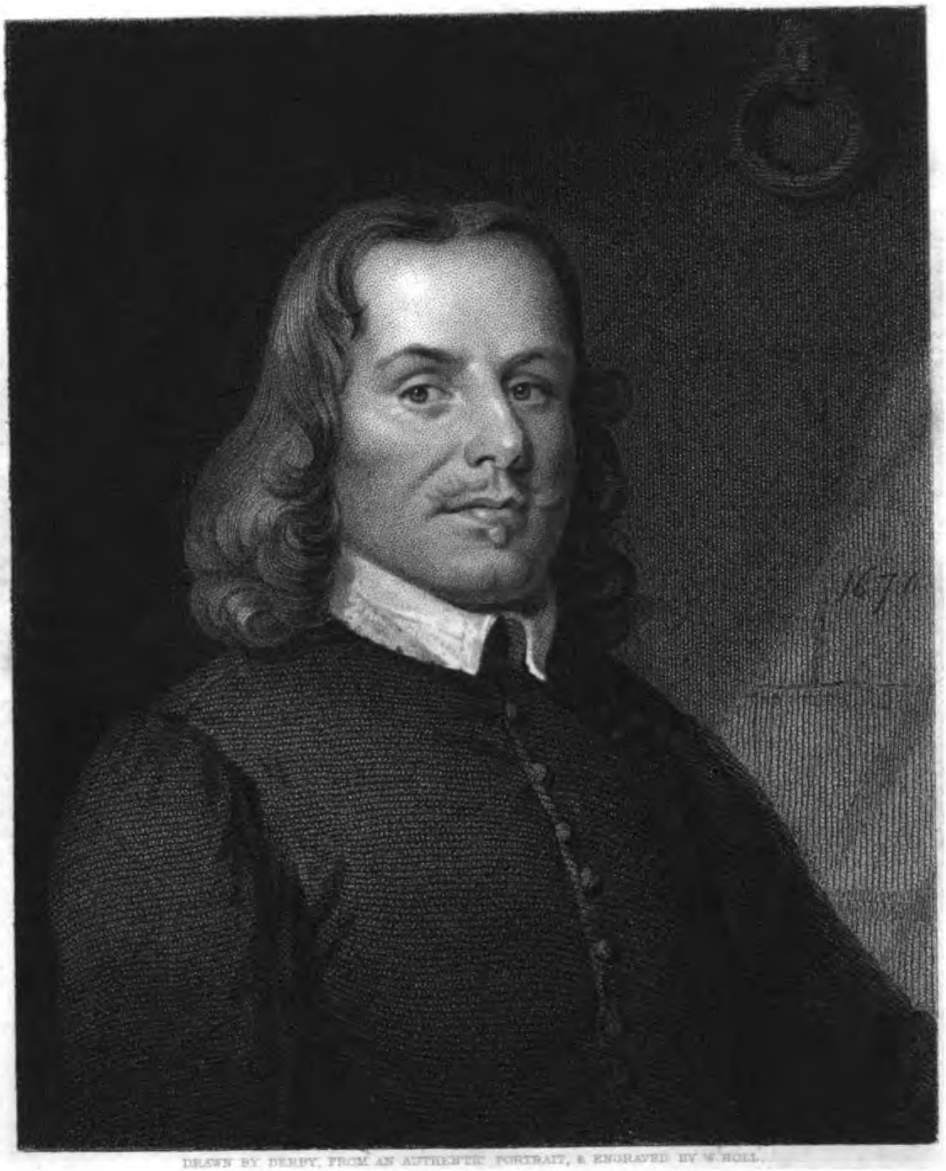
PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.

DRAWN BY DERBY, FROM AN AUTHENTIC PORTRAIT, & ENGRAVED BY W. HOLL

we pray you in the bowels of Christ.

Jo: Bunyan 1682

J. M. W. Turner R.A.



DRAWN BY DERBY, FROM AN AUTHENTIC PORTRAIT, & ENGRAVED BY W. HOLL.

we pray you in the bowels of Christ.

Jo: Bunyan 1682

THE

PILGRIM'S PROGRESS,

BY

JOHN BUNYAN.

MOST CAREFULLY COLLATED WITH THE EDITION CONTAINING THE AUTHOR'S LAST ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

WITH EXPLANATORY NOTES,
BY
WILLIAM MASON.

AND A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR,

BY

JOSIAH CONDER, ESQ.

TWENTY-FIVE ENGRAVINGS.

SECOND EDITION.

1838.

FISHER, SON, AND CO.
LONDON AND PARIS.

EMBELLISHMENTS.

SONNET.

VIGNETTE FRONTISPIECE.

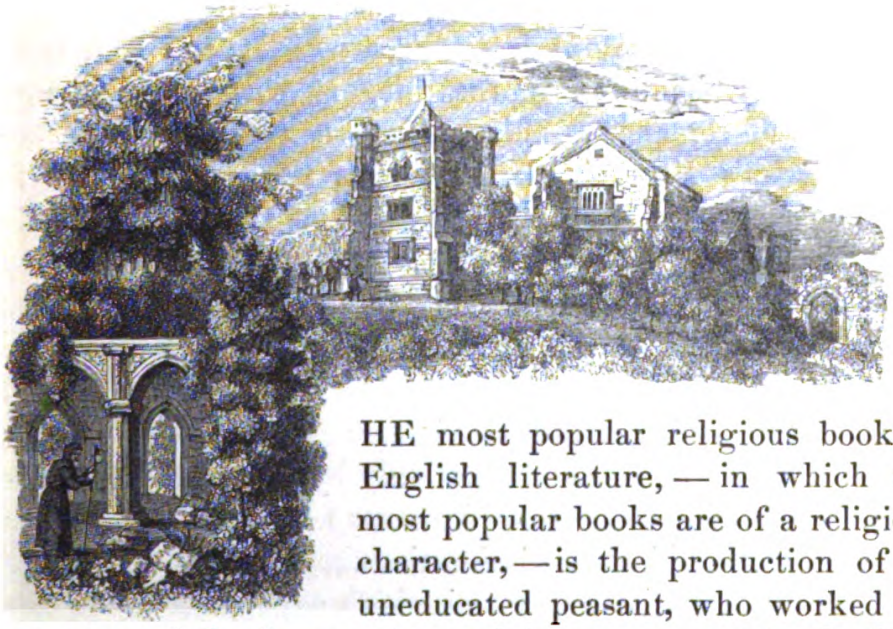
O! FOR ONE BRIGHT THOUGH MOMENTARY GLANCE;
SUCH AS OF OLD IN PATMOS ISLE WAS GIVEN
TO HIM WHO SAW THE CLOUDS ASUNDER RIVEN;
AND, PASSING ALL THE SPLENDOUR OF ROMANCE,
IN GLORY, AND IN "POMP OF CIRCUMSTANCE:"
THE NEW JERUSALEM COME DOWN FROM HEAVEN;—
OR THE LEAST MEASURE OF THAT MYSTIC LEAVEN,
WHICH BLESS'D OLD BUNYAN'S VISIONARY TRANCE!
BUT VAIN THE PAINTER'S OR THE POET'S SKILL,
THAT HEAVENLY CITY'S GLORY TO DECLARE;—
ALL SUCH CAN FURNISH IS A VISION FAIR,
AND GORGEOUS; HAVING, AS ITS CENTRE STILL,
HIS CROSS WHO DIED ON CALV'RY'S HOLY HILL;
MAN'S ONLY TITLE TO ADMITTANCE THERE.

BERNARD BARTON.

MEMOIR OF THE LIFE AND WRITINGS

OF

JOHN BUNYAN.



THE most popular religious book in English literature, — in which the most popular books are of a religious character, — is the production of an uneducated peasant, who worked his way out of the lowest vice and ignorance, not by the force of his genius, so much as by that of an impulse which quickened his genius into life, and transformed him at once intellectually and morally. The finest specimen of well-sustained allegory in any language, is the composition of this self-taught rustic, who little aimed at literary celebrity in the homely parable which he wrote to solace his prison hours, for the religious instruction of the common people.

The most admirable exposition of the elements of Christian theology, — one which is so little of a controversial or sectarian character, that it may confessedly be read without offence by sober-minded Protestants of all persuasions, and yet so comprehensive, as to form the best popular body of divinity,— is the composition of an obscure itinerant preacher, whose apostolic labours consigned him, in the days of the Stuarts, to a twelve years' imprisonment in Bedford gaol, for no other crime than his nonconformity. What is still more remarkable, this work, the Odyssey of the English people,—the favourite with young and old; which the poet admires for its imaginative beauty, and in which the artist finds the most delightful subjects for the pencil; to the extraordinary merit of which, testimony has been borne by critics who have had no sympathy with either the design and religious spirit of the work, or the theological opinions interwoven with it, and who rank the realities shadowed in the allegory with the visionary creations of romance;—this work—we need not name it—the Pilgrim's Progress, is, in fact, a powerful address to the conscience; having no other object than to delineate the successive stages of the spiritual life, and to portray the mental conflicts of experimental piety, which, to those who have no corresponding experience, must appear the hallucination of fanaticism. Strange that a work should have power so to please the imagination of an indevout man, which can be understood only by the heart in which religion has its seat;—that those who have not the key to the cipher, should still admire the character in which the spiritual meaning is veiled, and which experience alone can perfectly interpret. But such is the fact. This extraordinary work, it has been beautifully remarked by an American critic, "is like a painting meant to be exhibited by fire-light: the common reader sees it by day. To the Christian (the actual pilgrim) it is a glorious transparency; and the light that shines through it, and gives its incidents such life, its colours such depth, and the whole scene such a surpassing glory, is light from eternity, the meaning of heaven."

Religion never offends, so long as she addresses only the imagination; a fact of which, for opposite purposes, the Author of all Truth and the apostles of error have alike availed themselves; the former to gain access by this avenue to the understanding and the conscience, the latter to enlist the imagination in the support of superstition. He who spake as never man spake, taught the people in parables, and by this means obtained a hearing from those who could not bear his hard sayings; and still these divine allegories—the matchless parable of the Prodigal Son, for instance—have charms for readers who never take home to their own bosoms their spiritual import. Rousseau has eloquently eulogised the sublime poetry of the Scriptures. The Pilgrim's Progress is replete with the spirit of poetry, caught from no earthly muse. Bunyan's genius was nourished purely from the fountain-head of inspiration. He thought in the very dialect of Scripture; and the imagery of the Bible was ever present to his thoughts, as, if we may say so, the native scenery of his spiritual birth. He was made by the Bible; educated by the study of it; it was his "book of all learning;" and the simplicity of purpose and the intense interest with which he searched its contents, as the treasury of heavenly wisdom, rendered him, like Apollos, "eloquent and mighty in the Scriptures," while his mind became more and more imbued with their "spirit and life." It has been said with some truth, that the genius of his work is Hebrew. "The poetry of the Bible," remarks the critic to whom we have already referred, "was not less the source of Bunyan's poetical power, than the study of the whole Scriptures was the source of his simplicity and purity of style. His heart was not only made new by the spirit of the Bible, but his whole intellectual being was penetrated and transfigured by its influence. He brought the spirit and power gathered from so long and exclusive a communion with the prophets and apostles, to the composition of every page of the Pilgrim's Progress. To the habit of mind thus induced, and the workings of an imagination thus disciplined, may be

traced the simplicity of all his imagery, and the power of his personifications. . . . . He wrote from the impulse of his genius, sanctified and illuminated by a heavenly influence: and its movements were as artless as the movements of a little child left to play upon the green by itself."* It is in this inimitable simplicity and artlessness, that the work comes nearer to the character of the sacred writings than, perhaps, any uninspired composition.

And, like the Scriptures, Bunyan's parable, while it commands the admiration of cultivated minds by those qualities which delight the imagination, has conveyed instruction and consolation to thousands incapable of appreciating its genius, and unconscious of the spell which it exerted over their minds. To the child, it is a gallery of pictures; to the man of taste, an exquisite drama; to the plain Christian of duller fancy, a chart and road-book of his course through this world. With regard to many whom the Pilgrim's Progress captivates, it might be said of its Author as of the Hebrew prophet: "Lo! thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy words, but they do them not." On the other hand, thousands who have had no ear for the music, have delighted in the words of the song, and have followed the instruction it conveyed: it would not otherwise be adapted to the mass of common minds among the lower classes for whom it was designed, and upon whom it has, for two hundred years, exerted a beneficial effect which it is impossible to bring within any estimate. But the rich vein of native good sense and sober pleasantry which runs through the work, recommends it to all orders of readers; and the Pilgrim's Progress was the favourite of the people, before the fame of its Author had made its way up to those who are called the public. In the "well-told tale,"

> "Sweet fiction and sweet truth alike prevail.
> Its humorous vein, strong sense, and simple style,
> May teach the gayest, make the gravest smile.—

* North American Review, No. LXXIX. p. 462.

Witty, and well employed, and, like thy Lord,
Speaking in parables his slighted word;
I name thee not, lest so despised a name
Should move a sneer at thy deserved fame."

So Cowper sang fifty years ago; and that there is no longer any danger of moving a sneer by naming the Author of the Pilgrim's Progress, affords reason to hope that we have grown, in this country, somewhat wiser.

In addition to these various sources of attraction, the work possesses, in a considerable degree, the interest of autobiography: for it is impossible not to feel that, in the progress of his pilgrim, the Author is laying open to us his own mental history. As he tells us in his homely rhymes,

"It came from mine own heart, so to my head,
And thence into my fingers trickled."

This characteristic feature of the parable broadly and happily distinguishes it from the heavy ingenuities of didactic or sentimental allegorists, such as the brood of imitators whom his success raised up, or those who had preceded him in the same species of composition. The charge of being a plagiarist, or of having been assisted in the composition, Bunyan himself indignantly repels:

"Manner and matter too was all mine own."

"But," remarks Dr. Southey, "original as Bunyan believed his own work to be, and as, in the main, undoubtedly it is, the same allegory had often been treated before him."*

* Mr. Montgomery, in his very able Introductory Essay to the Pilgrim's Progress, refers to a poem, entitled "The Pilgrim," in Witney's "Emblems," (1585,) the print affixed to which represents a pilgrim leaving the world, (a geographical globe,) and travelling towards the symbol of the Divine Name. This emblem, with the following stanza, might, it is imagined, have suggested to Bunyan the first idea of his story; though it does not, in fact, present any thing beyond the familiar scripture simile:—

"O happier they that, pondering this arighte,
Before that here their pilgrimage bee past,
Resigne this world; and marche with all their mighte
Within that pathe that leads where ioys shall last.
And whilst they maye, there treasure vp their store,
Where, without rust, it lastes for evermore."

Dr. Southey mentions a once popular French poem, composed A. D. 1310, entitled, "*Le Pelerin de la Vie Humaine*," as having suggested the Voyage of

How could it fail to have been employed by religious writers, when the outline of the allegory is supplied by the Holy Scriptures? In the eleventh chapter of the Epistle to the Hebrews, the Christian life is represented as a pilgrimage to a better, a heavenly country; and, in the following chapter, we have the heavenly city magnificently described. Surely we need look no further for the origin of Bunyan's allegory, as regards the main idea of the parable. But the felicity with which he has dramatised the progress of the Christian pilgrim, is peculiar to himself; and Dr. Southey sums up his examination of the works to which it has been thought to bear the strongest appearance of resemblance, with the candid and decisive conclusion, that "if ever there was a work which carried with it the stamp of originality in all its parts, it is that of John Bunyan."

Did its Author's claim to originality rest upon this work alone, his fame would even then be safe; but, in his Holy War, Bunyan has displayed even superior power of invention; and if his "Life and Death of Mr. Badman" has not been as generally read, it is, in the opinion of Dr. Southey, whom we cite as an impartial judge, "because the subject is less agreeable, not that it has been treated with inferior ability."

the Wandering Knight, by Jean de Cartheray, a French Carmelite, of which a translation was printed in this country in the reign of Elizabeth; but there is only a vague general resemblance in the subject, and some occasional similarity in the details. The Pilgrimage of Dovekin and Willekin to their Beloved in Jerusalem, originally published in Dutch, at Antwerp, in 1627, has also been absurdly supposed to have been the original of the Pilgrim's Progress. Dr. Southey has triumphantly exposed the groundless nature of this supposition: the works have nothing in common. Dean Patrick's "Parable of the Pilgrim," 1663, comes nearer to Bunyan's work in some points of general resemblance; but it is a treatise rather than an allegory, and the author, disclaiming all pretension to fancy or invention, states, that he took the idea from a discourse so entitled in Baker's "*Sancta Sophia.*" Bernard's "Isle of Man, or the Legal Proceedings in Man-shire against Sin," a popular book in Bunyan's time, is more likely to have been seen by him, and to have had some effect upon his style; but it wants the charm of story, and has nothing of the romantic interest of Bunyan's parable.

"Little less popular" than the Pilgrim's Progress, and, whether viewed as a theological work or as an allegory, of at least equal merit, the Holy War fails to excite the same romantic kind of interest, chiefly because we sympathise less strongly with the personifications of the drama; conscious that, instead of being led through the vivid scenery of a dream, which is the shadow of waking realities, we are only looking at the well-constructed machinery of a fable. We feel to be conversing with abstractions, and never forget the allegory. One principal reason why the Pilgrim's Progress is the most delightful thing of the kind in the world, Mr. Montgomery observes, is "that though the whole is written under the similitude of a dream, there is very little of pure allegory in it; and few abstract qualities or passions are personified. . . . . If ever allegorical characters excite either sympathy or affection, it is when we forget that they are allegorical; consequently, when the allegory is suspended with respect to them." In reading the Pilgrim's Progress, we so constantly identify the author with his hero, as to find it difficult to separate them in our feelings; and the allegorical meaning seems superinduced upon the story, which flows on with so much of the semblance of real life. The pilgrim not only seems a real character, but gives reality to the emblematic phantoms with which he is associated; and the mind of the reader undergoes a sort of deception similar to that which is produced upon the waking eye by a peculiar affection of the brain, the subject of which sees spectral forms blending with living figures, and is unable to discriminate between the substantial and the unreal.

It may be suspected, indeed, that in the subordinate personages of the allegory, Bunyan had real characters* so far in

* "We may be sure," remarks Dr. Southey, "that Mr. Valiant-for-the-Truth, Old Honest, of the town of Stupidity, Mr. Despondency, and his daughter Much-Afraid, and their companions, were well known in 'Bishop Bunyan's diocese;' and if no real characters were designed by him in those who are less favourably introduced as turning back on their journey, striking into by-paths, or slumbering by the way, likenesses would be discovered where none were intended."

view, that the ideal was, as it were, modelled upon a portrait. In all the variety of characters which he brings before us, there is an individuality stamped upon them, by which they may be identified. But the biographical unity is as truly preserved by the prominence given to the principal actor, as in the classical epic. Christian is the Ulysses of the story. And this unity of interest results from the Author's simplicity of purpose, which led him steadily to keep in view his main design. Hence, the allegory, if defective or inconsistent in parts, (for which the Author has provided a sufficient apology in styling it a dream, for in dreams we are not conscious of such discrepancies,) is perfectly adapted, as Mr. Montgomery remarks, to the purpose for which it was composed. This was, " to show the particular experience of one Christian traveller, whose peculiar temptations and conflicts are general examples of what converted sinners must expect to encounter, though not all in the same degree, nor indeed all the same in kind. Christian, therefore, may be considered as a *whole-length portrait of the Author himself;* while the secondary characters, more or less curtailed, show the variety which is found in religious societies." . . . . " The Pilgrim's Progress is the history of one man's experience *in full*, and the experience of many others *in part;* wherefore, though the plan may be defective with regard to the multitude, all of whom are absolutely subordinate to the hero, Christian, with regard to him it is perfect, consistent, and satisfactory throughout. This was all that the Author primarily proposed; and whatever went beyond this, fell in his way, rather than belonged to his actual design. The unity of the plot, in the personal adventures of Christian, is not broken, but embellished and enriched by the incidental or episodical characters with which he becomes acquainted by the way."

Mr. Montgomery has pointed out a remarkable instance of the consummate yet artless skill which Bunyan has in this respect displayed, in the introduction of a companion to Christian, by which the interest of the narrative is rein-

forced without being divided. "The individual experience of one man," remarks this accomplished critic, "would not have been sufficient to exemplify all the most useful lessons of the Gospel, unless the trials of many persons, of different age, sex, and disposition, were interwoven. Christian could not both have suffered martyrdom in Vanity Fair, and travelled the remainder of his journey to the Celestial City; yet, in the days of John Bunyan, (who had himself been most cruelly persecuted for righteousness' sake,) it was necessary to set the precedent of a confessor who was ready, not to be bound only, but to die for the Lord Jesus. This has been done in the case of Faithful, who seals his testimony with his blood, while Christian, in a manner not explained, (which, however, is no flaw in the plot, having been advisedly adopted,) escapes 'for this time,' and, being joined by Hopeful, a convert raised up by the death of Faithful, proceeds on his way."

The Second Part of the Pilgrim's Progress, if it does not excite so intense an interest, is not less delightful than the first. It is even richer in incident; and the Author has shown the fertility of his invention, in the novelty which he has thrown into the journey over the same ground, so that nothing is repeated, but what is pleasing in the repetition, from the combined effect of reminiscence and contrast. In the pilgrimage of Christian and his successive companions, it appears to have been his design, Mr. Montgomery remarks, to portray the personal and solitary experience of the individual believer, or only the bosom fellowship between two Christian friends. "In the journey of Christiana and her family, gradually increasing to a goodly troop, he seems to have had more in view to illustrate the communion of saints and the advantages of church-membership. It is delightful to travel in such company, and hear them not only tell their several histories, but discourse of the adventures of others who have gone before; so that to the last stage, in the Enchanted Ground, when they find Standfast on his knees, there is a perpetual change of captivating anecdote and biography Among the characters

which so eminently enliven and adorn the Second Part of the Pilgrim's Progress, Mercy is the most lovely; and though of the utmost simplicity, it would be difficult, among the most finished portraits of womanly excellence by our first poets, to parallel this in delicacy and truth of drawing and colouring." In the attempt to imbody in an imaginary portrait, the personification of feminine virtue, some of the greatest of our poets have failed; and when we consider the circumstances of Bunyan's early history, his success in this instance must be viewed as a remarkable proof of the tendency of religion to purify and refine the taste. But here again the Bible was both his model and the source of his inspiration; and Mercy might almost pass for a scriptural character. It has been remarked, that the allegory is not so perfect in the Second Part, the pilgrimage of Christiana and her family appearing to occupy as many years as that of her husband did weeks; for those who are children at their setting out, are grown up and married by the time they reach the half-way house of Gaius. But these incongruities, which are regarded as a pardonable license in the dramatist, cannot be fairly imputed to want of skill in our "ingenious dreamer." Bunyan's purpose was to convey instruction; and to this, his main end, he would have sacrificed all the unities. But, upon the whole, the allegory is very skilfully maintained. It may be questioned whether Bunyan himself would have succeeded in a Third Part.

But let us now turn from the Author's parable to the prototype in the history of his own experience, of which he has left a narrative that forms one of the most interesting pieces of religious autobiography in any language. In common with all productions of the kind, where the sincerity of the writer is above suspicion, it requires to be taken as a transcript of the writer's feelings and impressions, rather than as a literal and accurate history. There is always a generous exaggeration in the disclosures of true penitence, for which allowance must be made; and in the description of the interior phenomena of a mental conflict,

such as Bunyan passed through, the calmest judgment must be sometimes at a loss to discriminate between the healthful and the morbid action, when it is the patient who describes the case. Such works furnish the most valuable materials for biography; but, as will appear in the sequel, it requires no ordinary discrimination, candour, and knowledge of the heart, to make the requisite allowances for the circumstances of the most conscientious narrator of his own history.

John Bunyan was born in the village of Elstow, near Bedford, in the year 1628. His descent, to use his own words, was "of a low and inconsiderable generation," his "father's house being of that rank that is meanest and most despised of all the families in the land." The craft to which he was born and bred, like his father before him, was that of a brazier or tinker; and he is said to have worked as a journeyman at Bedford. Mean and inconsiderable as were the circumstances of his parents, they were able to put their son to school; who learned both to read and write "according to the rate of other poor men's children;" but he confesses that he soon lost, almost utterly, what little he had acquired. Thrown among vile companions, he was early initiated into profaneness, lying, and all sorts of boyish vice and ungodliness; and the only indication of his having a capacity above the village rabble, was afforded by his being a ringleader of all the youth that kept him company, in their wickedness. Yet, even at nine or ten years old, in the midst of his many sports and childish vanities, and surrounded by his vain companions, he was often seized with deep compunction; and in his sleep, fearful visions, corresponding to his waking terrors, would alarm his conscience. "I was often," he says, "much cast down and afflicted therewith, yet could I not let go my sins: yea, I was also then so overcome with despair of life and heaven, that I should often wish, either that there had been no hell, or that I had been a devil, supposing they were *only* tormentors; that, if it must needs be that I went thither, I might be rather a tormentor, than

be tormented myself." After a time, these terrible dreams left him, and his apprehensions of infernal punishment wore off. He became "void of all good consideration;" "heaven and hell were both out of mind:" and "had not a miracle of precious grace prevented," he says, "he had not only perished by the stroke of eternal justice, but had also laid himself open even to the stroke of those laws which bring some to disgrace and open shame before the world." It may be inferred, however, from this ingenuous confession, that he was nevertheless restrained from the commission of any delinquency cognizable by the magistrate. He was wild, boisterous, reckless, disorderly; passionately fond of village-sports, such as bell-ringing, dancing, 'the game of cat,' and similar amusements; a Sabbath-breaker, a terrible swearer, and thoroughly ungodly. But this appears to have been the extent of his youthful wickedness. He was no drunkard, nor was he, in the grossest acceptation, licentious. We have his own solemn declaration, in reply to his calumniators, that "no woman in heaven, or earth, or hell," could witness against him. "Not," he adds, "that I have been thus kept because of any goodness in me, more than other, but God has been merciful to me, and has kept me." It is evident that his conscience, though laid asleep, was never hardened; for, while he could take pleasure in the vileness of his companions, yet, if at any time he saw wicked things committed by those "who professed goodness," it would make his spirit tremble. Once, when in the height of his vanity, hearing a person swear who was reputed a religious man, "it struck upon his spirit," he says, "so as to make his heart ache."

Bunyan was only seventeen when he entered into the Parliament's army; and in 1645, he was drawn out, with others, to go to the siege of Leicester; but when he was just ready to set off, one of the company expressed a desire to go in his stead, and, Bunyan having consented, the volunteer took his place, went to the siege, and was shot as he stood centinel. This remarkable interposition of Divine

Providence, as well as some other narrow escapes from death, Bunyan records with devout gratitude; but, at the time, they appear to have made a slight or transient impression upon his conscience. He could not have been long a soldier; yet it is probable that we are indebted to his having served in the Civil Wars, for the skilful management of his military allegory.

Not long after the occurrence above mentioned, and when, consequently, he must have been very young, (Dr. Southey thinks, before he was nineteen,) Bunyan married; and "my mercy was," he says, "to light upon a wife whose father was counted godly." They were both so poor as not to have so much household stuff as a dish or a spoon between them; but she brought him, for her portion, two books which her father had bequeathed to her when he died; one entitled, "The Plain Man's Pathway to Heaven;" the other, "The Practice of Piety."* In these two books, Bunyan would sometimes read with his wife; and though they did not reach his heart so as to waken him to a sense of his real condition, yet they produced some desires and endeavours after reformation. These were fostered, too, by the frequent references made by his wife to the strict and holy life of her father. Bunyan now "fell in very eagerly with the religion of the times; went to church twice on the Sunday, and said and sung with the foremost;" and was withal, according to his own account, "so over-run with the spirit of superstition," that he adored with great devotion all things belonging to the church,—"the high-place, priest, clerk, vestment," and every thing relating to the service: the priest and clerk he counted most happy, and without doubt blessed, as the servants of God; and for the love he bore to the clergy, supposing them the ministers of heaven, he could have laid down at their feet, and have been trampled upon by them; so

* The latter work, by Bayly, Bishop of Bangor, was at one time so popular as to pass through more than fifty editions in the course of a hundred years, and has been translated not only into Welsh, the author's native tongue, but into Polish and Hungarian.

strongly, at this time, did their name, their garb, and their function "intoxicate and bewitch" him. This is precisely the feeling of abject reverence with which the priest of the Romish church is regarded by the common people in Popish countries; and if, at this period of his life, when his imagination was so much stronger than his judgment, and his mind had not emerged from the grossest ignorance, Bunyan had been thrown in the way of an artful emissary of that church, it is probable that he would have been inextricably entangled in the toils of superstition. His moral and intellectual progress would have terminated at the Giant's Cave. All this while, he says, he was not sensible of the danger and evil of sin, nor ever thought of the Saviour. The "Plain Man's Pathway" had not directed him to the Cross. "Thus man," he remarks, "while blind, doth wander, but wearieth himself with vanity, for he knoweth not the way to the city of God." In fact, at this stage, Bunyan had not even thrown off the habit of using profane language; for, some time afterwards, he met with a humiliating reproof from a woman who was herself of bad character, but who protested that Bunyan's awful profaneness made her tremble, and that "he was able to spoil all the youth in the town who but came into his company." "At this reproof," he says, "I was silenced and put to secret shame, and that too, as I thought, before the God of heaven; wherefore, while I stood there, and hanging down my head, I wished with all my heart that I might be a little child again, that my father might learn me to speak without this wicked way of swearing; for, thought I, I am so accustomed to it, that it is in vain for me to think of a reformation; for I thought that could never be. But how it came to pass, I know not; I did from this time forward so leave my swearing, that it was a great wonder to myself to observe it; and whereas, before, I knew not how to speak unless I put an oath before and another behind, to make my words have authority; now I could, without it, speak better, and with more pleasantness, than ever I could before."

This cordial wish, so touchingly expressed, would seem to have been the first genuine emotion of penitence in Bunyan's heart, such as all the terrific alarms of an awakened conscience had hitherto failed to produce. At this critical moment of incipient conversion, he "fell into company with one poor man that made profession of religion," who, as he then thought, "did talk pleasantly of the Scriptures and of the matter of religion; wherefore," he says, "falling into some love and liking to what he said, I betook me to my Bible, and began to take great pleasure in reading, but especially with the historical part thereof; for, as for Paul's Epistles, and such like scriptures, I could not away with them, being as yet ignorant either of the corruptions of my nature, or of the want and worth of Jesus Christ to save us. Wherefore, I fell to some outward reformation, both in my words and life, and did set the commandments before me for my way to heaven; which commandments I also did strive to keep, and, as I thought, did keep them pretty well sometimes. . . . . My neighbours were amazed at this my great conversion from prodigious profaneness to something like a moral life: and truly so they well might; for this my conversion was as great as for Tom of Bedlam to become a sober man. Now, therefore, they began to praise, to commend, and to speak well of me, both to my face and behind my back." Flattered by these commendations, and proud of his imagined godliness, he concluded that the Almighty "could not choose but be now pleased with him. Yea," he says, "to relate it in mine own way, I thought no man in England could please God better than I."

He was wakened from this self-righteous delusion by accidentally overhearing the discourse of three or four poor women, who were sitting at a door in the sun, in one of the streets of Bedford, "talking about the things of God." Bunyan's attention was arrested by language which was altogether new to him, and which he heard, but understood not. What especially struck him was, that they conversed about the matters of religion "as if oy did

make them speak," and "as if they had found a new world." . . . . "At this," he says, "I felt my own heart began to shake, and mistrust my condition to be naught." When he left them to go about his employment, their talk and discourse went with him, while his heart tarried behind; for, he says, "I was greatly affected with their words, both because by them I was convinced that I wanted the true tokens of a truly godly man, and also because by them I was convinced of the happy and blessed condition of him that was such a one."

These poor women were members of a small Baptist congregation at Bedford, who had for their pastor a man whose religious history is not less remarkable than that of Bunyan himself. Formerly a major in the king's army, and having narrowly escaped execution as a rebel, John Gifford had come a stranger to Bedford, where he practised physic; leading, at the same time, the genuine life of a cavalier. Profligate and reckless, a drunkard, a gambler, and abominably profane, he entertained the most savage hatred of all Puritans. Yet was this man, when in a state of desperation occasioned by losses from gambling, "startled into a sense of his real condition" by meeting with one of the works of Robert Bolton; the perusal of which, after a mental conflict of some weeks, wrought a cure of his diseased mind and heart; and, joining himself to the company of those whom he had formerly most despised, he became at length their chosen pastor. From the members of this little flock, Bunyan received the first elements of evangelical instruction; and the more he went among these poor people, to whom he had been thus casually introduced, the more he questioned his own condition, and the more his heart was softened "under the conviction of what, by scriptnre, they asserted." His mind now became earnestly fixed upon eternity, and almost absorbed with things relating to the kingdom of heaven: but still his knowledge was that of infancy. Of this he was now humbly conscious, and a wise distrust of himself drove him to his knees. About this time he met with

some publications of the Ranters; a sect whose tenets would appear, from Baxter's account, to have been a compound of the Quaker mysticism and the grossest practical Antinomianism. The works alluded to were "highly in esteem" among a certain class; and they were, probably, at once specious and mystical, for Bunyan was not able to understand them sufficiently to form any judgment about them. He therefore betook himself to hearty prayer in this manner: "O Lord, I am a fool, and not able to know the truth from error: Lord, leave me not to my own blindness, either to approve of, or condemn this doctrine: if it be of God, let me not despise it; if it be of the devil, let me not embrace it. Lord, I lay my soul in this matter only at thy foot; let me not be deceived, I humbly beseech thee." Such a prayer as this was never denied. "Blessed be God," continues Bunyan, "who put it into my heart to cry to him to be kept and directed, still distrusting my own wisdom; for I have since seen even the effects of that prayer, in his preserving me not only from Ranting errors, but from those also that have sprung up since. The Bible was precious to me in those days. And now, methought, I began to look into the Bible with new eyes, and read as I never did before; and especially the Epistles of the Apostles were sweet and pleasant to me; and indeed then I was never out of the Bible, either by reading or meditation; still crying out to God, that I might know the truth and way to heaven and glory."

Bunyan's preservation from these seducing and fatal errors was the more remarkable, as his most intimate religious companion, the poor man whose "pleasant talk" of the Scriptures first led him to take to reading the Bible, about this time turned "a most devilish Ranter:" in fact, from the account given of him, he must have become both atheist and libertine. Shocked at his abominable principles, Bunyan at once broke off all intercourse with him. But he was also thrown into the company of several others, who, though formerly strict in religion, were also drawn away by these Ranters, and who endeavoured to instil their

fanatical tenets into the as yet ill-furnished mind of our poor novice. Although he escaped the snare, he was, for a long time, greatly harassed with the anxious doubts, the scriptural problems, and the practical difficulties which beset the path of religious inquiry along which he was groping his solitary way. "Tossed betwixt the devil and his own ignorance," he was sometimes so perplexed that he could not tell what to do. He had no friend to advise with, no spiritual guide to set him right. While in this state of mind, the happiness of the poor people at Bedford was presented to him in a kind of vision—a waking dream; or, perhaps, during actual slumber, such as will often for a few moments unconsciously suspend the voluntary action of an exhausted mind. Whether dream or reverie, it left a powerful impression; and in it, Dr. Southey thinks, "the germ of the Pilgrim's Progress may plainly be perceived." May we not rather say, the germinating of that imagination which was afterwards to ripen into genius? "I saw," says Bunyan, "as if they were on the sunny side of some high mountain, there refreshing themselves with the pleasant beams of the sun, while I was shivering and shrinking in the cold, afflicted with frost, snow, and dark clouds. Methought also, betwixt me and them I saw a wall that did compass about this mountain. Now, through this wall my soul did greatly desire to pass, concluding that, if I could, I would even go into the very midst of them, and there also comfort myself with the heat of their sun. About this wall, I bethought myself to go again and again, still prying as I went, to see if I could find some way or passage by which I might enter therein; but none could I find for some time. At the last I saw, as it were, a narrow gap, like a little doorway in the wall, through which I attempted to pass. Now, the passage being very strait and narrow, I made many efforts to get in, but all in vain, even until I was well nigh quite beat out by striving to get in. At last, with great striving, methought I at first did get in my head, and after that, by a sideling striving, my shoulders and my whole body. Then I was

exceeding glad, went and sat down in the midst of them, and so was comforted with the light and heat of their sun. Now this mountain and wall, &c. was thus made out to me. The mountain signified the church of the living God; the sun that shone thereon, the comfortable shining of his merciful face on them that were therein; the wall, I thought, was the Word, that did make separation between the Christian and the world; and the gap which was in the wall, I thought, was Jesus Christ, who is the way to God the Father. . . . . But forasmuch as the passage was wonderful narrow, even so narrow that I could not but with great difficulty enter in thereat; it showed me that none could enter into life, but those that were in downright earnest, and unless also they left that wicked world behind them; for here was only room for body and soul, but not for body and soul and sin."

This resemblance "abode many days" upon his spirit, exciting a "vehement desire to be one of that number who did sit in the sunshine." Yet more than a year appears to have elapsed before he could take courage to disclose the state of his feelings to those poor people at Bedford. When he did, they introduced him to their pastor, who invited Bunyan to his house, and had some conversation with him, but evidently had not penetration enough to discover the character of the extraordinary man thus brought under his notice. In the meanwhile, and for a long time after this interview, Bunyan's mind, being left to prey upon itself, was overclouded with the deepest spiritual distress. The workings of his thoughts during this fiery ordeal, of which he has given so vivid a description, were, no doubt, of that morbid character which any deep-seated anxiety or intense emotion is apt to assume, when the mind begins to act upon the body, and physical effects re-act upon mental operations. Dr. Southey has been pleased to describe this stage of Bunyan's experience as "a burning and feverish enthusiasm," during which he was "shaken continually by the hot and cold fits of a spiritual ague." That his imagination "was wrought to a state of excitement, in which

its own shapings became vivid as realities, and affected him more forcibly than impressions from the external world," is, we admit, very apparent. But there was nothing factitious in Bunyan's feelings, nothing unreasonable in his anxieties, nothing enthusiastic in his creed. If, for the time, the calm exercise of his understanding, not sufficiently fortified by religious knowledge, was overborne by the morbid action of his imagination, this natural effect of over-excited feelings under a real and rational cause, is not to be confounded with the hallucinations of a distempered intellect. "Where there is no error of the imagination, no misjudging of realities, no calculations which reason condemns, there," it has been remarked by a philosophical writer,* "is no enthusiasm, even though the soul may be on fire with the velocity of its movement in pursuit of its chosen object." If this be a correct definition of the term, Bunyan was at no period of his history an enthusiast: his repelling the fanatical notions of the Ranters proves this. False notions, false by exaggeration, of the corruption of our nature, are supposed by Dr. Southey to have laid upon Bunyan's mind that heavy burden of distress, "heavy as that with which his own Christian begins his pilgrimage." But this remark is not warranted by any thing in the narrative, nor by the practical effect or tendency of those notions which Bunyan had derived from the Scriptures,—the main and almost only source of his knowledge. The "sense of inward and original pollution," which produced so much self-loathing and horrible despondency, could not have been produced by any doctrinal notion, true or false, but was an impression upon the spirit, such as only the mind that has been itself wounded can understand, and He who made the spirit alone can heal. The source of such feelings lies deeper in human nature than this world's philosophy can reach. But when we find a similar feeling of self-loathing and abasement seizing upon the minds of the holy man of Uz and the rapt Isaiah, under a sense of the

* Natural History of Enthusiasm, p. 7.

Divine purity and majesty, surely it were wise to hesitate before we rashly ascribe mental distress of this character either to enthusiastic and fallacious notions, or to physical distemper. Despondency, indeed, does not consist with a healthful state of mind; and religious despondency is inconsistent with right views of the gospel, which forbids any one to despair of the Divine mercy. Religion is not the cause of despondency more than it is of unbelief, or than light is the cause of blindness. We may admit, however, that such states of distress involve both mental and moral infirmity. The pressure upon the spirit produces, if we may so express it, a temporary paralysis of the judgment, and the heart labours under a terrible nightmare. We exclude from consideration how far, in such cases, the mind may be acted upon from without itself, and external suggestions add to the terror and agitation of the spirit. But we cannot forbear to remark, that such periods of mental darkness and agitation, if not to be viewed as direct inflictions, are often permitted and overruled for the purposes of moral discipline. The Saviour himself "suffered being tempted." This is the proper light in which to view Bunyan's religious experience. He was allowed for a while to wrestle alone, and in the dark, that he might come forth from the conflict the stronger and better man. In the language of an able critic already referred to, "the Spirit of God was his teacher; the very discipline of his intellect was a spiritual discipline; the conflicts that his soul sustained with the powers of darkness, were the sources of his intellectual strength."* During this severe probation, he was, to use his own expressive language, "led from truth to truth by God; for never did any one owe less to

* North American Review, No. LXXIX. art. Southey's Life of Bunyan. "We incline to think," says the Reviewer, "that Southey, with all his talent, is incapable of fully appreciating a character of such directness and originality as that of Bunyan, or of doing justice to the workings of his mind. It would have been the truth, as well as the better philosophy, if he had said, that the Spirit of God was preparing Bunyan, by this severe discipline, to send forth into the world the Pilgrim's Progress."

human teaching." What other men learn from books, he, with the aid only of his Bible, spelt out and put together by the light from heaven that irradiated his darkness. He was educated by this severe process of thought; and the coarse, boisterous, ignorant, profane rustic became transformed like his own pilgrim, who, after emerging from the slough of despond, lost his burden and his rags together at the foot of the Cross.

He was beginning to emerge from these "temptations," when a translation of Luther's Commentary on the Epistle to the Galatians fell into his hands; an old copy, so tattered that it was ready to fall to pieces if he did but turn it over. He had not read far, before he found his own condition "so largely and profoundly handled," and his own experience so faithfully mirrored, in its pages, that it seemed as if the book had been "written out of his own heart." Such a book he had longed to meet with; and it had for the time the happiest effect upon his mind. In writing his Narrative long afterwards, he declares his preference of this work of Martin Luther's above all others that he had ever seen, the Bible alone excepted, as "most fitted for a wounded conscience." Dr. Southey finds or imagines a resemblance between "the passionate and mighty mind of Luther," and that of Bunyan. "Like Luther, he had undergone the agonies of unbelief and deadly fear, and, according to his own persuasion, wrestled with the Enemy." But here the parallel begins and terminates. Both were men of powerful imagination, but of opposite spirit and very different mental temperament.

The peaceful assurance and serene composure to which Bunyan had now attained, were not of long continuance; and the state of mind into which he relapsed, is characterised by Dr. Southey, not without some reason, as "the strangest part of his history." "An almost unimaginable temptation came upon him, which," remarks the learned Biographer, "he might well call more grievous and dreadful than any with which he had before been afflicted:" it was, "to sell and part with Christ,—to exchange him for the things

of this life,—for any thing." For the space of a year, he was haunted by this strange and hateful suggestion; and so continually, that he was not rid of it one day in a month, nor sometimes one hour in many succeeding days, unless in his sleep. Such is Bunyan's own account, who attributes the suggestion to the immediate agency of the Tempter; and he describes the series of assaults to which he believed himself to be exposed from the Enemy of souls, with a vividness of language which reminds us of his description of Christian's allegorical combat with Apollyon.

The task of a biographer, in referring to this stage of Bunyan's mental history, becomes one of extreme delicacy, as it requires him to touch upon points of inscrutable mystery. The origin of our thoughts must ever remain beyond the reach of discovery. That they ordinarily obey the law of association, every one must be aware; and this is doubtless the case in a thousand instances where the connecting link is not perceived. But sometimes a thought will present itself with all the effect of an extraneous suggestion, clothed, it may be, in words which the mind does not recognize as of its own coining; just as, in dreams, we seem to be present at conversations, and mingle with persons whose features are those of strangers. Under ordinary states of feeling, such thoughts come and go without being questioned as to their origin, and leave but a faint, if any impression. The apparent suggestion may be trivial or ludicrous. But most persons of reflective habits will recollect occasions on which actions and events of the greatest moment to themselves, hinged upon some thought that seemed to dart into their minds, perhaps with astonishing suddenness and vividness. Such an occurrence of thought, not less than any external occurrence, a devout man would not hesitate to ascribe to the overruling and all-pervading providence of God; and it matters nothing, in this point of view, whether we regard such thoughts as proceeding from the natural operation of reflection, or as imparted to the mind. Those persons, however, who acknowledge that from God "all holy desires and all good counsels pro-

ceed," must believe that our minds and hearts are open to an ordinary inspiration, not less real, and perhaps not more imperceptible in its mode of influencing us, than the extraordinary and plenary inspiration under which the prophets and apostles spoke and wrote "as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." The Holy Scriptures, moreover, not only contain the promise of such heavenly inspiration as the source of wisdom and consolation, but they very plainly intimate that evil thoughts, while the natural produce of the human heart, are sometimes the result of an inspiration of an evil and malignant character. The conception of crime in the mind of Judas, and of Ananias, is distinctly referred to Satanic influence operating upon the heart, yet so as not to interfere, any more than human suasion, with conscious responsibility. No violence is done to the mind in either case, more than by involuntary dreams, or by the social influences which are perpetually governing and modifying our thoughts and actions, but of which we can no more detect the actual operation, than we can that of the atmosphere upon our bodily functions; and it must, therefore, be impossible to discriminate between the spontaneous action of the thoughts, and the good or evil inspiration, except by the reflex act of the judgment. Many persons of enthusiastic temperament have, no doubt, erroneously ascribed to a foreign influence, the natural though unrecognized suggestions of their own minds; especially when the mind itself was in a morbid state. The impossibility of detecting the true source of what may be termed morbid thoughts, is beautifully illustrated by Bunyan himself, than whom no man, perhaps, ever suffered more agony of spirit from these internal visitations. In describing Christian's passing through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, in which the Pilgrim was "worse put to it than in his fight with Apollyon,"—evidently referring to what he himself suffered after having obtained a victory over the temptation to infidelity,—Bunyan says: "One thing I would not let slip. I took notice that now poor Christian was so confounded, that *he did not know his own voice;* and

thus I perceived it. Just when he was come over-against the mouth of the burning pit, one of the wicked ones got behind him, and stepped up softly to him, and whisperingly suggested many grievous blasphemies to him, which he verily thought had proceeded from his own mind. This put Christian more to it than any thing that he met with before, even to think that he should now blaspheme him that he loved so much before: yet, if he could have helped it, he would not have done it; but he had not the discretion either to stop his ears, or to know from whence these blasphemies came."

Since, however, Christian could not ascertain this by any thing of which he was conscious at the time, the knowledge that these grievous blasphemies were suggested by the wicked one, must have been obtained only by inference from their evil character and their repugnance to the mind. But, although knowledge obtained by inference, may be as certain as that which is derived from consciousness, there is some room to question, in the present case, the soundness of the deduction. Unless we were prepared to contend that all evil thoughts which spring up in the mind, and yet are repugnant to the feelings and judgment, so as to be condemned and rejected with abhorrence, have a source foreign to the imagination, and that the mind cannot be the author of any thoughts which affect it with this sense of contrariety and aversion, and of which it would fain rid itself,—unless, too, dreams of a painful description, and contrary to the tenor of the waking thoughts, are in like manner to be accounted for only by the same external and supernatural agency,—we must require some stronger reason for ascribing wicked and blasphemous thoughts to infernal inspiration, in any particular case, than their hateful character.

That they may have this origin, is very possible. Yet, their very contrariety to the mind of the individual supplies a reason against the supposition. All heavenly inspiration is congenial with the holy character of those who have been the recipients and organs of the Divine communi-

cations; and so far as Scripture throws any light upon the awful fact, it would appear that Satanic inspiration is, in like manner, congenial with the character of its victims; that it is in every case a *concurrent* impulse, and not either compulsive or repugnant. It may be urged, that our blessed Lord was himself tempted by the suggestions of Satan; suggestions infinitely repugnant to his holy nature; but these were both external to his mind, and such as partook of the nature of rational inducements to specific actions. The force of the temptation lay in the apparent reasonableness of the insidious counsel, and in the strength of the inducements; and where there is no appeal to rational motives, there can be no temptation. Nothing can surely be more improper, than to confound, under a common term, the mere phantasmagoria of the imagination, and the real transactions of the evangelical history.

Bunyan, in his auto-biographical narrative, does indeed describe the horrible but irrational thought that was ever running in his mind, as "a temptation:" but where was the bait? Had the prospect of worldly advantage been held out to him on the condition of renouncing his creed, or violating his allegiance to the Saviour; had he, in the face of worldly scorn or fiery persecution, been prompted to deny the faith; or had some dishonest gain been within his reach while struggling with penury;—here would have been a temptation. But in the case described, the assault, the suggestion, and the seeming compliance with the abhorred blasphemy, were all ideal, without motive, and contrary to reason. The suffering and distress only were real; and these constituted a trial of the sharpest kind, a discipline of fearful severity; just as any other species of physical or mental suffering might have proved.

We see no reason, then, to deny, that the state of darkness into which Bunyan was plunged, arose from that distempered action of the imagination which is the ordinary effect of over-excitement. Nothing is a more common characteristic of bodily disease, than that the parts affected shall take on an action the very reverse of their natural

and healthful condition. Something analogous to this has been observed in cases of mental disorder. It is, therefore, quite conceivable, that the distempered mind should give birth to monstrous thoughts, irrational, abhorrent, yet on that very account the more fixed and unmanageable, burning themselves into the memory by the pain they inflict, and possessing the imagination as with an external presence. In cases of decided insanity, this is known to take place. But there are diseased conditions of the frame, not amounting to insanity, in which the imagination is distempered, but there is no delirium; in which unreasonable ideas have hold of the mind, but there is no eclipse of the controlling judgment; there are involuntary impressions, but no involuntary decisions: in such conditions, which, how nearly soever they approximate to insanity, are clearly distinguishable from it, a morbid action of the thoughts, such as Bunyan describes, would be the natural effect of physical causes. How far bodily disease, and especially mental distemper, may be the result of the malignant agency of *that* being to whom Bunyan ascribed his "temptation," is a distinct question. The history of the patriarch Job, and some intimations in other parts of the inspired volume, have led many learned and pious persons to entertain the belief that, with the Divine permission, evil spirits may be the instruments of immediately afflicting those whom they cannot tempt or morally injure. We make no concession to the infidel, when we refuse to ascribe to supernatural suggestions, phenomena which admit of a simpler explanation, and which it is most important to distinguish from the moral conflict that every Christian is called to sustain with the seductions of the world and the temptations of the great Enemy.

"Had it been the Romish superstition which Bunyan had imbibed," remarks Dr. Southey, "he might have vied with P. Dominic the Cuirassier, or the Jesuit Joam d'Almeida, in inflicting torments upon his own miserable body." But Bunyan was never a self-tormentor; his mind was free from superstition; and the sound views of the

Christian doctrine which he had embraced, and to which he adhered through this long ordeal of suffering, at once attested the sanity of his judgment, and preserved it. During the two years and a half of almost incessant agitation and despondency that he passed, the Scriptures afforded the only balm to his wounded spirit; and he recounts, among the advantages which he gained by this "temptation," that he was "made to see more into the nature of the promises" than ever he had seen before. "The Scriptures also were wonderful things to me: I saw that the truth and verity of them were the keys of the kingdom of heaven. . . . Now I saw the apostles to be the elders of the city of refuge. Those that they were to receive in, were received to life; but those that they shut out, were to be slain by the avenger of blood. . . . Woe be to him against whom the Scriptures bend themselves!" Thus was he led to search the Bible, and to dwell upon it, with an earnestness and intensity of feeling which no determination of a calmer mind could have commanded. "If," remarks Dr. Southey, "in the other writings of Bunyan, and especially in that which has made his name immortal, we discover none of that fervid language in which his confessions and self-examination are recorded,—none of those 'thoughts that breathe, and words that burn,'—none of that passion, in which the reader so far participates as to be disturbed and distressed by it,—here we perceive how he acquired that thorough and familiar acquaintance with the Scriptures, which in those works is manifested."

Even the strongest constitution would be likely to give way under the effects of such long-continued mental excitement and suffering; and not unfrequently, as the mind recovers its tone, the body begins to betray the insidious mischief. Symptoms of a pulmonary kind appeared in Bunyan, shortly after he had attained to a happier state of feeling, and had been admitted to fellowship with the congregation at Bedford under Mr. Gifford's pastoral care. The weakness to which he was suddenly reduced by a violent increase of these symptoms, was so extreme, that

he thought he could not live. Again the clouds returned, and darkened his spirit; but he was soon waked out of his despondency by the voice of the Scripture, and the fear of death vanished before the assurance of the free mercy of God. "Now," he says, "death was lovely and beautiful in my sight; for I saw we shall never live indeed, till we be gone to the other world. Oh! methought this life is but a slumber in comparison with that above. At this time also, I saw more in these words, 'Heirs of God,' (Rom. viii. 17,) than ever I shall be able to express while I live in this world." At another time, when he was extremely ill and weak, those words in the fifteenth chapter of the First Epistle to the Corinthians, "O death! where is thy sting?" &c., fell with such force upon his mind, that he "became well both in body and mind at once;" his sickness did presently vanish, and he "walked comfortably again in" his "work for God." The close connexion between these returns of gloom and seizures of physical weakness, is evident from his own narrative; but there is nothing very uncommon in the cure of physical malady by moral remedies. Joy is a powerful restorative to the animal spirits; and this is emphatically true of spiritual joy.

Bunyan was admitted a member of the Baptist church at Bedford, in the year 1653, when he was only twenty-five years of age. Mr. Gifford, the pastor, died in 1655. It would appear that, prior to his decease, Bunyan had been prevailed upon, once or twice, to address a few words of exhortation to the members of the society at their private assemblies. After this, he was induced, occasionally, to accompany some of them that went into the adjacent villages to teach; "where," he says, "though as yet I did not, nor durst not, make use of my gift in an open way, yet more privately, still, as I came amongst the good people in those places, I did sometimes speak a word of admonition unto them also. At last, being still desired by the church, after some solemn prayer with fasting, I was more particularly called forth and appointed to a more ordinary and public preaching of the word, not only to and amongst

them that believed, but also to offer the gospel to those who had not yet received the faith thereof." Bunyan cannot be charged with having thrust himself into notoriety, nor with having rashly assumed the function of a public teacher. He entered upon the probationary exercise of his "gift in a public way," with diffidence and fear; and only by degrees acquired that consciousness of his qualifications which led him to believe that he was called to the work. In this, as in all other matters, he was not satisfied till he had ascertained that his conduct had the sanction of scriptural directions; and he has specified the passages of the New Testament which animated and encouraged him in complying with the desires of his pious friends.* His preaching could not fail to attract great attention; and no sooner had the rumour spread, than, as he tells us, "they came in to hear the word by hundreds, and that from all parts, though upon divers and sundry accounts." He was now so constantly employed in these itinerant labours, that, upon being nominated as deacon of the Bedford congregation in the ensuing year, the church declined to elect him to that office, on the ground that he was thus too much engaged to attend to its duties. In the mean time, he continued to work with his own hands for his living and the maintenance of his family, as he had opportunity. While he was thus usefully and disinterestedly employed, "the doctors and priests of the country," he says, "did open wide against me;" and towards the close of the year 1657, an indictment was preferred against him for preaching at Eaton. Of the result we are not informed; but, as he was present at a meeting of the Baptist church in February, 1658, as well as in the July following, it may be inferred, either that the action was not supported, or that it failed to have the effect of silencing the unordained preacher who had awakened the jealousy of the Presbyterian clergy. Some surprise may be felt

* The following are the passages cited in his own narrative:—1 Cor. xvi. 15, 16. Acts viii. 4; xviii. 24, 25. 1 Pet. iv. 10. Rom. xii. 6. Also, subsequently to his meeting with instances of success, 2 Cor. ii. 2, and 1 Cor. ix 2.

that such a prosecution should have been set on foot under the government of Cromwell; but Dr. Southey remarks with truth, that "there was much more persecution during the Protectorate, than Cromwell would have allowed, if he could have prevented it."* The lawfulness of public preaching by men not ordained was, indeed, at this time a point warmly debated, the Presbyterians in general maintaining the negative with as lofty pretensions to divine right as had been asserted by the champions of Prelacy; so as to draw forth Milton's biting sarcasm, that

"New Presbyter is but old Priest writ large."†

It is probable, however, that personal enmity occasioned this attempt to check Bunyan's usefulness. His "great desire in fulfilling his ministry," he tells us, "was to get into the darkest places of the country," and to preach the gospel where Christ was not named. He "never cared to meddle with things controverted." "It pleased me much," he says, "to contend with great earnestness for the word of faith, and the remission of sins by the death and sufferings of Jesus; but, as to other things, I would let them alone, because I saw they engendered strife." This wise and modest course could not, however, screen him either from being regarded as an intruder by the intolerant, or from being grossly calumniated by the ignorant and malicious, who sought, by aspersing his moral character, to cause his ministry to be abandoned. It was rumoured, that he was "a witch, a Jesuit, a highwayman," and a libertine. These "lies and slanders," says Bunyan, "I

* "Nothing will satisfy them," said Cromwell, speaking of the Presbyterian party, "unless they can put their finger upon their brethren's conscience, and pinch them there."

† In this same year (1658) was published a work entitled, "The Preacher Sent; or, a Vindication of the Liberty of Public Preaching by some men not ordained: in answer to two books, 1. *Jus Divinum Evangelici*, by the Provincial Assembly of London; 2. *Vindiciæ Ministerii Evangelici*, by Mr. John Collings, Norwich. Published by John Martin, Minister of the Gospel at Edgefield, Norfolk; Sam. Petto, Minister of the Gospel at Sandcroft, Suffolk; and Frederick Woodals, Minister of the Gospel at Woodbridge, Suffolk."

bind to me as an ornament; it belongs to my Christian profession to be vilified, slandered, reproached, and reviled; and since all this is nothing else, as my God and my conscience do bear me witness, I rejoice in reproaches for Christ's sake."

But he was destined to have his constancy and fortitude put to a severer test: "bonds and imprisonment awaited him." He had "for five or six years, without any interruption, freely preached the gospel," when, in November, 1660, he was taken up by a warrant from a justice named Wingate, at a place called Samsell in Bedfordshire, at which he had been invited to preach; the justice having resolved, as he said, to "break the neck of such meetings." The mittimus ran to this effect: "That he went about to several conventicles in the county, to the great disparagement of the government of the church of England," &c. Such was one of the first-fruits of the Restoration! Dr. Southey, willing to palliate the conduct of his persecutors, insinuates, that "he was known to be hostile to the restored church, and that *probably* it might be remembered that he had served in the Parliament army." Of the former, there is no evidence; and the latter is a gratuitous conjecture, which, if admitted, would only give a more despicably vindictive character to the proceedings. The fact appears to be, that his old enemies took advantage of the change in the Government, to execute their long-cherished purpose in putting a stop to his preaching; and that, had the state of the law admitted of it, he would have met with the same treatment under Cromwell, from the same parties, that he did under Charles. One of the party concerned in these proceedings, a Dr. Lindale, is described by Bunyan as "an old enemy to the truth," who, on hearing of the Tinker's apprehension, came in, and fell to taunting of him "with many reviling terms." Bunyan, however, was a match for his accusers, as well in ready wit as in scriptural argument. And when this Dr. Lindale, alluding to his calling, said, that "he remembered reading of one Alexander, a coppersmith, who did much oppose and disturb

the apostles;" Bunyan replied, that "he also had read of many priests and pharisees that had their hands in the blood of Our Lord Jesus Christ." "Aye," rejoined Lindale, "and you are one of those scribes and pharisees; for you, with a pretence, make long prayers, to devour widows' houses." He received for answer, that if he (Dr. L.) had got no more by preaching and praying than Bunyan had, he would not be so rich as he was. Bunyan had notice of the intention to arrest him, and might have eluded the writ; and after being taken before the magistrate, he might have obtained his discharge, if he would have promised to leave off preaching, and keep to his calling. But his conscience would not allow him to make any such engagement. He was accordingly committed to gaol. After he had lain there five or six days, some of his friends offered bail for his appearance at the sessions; but the magistrate to whom they applied, refused to take it.

Some seven weeks after his apprehension, the quarter sessions were held at Bedford, and Bunyan was brought up for examination before the justices. The bill of indictment preferred against him, was under the act of the 35th Elizabeth, and ran to this effect: "That John Bunyan, of the town of Bedford, labourer, being a person of such and such conditions, hath devilishly and perniciously abstained from coming to church to hear divine service, and is a common upholder of several unlawful meetings and conventicles, to the great disturbance and distraction of the good subjects of this kingdom, contrary to the laws of our sovereign lord the king," and so forth. Upon this being read, he was asked by the justices what he had to say to it. Not aware that he had been indicted, Bunyan readily admitted that he did not attend the parish church, and that he did attend private meetings at which he preached: he also entered into a defence of his conduct upon scriptural grounds, by which he only drew down upon himself the coarse invectives of his judges. "Who is your God, Beelzebub?" said one of the justices; and they repeatedly said, that he was possessed of the devil. At the close of

this memorable examination, his answers being taken down as a confession of guilt, without any other trial, without the verdict of a jury, he was sentenced in the following terms: "You must be had back again to prison, and there lie for three months following; and at the three months' end, if you do not submit to go to church to hear divine service, and leave your preaching, you must be banished the realm; and if you be found to come over again without special licence from the king, you must be stretched by the neck for it, I tell you plainly," said the judge: and so he bade the jailor remove his prisoner. Bunyan resolutely answered, that if he were out of prison to-day, he would preach the gospel again to-morrow, by the help of God.

Of the propriety of Bunyan's conduct in refusing to desist from preaching, differing opinions will be formed. Dr. Southey, as might be anticipated, takes a decided part with his judges; giving it as his opinion, that in none of Bunyan's writings "does he appear so little reasonable, or so little tolerant, as upon these examinations." In what his intolerance consisted, is not very apparent; but the learned Biographer possibly refers to honest John's objection to using the common-prayer-book, as not being of divine authority. In proof that he was unreasonable, it is urged, that "he was neither called upon to renounce any thing that he did believe, nor to profess any thing that he did not; that the congregation to which he belonged, held at this time their meetings unmolested; that he might have worshipped when he pleased, where he pleased, and how he pleased; and that he was only required not to go about the country holding conventicles."* The extreme disingenuousness of this statement will be evident when it

* Dr. Southey adds: "The cause for that interdiction was, not that persons were admonished in such conventicles to labour for salvation, but that they were exhorted there to regard with abhorrence that Protestant church which is essentially part of the constitution of this kingdom." An assertion imbodying an historical misrepresentation and a calumny, and which would serve just as well to justify the persecution of Dissenters in the present day. If the conventicle act was right, the toleration act was wrong.

is recollected, that the statute under which he was indicted, rendered his nonconformity itself a crime; that his abstaining from coming to church was placed in the front of his offence; and that he was not only required to profess what, in him, would have been hypocrisy, but to renounce what he believed to be his sacred duty. "Sir," said Bunyan, in a subsequent examination, to the clerk of the peace, who tried to persuade him to forbear awhile,—"Wicliff saith, that he who leaveth off preaching and hearing of the word of God for fear of excommunication of men, he is already excommunicated of God, and shall in the day of judgment be counted a traitor to Christ." When reminded that the Scripture enjoined obedience to the powers that be, his answer was: "That Paul did own the powers that were in his day to be of God; and yet he was often in prison under them, for all that; and also, though Jesus Christ told Pilate that he had no power against him, but of God, yet he died under the same Pilate. And yet," (he added,) "I hope you will not say that either Paul or Christ were such as did deny magistracy, and so sinned against God in slighting the ordinance. Sir, the law hath provided two ways of obeying: the one, to do that which I in my conscience do believe I am bound to do actively; and where I cannot obey actively, there I am willing to lie down, and to suffer what they shall do unto me." Such was the "unreasonable" character of his defence; and because it was, in the opinion of the Apologist for Laud,* unreasonable, Bunyan, we have been told, "is most wrongfully represented as having been the victim of intolerant laws and prelatical oppression." Yet, it is admitted, that he evinced at least the strength of will and strength of heart, the fortitude and the patience of a martyr. Nor was it without a painful conflict of emotions that he made up his mind to the consequences of his firmness, as we learn from the touching expression of his feelings during

* And Biographer of Wesley, whom, but for the Toleration-act, the same statute would have condemned to incarceration and exile.

imprisonment, contained in his Narrative. "I found myself," he says, "a man encompassed with infirmities: the parting with my wife and poor children hath often been to me in this place as the pulling the flesh from the bones; and that not only because I am somewhat too fond of these great mercies, but also because I should have after brought to my mind the many hardships, miseries, and wants that my poor family was likely to meet with, should I be taken from them; especially my poor blind child, who lay nearer my heart than all beside. Oh! the thoughts of the hardship I thought my poor blind one might go under, would break my heart to pieces. Poor child! thought I, what sorrow art thou like to have for thy portion in this world! Thou must be beaten, must beg, suffer hunger, cold, nakedness, and a thousand calamities, though I cannot now endure the wind should blow upon thee. But yet, recalling myself, thought I, I must venture you all with God, though it goeth to the quick to leave you."

The summary punishment which the justices had inflicted upon Bunyan, was not only an act of gross oppression, but obviously a stretch of the law, both as he was apprehended before there had been any proclamation against the meetings, upon a statute which had lain dormant, and as he was convicted upon a mere construction put upon his own words during examination. His detention in prison afterwards turned upon his having been thus irregularly convicted.

On the King's coronation, in April 1661, a general pardon was proclaimed; and thousands who had been committed to prison for nonconformity and other offences, were set at liberty. "In which privilege," says Bunyan, "I should also have had my share, but they took me for a convicted person; and, therefore, unless I sued out a pardon, as they called it, I could have no benefit thereby." Bunyan, therefore, was still detained; and at the next assizes, in August 1661, that he might leave no lawful means of escape unattempted, he did, by his wife, present

a petition to the judges, three times, that he might be heard, and his case taken into consideration. Sir Matthew Hale was one of these judges; and it appears from Mrs. Bunyan's testimony, as preserved in the Narrative, that, on receiving the petition, he expressed a willingness to do for her the best he could, but feared that nothing could be done; and on being assured by one of the justices who had committed Bunyan, that he was a hot-spirited fellow, he waived the matter, and declined interfering. Encouraged, however, by the high sheriff, to make another effort before the judges left the town, Elizabeth Bunyan, who seems to have imbibed a portion of her husband's spirit, again made her way, "with a bashed face and a trembling heart," into the judges' chamber. Addressing herself to Judge Hale, she pleaded the unlawfulness of his conviction; urging that she had been told in London by a nobleman, to whom she had delivered a petition to the House of Lords on her husband's behalf, that his releasement was committed to the judges at the next assizes. "And now," she said, "I am come to you, to see if any thing may be done in this business, and you give neither releasement nor relief." "My Lord," said Justice Chester, "he is a pestilent fellow; there is not such a fellow in the country again." "Will your husband leave preaching?" said Judge Twisdon: "if he will do so, then send for him." "My Lord," replied Elizabeth Bunyan, "he dares not leave preaching, as long as he can speak." "See here!" exclaimed the last-mentioned judge; "what should we talk any more about such a fellow? Must he do what he lists? He is a breaker of the peace." "He desires to live peaceably, my Lord," rejoined Mrs. Bunyan, "and to follow his calling, that his family may be maintained. Moreover," she added, "I have four small children that cannot help themselves, one of which is blind; and we have nothing to live upon but the charity of good people." "Hast thou four children?" said Judge Hale: "thou art but a young woman to have four children." "My Lord," said she, "I am but mother-in-law to them, having not

been married to him yet two full years." She proceeded to add, that she was near her confinement when her husband was apprehended; and that the shock brought on premature labour, and the child died. Upon hearing which, Judge Hale, looking very seriously, exclaimed, "Alas! poor woman." Judge Twisdon brutally remarked, that she made poverty a cloak; and that Bunyan was maintained better by running up and down preaching, than by following his calling. "What is his calling?" asked Judge Hale. "A tinker, my Lord," said a bystander. "Yes," rejoined Elizabeth Bunyan, "and because he is a tinker and a poor man, therefore he is despised, and cannot have justice." There was truth in this blunt appeal, and Hale felt its force. "I tell thee, woman," he very mildly replied, "seeing it is so, that they have taken what thy husband spake for a conviction, thou must apply thyself to the king, or sue out his pardon, or get a writ of error." Justice Chester, on hearing the upright judge give her this counsel, could not conceal his vexation; exclaiming, "My Lord, he will preach, and do what he lists." "He preacheth nothing but the word of God," said his wife. "He preach the word of God!" said Twisdon in a rage; "he runneth up and down, and doth harm." "No, my Lord," said she, "it is not so: God hath owned him, and done much good by him." "God!" said Twisdon, "his doctrine is the doctrine of the devil." "My Lord," once more replied this meek, yet spirited woman, "when the righteous Judge shall appear, it will be known that his doctrine is not the doctrine of the devil." There was no answering this; and Twisdon, turning to Hale, begged him not to mind her, but to send her away. The Judge, evidently moved, said again to Mrs. Bunyan, in a tone of kindness: "I am sorry, woman, that I can do thee no good. Thou must do one of those three things aforesaid, namely, either to apply thyself to the king, or sue out his pardon, or get a writ of error; but a writ of error will be the cheapest."

Thus terminated this extraordinary scene. Elizabeth Bunyan left the court in tears; "not so much," she

declares, " because they were so hard-hearted against her and her husband, as from the thought, what a sad account such poor creatures will have to give at the coming of the Lord." How could she suppose that one of those judges was a man of saintly piety and integrity! And how little did that judge suspect that the prisoner whose cause was thus pathetically pleaded, was destined by his writings to win to himself an everlasting name, as the guide of Christian pilgrims to the heavenly city! At the coming of the Lord, Hale and Bunyan will not be divided.

Although, in the Pilgrim's Progress, there is nothing that can be construed into personal satire, its Author must be supposed to have had his own case in vivid recollection, when he described the treatment which Christian and Faithful met with at Vanity Fair. The indictment of the pilgrims, if not a parody on the charges brought against Bunyan, conveys the same idea in allegorical terms:— " That they were enemies to and disturbers of the trade; that they had made commotions and divisions in the town, and had won a party to their own most dangerous opinions, in contempt of the law of their prince." The language of the witnesses, too, will recall the above examination.

" *Envy.* My Lord, this man is one of the vilest men in the country; he neither regardeth prince nor people, law nor custom; but doth all he can to possess all men with certain of his disloyal notions, which he in the general calls *principles of faith and holiness.* And, in particular, I heard him once myself affirm, that Christianity and the customs of our Town of Vanity were diametrically opposite, and could not be reconciled; by which saying, my Lord, he doth at once not only condemn all our laudable doings, but us in the doing of them.

" *Superstition.* My Lord, I have no great acquaintance with this man, nor do I desire to have further knowledge of him: however, this I know, that he is *a very pestilent fellow*, from some discourse that the other day I had with him in this town; for, then talking with him, I heard

him say, that our religion was naught, and such by which a man could by no means please God.

"*Faithful.* May I speak a few words in my own defence?

"*Judge.* Sirrah, sirrah! thou deservest to live no longer, but to be slain immediately on the place. Yet, that all men may see our gentleness towards thee, let us hear what thou, vile runagate, hast to say.

"*Faithful.* I say, then, in answer to what Mr. Envy hath spoken, I never said ought but this; That what rule, or laws, or custom, or people, were flat against the word of God, are diametrically opposite to Christianity. If I have said amiss in this, convince me of my error, and I am ready, here before you, to make my recantation. As to the second, to wit, Mr. Superstition and his charge against me, I said only this; That in the worship of God there is required a divine faith; but there can be no divine faith without a divine revelation of the will of God. Therefore, whatever is thrust into the worship of God that is not agreeable to divine revelation, cannot be done but by a human faith, which faith will not be profitable to eternal life."

There can be no doubt that it was upon such grounds as these, (whether valid or otherwise, this is not the place to inquire,) that Bunyan, in common with other nonconformists, objected to the use, and still more to the imposition, of the Book of Common Prayer. He tells us himself, that, on obtaining liberty from the gaoler, (who appears to have confided in him so far as to allow him to go at large upon his word,) he followed his wonted course of preaching, taking all occasions put into his hand to visit those who had attended upon his ministry; "exhorting them to be steadfast in the faith of Jesus Christ, and to take heed that they touched not the Common Prayer, &c.,* but to mind the word of God, which giveth direction to Chris-

* "An &c.," remarks Dr. Southey, "more full of meaning than that which occasioned the dishonest outcry against the &c. oath." Had the learned Biographer printed the whole of the sentence, however, Bunyan's meaning

tians in every point, being able to make the man of God perfect in all things, through faith in Jesus Christ, and thoroughly to furnish him unto all good works." The indulgence at first allowed him, enabled him to be present at private meetings of the congregation at Bedford, in June and July, 1661, his name being found in the minutes of the church-book; and once the gaoler permitted him to take a journey to London. Unfortunately, Bunyan's enemies heard of it, and his friendly gaoler, being threatened with the loss of his office, was compelled to keep his prisoner more close; so that, says Bunyan, "I must not now look out of the door." He expected to be called to account at the ensuing assizes, in November 1661; but he was passed over. In January following, the assizes were again held; and being anxious to come before the judges, he prevailed upon the gaoler to put down his name in the calendar; but his enemies prevented his being called to appear. Why no steps were taken in pursuance of Judge Hale's advice, does not appear from the Narrative; and it has been surmised, that the means for defraying the legal expenses could not be raised. It might have been supposed that the object of his visit to London was connected with some effort to obtain the reversal of his sentence, as there would seem to have been otherwise no adequate motive for the risk he incurred; but the Narrative contains no intimation of the kind. He now appears to have resigned himself to his fate. From there being no mention of his name at the church-meetings of the Bedford congregation from July 1661, to August 1668, it is inferred that, during these seven years, he was kept a close prisoner. As there was an end put to his working at his craft, he learned to make tagged laces, and by this means contributed to support his family. Dr. Southey takes for granted, that their condition was not

would have been more evident from the exhortation to adhere to the Scriptures as the only and sufficient rule of faith. A jealousy for the exclusive authority of the word of God, the principle so manfully advocated by Chillingworth, was the real source of the strong feeling manifested against both the Common Prayer and the *et-cetera*.

"worsened by his imprisonment," since it would render them "objects of compassion to their neighbours," and that Bunyan was, upon the whole, very comfortable in gaol. "He had the society there," he says, "of some who were suffering for the same cause;"* he had his Bible, and his Book of Martyrs; and he had leisure to brood over his own thoughts. Scanty materials of worldly comfort; but how enviable the man who could extract happiness out of them! Are any thanks due to his unjust persecutors, that "the Pilgrim's Progress was one of the fruits of his imprisonment?"

> "——————— The oppressor holds
> His body bound; but knows not what a range
> His spirit takes, unconscious of a chain;
> And, that to bind him is a vain attempt,
> Whom God delights in, and in whom he dwells."—COWPER.

Bunyan thus speaks of his own imprisonment: "I was had home to prison, and there have lain now complete twelve years, waiting to see what God would suffer these men to do with me.† In which condition I have continued with much content, through grace, but have met with many turnings and goings upon my heart;" the result of which, he adds, had been "much conviction, instruction, and

* It is said, "there were never fewer than sixty dissenters in the prison with him during the period of his confinement; for, as some were discharged, others were committed. Two of these were ministers of the Baptist denomination, Mr. Wheeler and Mr. Dunn."—IVIMEY'S LIFE OF BUNYAN.

† Perhaps we are to understand Bunyan as meaning that he was imprisoned twelve years altogether. The Continuator of his Life states, that he was imprisoned at first for six years, till, "the Act of Indulgence to Dissenters being allowed, he obtained his freedom by the intercession of some in trust and power, that took pity on his sufferings; but within six years afterwards"—six *days* must be meant—"he was again taken up, viz. in the year 1666, and was then confined for six years more. . . When he was taken this last time, he was preaching on these words: 'Dost thou believe on the Son of God?' And this imprisonment continued six years; and when this was over, another short affliction, which was an imprisonment of half a year, fell to his share." "In the last year of his twelve years' imprisonment," it is added, "the pastor of the congregation at Bedford died; and he was chosen to that care of souls on the 12th of December, 1671."

understanding." During the last four years of his imprisonment—that is, from 1669 to 1672, inclusive—he enjoyed a considerable degree of liberty. From the entries in the Baptist church-book, he appears to have been regularly present at their social meetings; and in October 1671, though still a prisoner, he was elected to the office of co-pastor or elder of that community. Among the works written during his confinement, we find enumerated the following:—Of Prayer by the Spirit. The Holy City's Resurrection. Grace Abounding, (the autobiographical narrative so often referred to.) Pilgrim's Progress, Part I. Defence of the Doctrine of Justification, against Bishop Fowler. This last work is dated from prison, the 21st of the 11th month, 1671.

The First Part of the Pilgrim's Progress is known to have been written during his imprisonment; but, as no extant copy of the first edition has hitherto been discovered, the year in which it was published remains uncertain. The date of the second edition, of which a copy is in the British Museum, is 1678. If, therefore, the work was published before his release, or even immediately after it, the sale must have been very slow and limited for some years after its appearance. But when once it had found its way into general circulation, edition after edition was rapidly called for. The eighth edition was published in 1682, the ninth in 1684, and the tenth in 1685.* In the mean time, several dishonest imitations of his work had appeared;

* One passage of considerable length, the whole scene between Mr. By-Ends and his three friends, and their subsequent discourse with Christian and Faithful, was added after the second edition. Dr. Southey conjectures that it was first inserted in the fourth impression, "which had many additions more than any preceding." This is stated in an advertisement on the back of the frontispiece to the eighth; where it is also stated, that the publisher, "observing that many persons desired to have it illustrated with pictures, hath endeavoured to gratify them therein; and besides those that are ordinarily printed to the fifth impression, hath provided thirteen copper cuts, curiously engraven, for such as desire them." No additions, Dr. Southey informs us, after collating the editions, were introduced subsequently to the eighth; nor any alterations but verbal ones of slight importance.

some of them counterfeiting his popular title, others purporting to be a second part. These interlopers may have furnished an additional inducement to Bunyan to put forth his own Continuation of the Parable, which appeared in January, 1684. In the poetical preface to this Second Part, he refers with honest satisfaction to the extensive reputation which his Pilgrim had attained:

> "In France and Flanders, where men kill each other,
> My Pilgrim is esteemed a friend, a brother.
> In Holland too, 'tis said, as I am told,
> My Pilgrim is, with some, worth more than gold.
> Highlanders and wild Irish can agree,
> My Pilgrim should familiar with them be.
> 'Tis in New England under such advance,
> Receives there so much loving countenance,
> As to be trimmed, new clothed, and deck'd with gems,
> That it might show its features and its limbs.
> Yet more; so comely doth my Pilgrim walk,
> That of him thousands daily sing and talk."

In the same homely, yet not despicable lines, he refers to some of the objections which had been urged against the First Part:

> "But some there be that say, He laughs too loud;
> And some do say, His head is in a cloud.
> Some things are of that nature as to make
> One's fancy chuckle, while his heart doth ache.
> Whereas some say, *A cloud is in his head,*
> That doth but show his wisdom's covered
> With its own mantle."

It is probable that Bunyan had already become known by his writings, when he obtained his release. How this was effected, is not known; but, some time in 1672, a day of thanksgiving was observed by his flock, on the occasion of his deliverance. The Author of the Continuation of his Life, appended to his own Narrative,* states, that "Dr. Barlow, the then bishop of Lincoln, and other churchmen,"

* Supposed to have been Mr. Charles Doe, a Baptist minister. He describes himself as "a true friend and long acquaintance of Mr. Bunyan's."

had been "moved by his patience to pity his hard and unreasonable sufferings, so far as to stand very much his friends in procuring his enlargement." And the interference of Bishop Barlow has been ascribed, upon credible authority, to the intercession of Dr. John Owen. For this story there must be some foundation. Yet Barlow was not made a bishop till 1675;* and it may be questioned, whether, at that period, any thing short of a royal order could have secured to Bunyan the undisturbed enjoyment of his personal freedom and his liberty to preach. The Conventicle Act had been revived in 1670, in all its severity. Yet, shortly after his enlargement, Bunyan was enabled to build a meeting-house, by the voluntary contributions of his friends. In the church-book, it is entered: "11 August, 1672, the ground on which the meeting-house stands was bought by subscription." Here he continued to preach to large audiences, without any material interruption. "In this charge," says the Continuator of his Narrative, "he often had disputes with scholars that came to oppose him, as supposing him an ignorant person; and, though he argued plainly, and by scripture, without phrases and logical expressions, yet he nonplussed" them by his pertinent answers. Every year he used to pay a visit to his friends in London, where his reputation as a preacher was so great, that "if but a day's notice were given, the meeting-house in Southwark, where he generally preached, would not hold half the people that attended. Three thousand persons have been gathered together for the purpose in a remote part of the town; and no fewer than twelve hundred, on a dark winter's morning, at seven o'clock, even on week-days." Dr. Owen is stated to have been among his occasional auditors; and an anecdote is on record, that, being asked by Charles II., how a learned man such as he

* See Orme's Life of Owen, p. 398. Mr. Orme confesses that he is unable to reconcile with this date the story told in Asty's Memoirs of Owen, and repeated by Mr. Ivimey, of Bishop Barlow's refusing to comply with Owen's request, without an order from the chancellor; unless it refers to some subsequent imprisonment

was, could sit and hear an illiterate tinker prate, he replied: "May it please your majesty, could I possess that tinker's abilities for preaching, I would most gladly relinquish all my learning."* The anecdote, if true, may be thought to illustrate the modesty and generous candour of Owen, himself an accomplished pulpit orator, as much as the power of Bunyan's native eloquence; yet it is quite credible, that Owen should prize above all his scholastic attainments, the native genius displayed by the uneducated preacher, in combination with the peculiar unction that appears to have characterised his ministry. "Even some to whom he had been misrepresented upon the account of his (want of) education," says the Continuator of his Narrative, "were convinced of his worth and knowledge in sacred things, as perceiving him to be a man of sound judgment, delivering himself plainly and powerfully; insomuch that many who came spectators for novelty, rather than to be edified and improved, went away well satisfied with what they heard, and wondered, as the Jews did at the apostles, 'whence this man should have these things.'"

Besides his annual visit to London, Bunyan occasionally visited other parts of the country; "insomuch," says the same authority, "that some, by these visitations that he had made, which were two or three every year, (though in jeering manner, no doubt,) gave him the epithet of Bishop Bunyan; while others envied him for his so earnestly labouring in Christ's vineyard." The Baptist congregation at Hitchin, in Hertfordshire, is supposed to have been founded by him. There is a deep dell in a wood near the

* Ivimey's History of the English Baptists, Vol. II. p. 41. Southey treats the anecdote as apocryphal, without assigning any other reason for his incredulity, than that such an opinion would be discreditable to Owen's judgment, if he really entertained it. Yet he remarks of the following anecdote, that it authenticates itself. "One day, when he had preached with peculiar warmth and enlargement, some of his friends came to shake hands with him after the service, and observed to him, what 'a sweet sermon' he had delivered. 'Aye!' he replied, 'you need not remind me of that; for the devil told me of it before I was out of the pulpit.'" This story has been told of others besides Bunyan, but it may belong to him.

village of Preston, where a thousand people could collect; and there Bunyan used frequently to preach to large congregations. A chimney-corner, in a house in the same wood, is still looked upon with veneration, as having been the place of his refreshment.* About five miles from Hitchin, was a famous puritan preaching-place, called Bendish,† where also Bunyan was in the practice of preaching, in an old malt-house; and the pulpit was carefully removed, as an honoured relic, when, in 1787, the meeting was transferred to Coleman's Green. Other congregations in Bedfordshire are believed to owe their origin to his midnight preaching during his imprisonment, when he enjoyed the liberty, by sufferance, of making secret excursions to visit his friends. Reading, in Berkshire, was another place which he frequently visited; and a tradition has been preserved by the Baptist congregation there, that he sometimes went through that town dressed like a carter, with a long whip in his hand, to avoid detection. The house in which the Baptists met for worship, stood in a lane; and from the back door, they had a bridge over a branch of the river Kennett, whereby, in case of alarm, they might escape. In a visit to that place, prompted by his characteristic kindness of heart, he contracted the disease which brought him to his grave. The son of a gentleman who resided there, having fallen under his father's displeasure, who threatened to disinherit him, applied to Mr. Bunyan to act as a mediator on his behalf. He did so with good success; and it was his last labour of love. As he returned to London on horseback, he was overtaken by heavy rains,

* The following anecdote has been preserved by tradition. At a house near Preston Castle, about three miles from Hitchin, the nonconformist ministers used to meet for mutual conference. At one of these meetings, that difficult text, Rom. viii. 18—22, was spoken from. When it came to Mr. Bunyan's turn to speak, he only said, "The Scriptures are wiser than I." Luther confessed that the meaning of that Scripture he could never make out.

† It was a low, thatched building, running in two directions. A large square pulpit stood in the angles, and adjoining it was a "high pew, in which ministers sat, out of sight of informers, and from which, in case of alarm, they could escape into an adjacent cave."

and took cold. A violent fever ensued; and, after an illness of ten days, he "resigned his soul into the hands of his most merciful Redeemer."* He died at the house of his friend Mr. Struddock, (or Stradwick,) a grocer, on Snow-hill, on the 12th of August, 1688, in the 61st year of his age; and was buried in his host's vault at Bunhill-fields, where a handsome tomb has been erected to his memory.

The following description of his person and character has been drawn by his first Biographer. "He appeared in countenance to be of a stern and rough temper, but, in his conversation, mild and affable; not given to loquacity or much discourse in company, unless some urgent occasion required it; observing never to boast of himself or his parts, but rather to seem low in his own eyes, and submit himself to the judgment of others; . . . . loving to reconcile differences, and make friendship with all. He had a sharp, quick eye, accompanied with an excellent discerning of persons, being of good judgment and quick wit. As for his person, he was tall of stature, strong-boned, though not corpulent; somewhat of a ruddy face, with sparkling eyes; wearing his hair on his upper lip, after the old British fashion; his hair reddish, but, in his latter days, time had sprinkled it with grey; his nose well set, but not declining or bending, and his mouth moderately large; his forehead somewhat high; and his habit always plain and modest."

Of his four children, (there were none by his second marriage,) three survived him:† the blind daughter, on whose

* It appears that, at the time of his death, the lord mayor, Sir John Shorter, was one of his London flock. A memorandum preserved in Ellis's Correspondence thus records his death, September 6, 1688: "Few days before died Bunian, his Lordship's teacher or chaplain; a man said to be gifted in that way, though once a cobler."

† Thomas, the eldest son, was received into communion with the Baptist Church at Bedford, November 6, 1673, just after his father had obtained his liberty, and continued a member for forty-five years, preaching occasionally in the adjacent villages. Katherine Bunyan, admitted a member in 1692, and John Bunyan, received into communion June 27, 1693, are supposed to have been grand-children of Mr. Bunyan. In the burial-ground of the Bedford meeting-house, is a stone in memory of his great-grand-daughter, Hannah Bunyan, who died Feb. 15, 1770, aged 76.

behalf he expressed such tender solicitude, died a few years before him. His wife Elizabeth, who had pleaded his cause with so much energy and feeling before the justices, "having lived to see him overcome his labour and sorrow, and pass from this life to receive the reward of his work, long survived him not; for, in 1692, she died, to follow her faithful pilgrim from this world to the other; whilst his works," quaintly adds the same Biographer, "which consist of sixty books, remain for the edifying of the reader, and praise of the author."

Bunyan was a voluminous writer. Besides the works already enumerated, he published from time to time a number of theological and polemical tracts; and he appears to great advantage as a controversial writer, in contrast with his acrimonious and intolerant assailants. He was reluctantly drawn into a dispute with some of the most eminent Baptist ministers of the day, who attacked him with disgraceful virulence for maintaining the principle and practice of what is termed open communion; that is to say, for admitting persons of other denominations to communion at the Lord's Table, on the principle, that "differences of judgment about water baptism" are "no bar to communion." In his tracts upon this litigated point, he discovers an enlightened tolerance and a catholicity of feeling, not only far removed from the narrow views and bigoted prejudices of his brethren, but far in advance of the spirit of his age. The Holy War, published also in his life-time, (apparently before the second part of the Pilgrim's Progress,) would of itself have immortalized its author, had he produced nothing else. Shortly after his decease, his widow put forth an advertisement, stating her inability to print the writings which he left unpublished, some of them prepared for the press. Four years, however, elapsed before, in 1692, his collected works, including several posthumous writings, were published in one volume folio, edited by Ebenezer Chandler, who succeeded him as pastor of the Bedford congregation, and John Wilson, the first pastor of the Baptist flock at

Hitchin. But this volume did not comprise the whole of his works. In 1735-6, another edition appeared in two vols. folio, edited by Rev. Samuel Wilson of Prescot-street meeting, grandson to the above John Wilson. For a reprint of this, the Rev. George Whitfield furnished a recommendatory preface. A later edition has been published in 6 vols. 8vo.; and an edition of his "Select Works" was printed in 1808. The Third Part of the Pilgrim's Progress, which appeared after his death, and is included in many editions of his incomparable work, is not genuine, and bears the indubitable marks of an inferior imitator.

It is impossible to form even a conjecture as to the number of editions through which the Pilgrim's Progress has passed. Dr. Southey thinks it probable that no other book in the English language has obtained so constant and so wide a sale. The prints which have been engraved to illustrate it, would form a curious and extensive collection, exhibiting every variety, from the worst specimens, both in wood and copper, up to the vignettes from Harvey's spirited designs, and the copper-plates from Martin, which adorn the elegant edition to which is prefixed Dr. Southey's Life of the Author, and the exquisite series of Illustrations by Melville, now presented to the admirers of the Prince of Dreamers. A list of the several languages into which the Pilgrim's Progress has been translated, would be not less curious. "Bunyan," remarks Dr. Southey, "could little have supposed that his book would ever be adapted for sale among the Romanists. Whether this was done in the earliest French translation, I do not know; but in the second there is no Giant Pope.... The First Part, under the title of '*Le Pelerinage d'un nommé Chrétien*,' forms one of the volumes of the '*Petite Bibliothéque du Catholique*,' and bears in the title-page a glorified head of the Virgin! A Portuguese translation of the First Part also, and in like manner cut down to the opinions of the public for which it was designed, was published in 1782. Indeed, I believe there is no European language into which the Pilgrim's Progress has not been

translated." The idiom of the work, however, is so purely and peculiarly English, that it must be next to impossible to preserve its genuine character in a foreign dress. "The fervour of the Poet's soul," remarks the American Critic before cited, (nor is the descriptive appellation a misnomer,) "acting through the medium of such a language as he learned from our common translation of the Scriptures, has produced some of the most admirable specimens in existence of the manly power and familiar beauty of the English tongue!" Pages might be occupied with the encomiums with which poets and critics have of late delighted to honour this once obscure and despised religious writer. Scott, Byron, and Wordsworth, besides Southey and Montgomery, have re-echoed the tribute of admiration and affectionate sympathy, which Cowper was the first that ventured to offer to his memory, suppressing the as yet uncanonized name.

"I name thee not,———
Yet e'en in transitory life's late day,
That mingles all my brown with sober grey,
Revere the man whose PILGRIM marks the road,
And guides the PROGRESS of the soul to God."

THE

PILGRIM'S PROGRESS

FROM

THIS WORLD TO THAT WHICH IS TO COME.

DELIVERED UNDER THE SIMILITUDE OF A DREAM.

PART I.

WHEREIN ARE DISCOVERED THE MANNER OF HIS SETTING OUT; HIS DANGEROUS JOURNEY; AND SAFE ARRIVAL AT THE DESIRED COUNTRY.

"I have used similitudes," Hos. xii. 10.

THE

AUTHOR'S APOLOGY

FOR HIS BOOK.

When at the first I took my pen in hand,
Thus for to write, I did not understand
That I at all should make a little book
In such a mode: nay, I had undertook
To make another; which when almost done,
Before I was aware, I this begun.
And thus it was: I, writing of the way
And race of saints in this our gospel-day,
Fell suddenly into an allegory
About their journey, and the way to glory,
In more than twenty things, which I set down:
This done, I twenty more had in my crown;
And they again began to multiply,
Like sparks that from the coals of fire do fly.
Nay then, thought I, if that you breed so fast,
I'll put you by yourselves, lest you at last
Should prove *ad infinitum*, and eat out
The book that I already am about.
Well, so I did; but yet I did not think
To show to all the world my pen and ink
In such a mode; I only thought to make
I knew not what; nor did I undertake

Thereby to please my neighbour; no, not I;
I did it mine own self to gratify.
Neither did I but vacant seasons spend
In this my scribble; nor did I intend
But to divert myself, in doing this,
From worser thoughts which make me do amiss.
Thus I set pen to paper with delight,
And quickly had my thoughts in black and white.
For having now my method by the end,
Still as I pull'd, it came; and so I penn'd
It down; until at last it came to be,
For length and breadth, the bigness which you see.
Well, when I had thus put my ends together,
I show'd them others, that I might see whether
They would condemn them, or them justify;
And some said, Let them live; some, Let them die;
Some said, John, print it; others said, Not so:
Some said, It might do good; others said, No.
Now was I in a strait, and did not see
Which was the best thing to be done by me:
At last I thought, Since you are thus divided,
I print it will; and so the case decided.
For, thought I, some I see would have it done,
Though others in that channel do not run:
To prove, then, who advised for the best,
Thus I thought fit to put it to the test.
I further thought, if now I did deny
Those that would have it thus to gratify,
I did not know but hinder them I might
Of that which would to them be great delight:
For those which were not for its coming forth,
I said to them, *Offend you I am loath;*

Yet, since your brethren pleased with it be,
Forbear to judge, till you do further see.
  If that thou wilt not read, let it alone;
Some love the meat, some love to pick the bone;
Yea, that I might them better palliate,
I did too with them thus expostulate:
  May I not write in such a style as this?
In such a method too, and yet not miss
My end, thy good? Why may it not be done?
Dark clouds bring waters, when the bright bring none.
Yea, dark or bright, if they their silver drops
Cause to descend, the earth, by yielding crops,
Gives praise to both, and carpeth not at either,
But treasures up the fruit they yield together;
Yea, so commixes both, that in their fruit
None can distinguish this from that; they suit
Her well when hungry; but, if she be full,
She spews out both, and makes their blessing null.
  You see the ways the fisherman doth take
To catch the fish; what engines doth he make
Behold! how he engageth all his wits;
Also his snares, lines, angles, hooks, and nets:
Yet fish there be, that neither hook nor line,
Nor snare, nor net, nor engine, can make thine
They must be grop'd for, and be tickled too,
Or they will not be catch'd, whate'er you do.
How does the fowler seek to catch his game?
By divers means, all which one cannot name:
His guns, his nets, his lime-twigs, light, and bell:
He creeps, he goes, he stands; yea, who can tell
Of all his postures? Yet there's none of these
Will make him master of what fowls he please.

Yea, he must pipe and whistle to catch *this*,
Yet, if he does so, *that* bird he will miss.
  If that a pearl may in a toad's head dwell,
And may be found too in an oyster shell:
If things that promise nothing do contain
What better is than gold, who will disdain,
That have an inkling of it, there to look,
That they may find it? Now, my little book
(Though void of all these paintings, that may make
It with this or the other man to take)
Is not without those things that do excel
What do in brave but empty notions dwell.
  Well, yet I am not fully satisfy'd
That this your book will stand, when soundly try'd.
  Why, what's the matter? *It is dark!* What though?
But it is feigned. What of that? I trow
Some men, by feigned words, as dark as mine,
Make truth to spangle, and its rays to shine!
But they want solidness. Speak, man, thy mind!
They drown the weak; metaphors make us blind.
  Solidity, indeed, becomes the pen
Of him that writeth things divine to men:
But must I needs want solidness, because
By metaphors I speak? Were not God's laws,
His gospel laws, in olden time held forth
By shadows, types, and metaphors? Yet loath
Will any sober man be to find fault
With them, lest he be found for to assault
The Highest Wisdom! No, he rather stoops,
And seeks to find out what by pins and loops,
By calves and sheep, by heifers and by rams,
By birds and herbs, and by the blood of lambs,

God speaketh to him; and happy is he
That finds the light and grace that in them be.
  Be not too forward, therefore, to conclude
That I want solidness, that I am rude:
All things solid in show, not solid be;
All things in parable despise not we,
Lest things most hurtful lightly we receive,
And things that good are, of our souls bereave.
My dark and cloudy words, they do but hold
The truth, as cabinets enclose the gold.
  The prophets used much by metaphors
To set forth truth; yea, whoso considers
Christ, his apostles too, shall plainly see
That truths to this day in such mantles be.
  Am I afraid to say, that holy writ,
Which for its style and phrase puts down all wit,
Is every where so full of all these things,
(Dark figures, allegories,) yet there springs
From that same book, that lustre, and those rays
Of light, that turn our darkest nights to days.
  Come, let my carper to his life now look,
And find there darker lines than in my book
He findeth any; yea, and let him know,
That in his best things there are worse lines too.
  May we but stand before impartial men,
To his poor one I dare adventure ten,
That they will take my meaning in these lines
Far better than his lies in silver shrines.
Come, truth, although in swaddling-clouts I find,
Informs the judgment, rectifies the mind;
Pleases the understanding, makes the will
Submit; the memory too it doth fill

With what doth our imagination please;
Likewise it tends our troubles to appease.
  Sound words, I know, Timothy is to use,
And old wives' fables he is to refuse;
But yet grave Paul him nowhere did forbid
The use of parables, in which lay hid
That gold, those pearls, and precious stones, that were
Worth digging for, and that with greatest care.
  Let me add one word more: O man of God!
Art thou offended? Dost thou wish I had
Put forth my matter in another dress?
Or that I had in things been more express?
To those that are my betters, as is fit,
Three things let me propound, then I submit:
  1. I find not that I am denied the use
Of this my method, so I no abuse
Put on the words, things, readers, or be rude
In handling figure or similitude,
In application; but all that I may
Seek the advance of truth, this or that way.
Denied, did I say? Nay, I have leave,
(Examples too, and that from them that have
God better pleased, by their words or ways,
Than any man that breatheth now-a-days,)
Thus to express my mind, thus to declare
Things unto thee that excellentest are.
  2. I find that men as high as trees will write
Dialogue-wise; yet no man doth them slight
For writing so: indeed, if they abuse
Truth, cursed be they, and the craft they use
To that intent; but yet let truth be free
To make her sallies upon thee and me,

Which way it pleases God; for who knows how,
Better than he that taught us first to plough,
To guide our minds and pens for his design?
And he makes base things usher in divine.

3. I find that holy writ, in many places,
Hath semblance with this method, where the cases
Do call for one thing to set forth another:
Use it I may then, and yet nothing smother
Truth's golden beams: nay, by this method may
Make it cast forth its rays as light as day.

And now, before I do put up my pen,
I'll show the profit of my book; and then
Commit both me and it unto that hand
That pulls the strong down, and makes weak ones stand.

This book it chalketh out before thine eyes
The man that seeks the everlasting prize:
It shows you whence he comes, whither he goes;
What he leaves undone; also what he does:
It also shows you how he runs and runs,
Till he unto the Gate of Glory comes.

It shows too who set out for life amain,
As if the lasting crown they would obtain.
Here also you may see the reason why
They lose their labour, and like fools do die.

This book will make a traveller of thee,
If by its counsel thou wilt ruled be;
It will direct thee to the Holy Land,
If thou wilt its direction understand;
Yea, it will make the slothful active be;
The blind also delightful things to see.

Art thou for something rare and profitable?
Or wouldst thou see a truth within a fable?

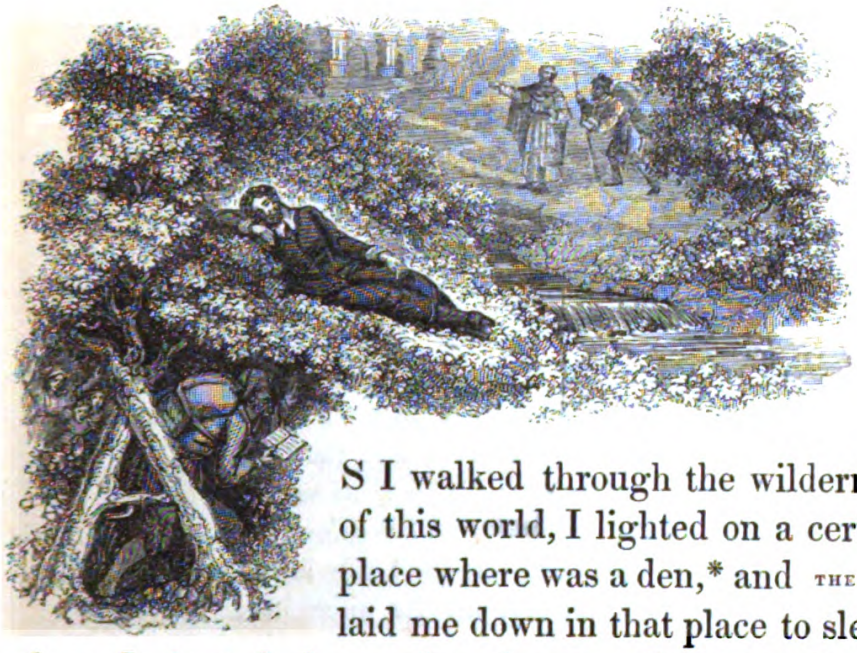
Art thou forgetful? Wouldest thou remember
From New-year's day to the last of December?
Then read my fancies; they will stick like burs,
And may be to the helpless, comforters.
This book is writ in such a dialect
As may the minds of listless men affect:
It seems a novelty, and yet contains
Nothing but sound and honest gospel strains.
Wouldst thou divert thyself from melancholy?
Wouldst thou be pleasant, yet be far from folly?
Wouldst thou read riddles and their explanation?
Or else be drowned in thy contemplation?
Dost thou love picking meat? Or wouldst thou see
A man i' the clouds, and hear him speak to thee?
Wouldst thou be in a dream, and yet not sleep?
Or wouldst thou in a moment laugh and weep?
Wouldest thou lose thyself and catch no harm,
And find thyself again without a charm?
Wouldst read thyself, and read thou know'st not what,
And yet know whether thou art blest or not,
By reading the same lines? O then come hither!
And lay my book, thy head, and heart together.

JOHN BUNYAN.

THE

PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.

PART I.



S I walked through the wilderness of this world, I lighted on a certain place where was a den,* and THE JAIL. laid me down in that place to sleep; and as I slept, I dreamed a dream. I dreamed, and, behold, I saw a man clothed with rags standing in a certain place, with his face from his own house, a book in

* Mr. Bunyan wrote this precious book in Bedford jail, where he was confined on account of his religion. The following anecdote is related of him. A Quaker came to the jail; and thus addressed him—"Friend Bunyan, the Lord sent me to seek for thee, and I have been through several counties in search of thee; and now I am glad I have found thee." To which Mr. Bunyan replied, "Friend, thou dost not speak truth, in saying the Lord sent thee to seek me; for the Lord well knows that I have been in this jail some years; and if he had sent thee, he would have sent thee here directly."

his hand, and a great burden upon his back.[a] I looked, and saw him open the book, and read therein; and, as he read, he wept and trembled; and, not being able longer to contain, he brake out with a lamentable cry,* saying, "What shall I do!"[b]

In this plight, therefore, he went home, and restrained himself as long as he could, that his wife and children should not perceive his distress; but he could not be silent long, because that his trouble increased. Wherefore, at length, he brake his mind to his wife and children; and thus he began to talk to them: O my dear wife, said he, and you the children of my bowels, I, your dear friend, am in myself undone by reason of a burden that lieth hard upon me; moreover, I am certainly

a Isaiah lxiv. 5. Luke xiv. 33. Psalm xxxviii. 4. Hab. ii. 2. b Acts ii. 37.

* The cry of an awakened sinner, who sees his own righteousness to be as filthy rags, his soul in a state of wrath and wretchedness, exposed to everlasting destruction: feeling the burden of his sins upon his back, he turns his face from his own house, from himself, from all his false hopes and vain confidences, for refuge, and takes his Bible in his hand, to direct him where he shall flee for refuge and salvation. The more a sinner reads therein, the more he is convinced of the wretched state and ruined condition of his precious immortal soul, and of the necessity of fleeing to Christ for eternal life and salvation. As he reads, he weeps and trembles to think what will become of him. Reader, was this ever your case? Did you ever see your sins, and feel the burden of them, so as to cry out, in the anguish of your soul, What must I do to be saved? If not, you will look on this precious book as a romance or history which no way concerns you; you can no more understand the meaning of it, than if it were written in an unknown tongue: for you are yet carnal, dead in your sins, lying in the arms of the wicked one, in false security. But this book is spiritual; it can only be understood by spiritually-quickened souls, who have experienced that salvation in the heart which begins with a sight of sin, a sense of sin, a fear of destruction, and dread of damnation. Such, and only such, commence Pilgrims from the city of Destruction to the heavenly kingdom.

informed that this our city will be burnt with fire from heaven; in which fearful overthrow, both myself, with thee my wife, and you my sweet babes, shall miserably come to ruin, except (the which yet I see not) some way of escape can be found, whereby we may be delivered. At this his relations were sore amazed;* not for that they believed that what he had said to them was true, but because they thought that some frenzy distemper had got into his head; therefore, it drawing towards night, and they hoping that sleep might settle his brains, with all haste they got him to bed.† But the night was as troublesome to him as the day; wherefore, instead of sleeping, he spent it in sighs and tears. So when the morning was come, they would know how he did. He told them, Worse and worse. He also set to talking to them again; but they began to be hardened. They also thought to drive away his distemper by harsh and surly carriage to him: sometimes they would deride, sometimes they would chide, and sometimes they would quite neglect him. Wherefore he began to retire himself to his chamber, to pray for and pity them, and also to condole his own misery; he would also walk solitarily in the fields, sometimes reading, and sometimes praying: and thus for some days he spent his time.

THIS WORLD.

HE KNOWS NO WAY OF ESCAPE AS YET.

CARNAL PHYSIC FOR A SICK SOUL.

Now I saw, upon a time, when he was walking in the fields, that he was (as he was wont) reading in his book, and greatly distressed in his mind; and as he

* Conviction of sin in the heart will discover itself to those about us, by the outward conduct and behaviour of the life.

† When we begin to be wise unto salvation, carnal friends pronounce us mad unto destruction, and administer carnal physic for our sin-sick souls.

read, he burst out, as he had done before, crying, "What shall I do to be saved?"[c]*

I saw also that he looked this way, and that way, as if he would run; yet he stood still because (as I perceived) he could not tell which way to go. I looked then, and saw a man named Evangelist coming to him, and asked, Wherefore dost thou cry?†

He answered, Sir, I perceive, by the book in my hand, that I am condemned to die, and after that to come to judgment; and I find that I am not willing to do the first, nor able to do the second.[d]‡

Then said Evangelist, Why not willing to die, since this life is attended with so many evils? The man answered, Because I fear that this burden that is upon my back§ will sink me lower than the grave, and I shall fall into Tophet.[e] And, sir, if I be not fit to go to prison, I am not fit to go to judgment, and from thence to execution: and the thoughts of these things make me cry.

CONVICTION OF THE NECESSITY OF FLEEING

Then said Evangelist, If this be thy condition, why standest thou still? He answered, Because I know not whither to go. Then he gave

c Acts xvi. 30, 31. d Heb. ix. 27. Job xvi. 21, 22. Ezek. xxii. 14.
e Isa. xxx. 33.

* No soul was ever in earnest for salvation, till there is a cry in his heart to be saved from damnation.

† Behold here the tender love and care of Jesus, the great Shepherd and Bishop of souls, to sin-distressed, heavy-laden sinners, in sending Evangelist, that is, a preacher of gospel grace, and glad tidings of salvation to them.

‡ A true confession of an enlightened, sensible sinner.

§ The convictions of the Spirit of God in the heart make a man feel the insupportable burden of sin upon his back, and to dread the wrath of God revealed from heaven against sin.

him a parchment roll; and there was written within, "Fly from the wrath to come."[f]*

The man therefore read it, and looking upon Evangelist very carefully, said, Whither must I fly? Then said Evangelist, pointing with his finger over a very wide field, Do you see yonder wicket-gate?[g] The man said, No. Then said the other, Do you see yonder shining light?[h]† He said, I think I do. Then said Evangelist, Keep that light in your eye, and go up directly thereto, so shalt thou see the gate; at which, when thou knockest, it shall be told thee what thou shalt do. So I saw in my dream, that the man began to run. Now he had not run far from his own door, when his wife and children (perceiving it) began to cry after him to return;[i] but the man put his fingers in his ears, and ran on, crying, 'Life! life! eternal life!' So he looked not behind him,[k] but fled towards the middle of the plain.‡

CHRIST, AND THE WAY TO HIM, CANNOT BE FOUND WITHOUT THE WORD.

The neighbours also came out to see him run:§ and,

f Matt. iii. 7. g Matt. vii. 13, 14. h Psa. cxix. 105. 2 Pet. i. 19. i Luke xiv. 26. k Gen. xix. 17.

* The gospel never leaves a convinced sinner in the miserable situation in which it finds him, without hope and relief; but points him to Jesus for safety and salvation, that he may fly from himself, and the wrath he feels in himself, to the fulness of the grace of Christ, signified by the Wicket-gate.

† Christ, and the way to him, cannot be found without the word. The word directs to Christ, and the Spirit shines into the heart, whereby the sinner sees Christ in the word. This makes God's word precious.

‡ When a sinner begins to fly from destruction, carnal relations will strive to prevent him; but it is wiser to stop our ears against the reasonings of flesh and blood, than to parley with them. Carnal affections cannot prevail over spiritual convictions. The sinner who is in earnest for salvation, will be deaf to invitations to go back. The more he is solicited by them, the faster he will fly from them.

§ They who fly from the wrath to come are a gazing-stock to the world.

THEY THAT FLY FROM THE WRATH TO COME ARE A GAZING-STOCK TO THE WORLD.

as he ran, some mocked, others threatened, and some cried after him to return; and among those that did so, there were two that were resolved to fetch him back by force. The name of the one was Obstinate, and the name of the other Pliable. Now by this time the man was got a good distance from them; but, however, they were resolved to pursue him; which they did, and in a little time they overtook him. Then said the man, Neighbours, wherefore are you come? They said, To persuade you to go back with us. But he said, That can by no means be. You dwell, said he, in the city of Destruction; the place also where I was born: I see it to be so; and dying there, sooner or later, you will sink lower than the grave, into a place that burns with fire and brimstone: be content, good neighbours, and go along with me.*

OBST. What, said Obstinate, and leave our friends and our comforts behind us!

CHR. Yes, said Christian, (for that was his name,) because that all which you shall forsake is not worthy to be compared with a little of that that I am seeking to enjoy;[l] and if you will go along with me, and hold it, you shall fare as I myself; for there, where I go, is enough and to spare.[m] Come away, and prove my words.

OBST. What are the things you seek, since you leave all the world to find them?

CHR. I seek an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away; and it is laid up in heaven,[n] and safe there, to be bestowed, at the time appointed, on

l 2 Cor iv 18. m Luke xv. 17 n 1 Pet. i. 4—6. Heb. xi. 6, 16.

* The genuine spirit of a sinner convinced of sin, and fleeing from destruction. He would gladly persuade other poor sinners to go with him. The least spark of grace from God in the heart discovers itself in good-will to men.

them that diligently seek it. Read it so, if you will, in my book.

OBST. Tush, said Obstinate, away with your book; will you go back with us, or no?

CHR. No, not I, said the other, because I have laid my hand to the plough.[o]

OBST. Come then, neighbour Pliable, let us turn again, and go home without him: there is a company of these crazy-headed coxcombs, that, when they take a fancy by the end, are wiser in their own eyes than seven men that can render a reason.

PLI. Then said Pliable, Don't revile; if what the good Christian says is true, the things he looks after are better than ours: my heart inclines to go with my neighbour.

OBST. What! more fools still! Be ruled by me, and go back; who knows whither such a brain-sick fellow will lead you? Go back, go back, and be wise.*

CHRISTIAN AND OBSTINATE PULL FOR PLIABLE'S SOUL.

CHR. Nay, but do thou come with thy neighbour Pliable; there are such things to be had which I spoke of, and many more glories besides. If you believe not me, read here in this book; and, for the truth of what is expressed therein, behold, all is confirmed by the blood of Him that made it.[p]

PLIABLE CONSENTETH TO GO WITH CHRISTIAN.

PLI. Well, neighbour Obstinate, said Pliable, I begin to come to a point; I intend to go along with this good man, and to cast in my lot with him: but, my good companion, do you know the way to this desired place?

CHR. I am directed by a man, whose name is Evan-

o Luke ix. 62. p Heb. ix. 17—22.

* He who never became a fool in the eyes of the world for Christ, is not yet made wise unto salvation through the faith of Christ.

gelist, to speed me to a little gate that is before us, where we shall receive instruction about the way.

PLI. Come then, good neighbour, let us be going. Then they went both together.

OBST. And I will go back to my place, said Obstinate: I will be no companion of such misled, fantastical fellows.*

OBSTINATE GOES RAILING BACK.

Now I saw in my dream, that when Obstinate was gone back, Christian and Pliable went talking over the plain; and thus they began their discourse.

TALK BETWEEN CHRISTIAN AND PLIABLE.

CHR. Come, neighbour Pliable, how do you do? I am glad you are persuaded to go along with me. Had even Obstinate himself but felt what I have felt of the powers and terrors of what is yet unseen, he would not thus lightly have given us the back.

PLI. Come, neighbour Christian, since there are none but us two here, tell me now farther, what the things are, and how to be enjoyed, whither we are going.

CHR. I can better conceive of them with my mind, than speak of them with my tongue: but yet, since you are desirous to know, I will read of them in my book.

GOD'S THINGS UNSPEAKABLE.

PLI. And do you think that the words of your book are certainly true?

CHR. Yes, verily; for it was made by Him that cannot lie.[q]

PLI. Well said; what things are they?

CHR. There is an endless kingdom to be inhabited,

q Tit. i. 2.

* Here see the different effects which gospel truths have upon natural men. Obstinate totally rejects them: Pliable hears of them with joy, believes somewhat of them for a season, and accompanies Christian a little way.

and everlasting life to be given us, that we may inhabit that kingdom for ever.[r]

PLI. Well said; and what else?

CHR. There are crowns of glory to be given us; and garments that will make us shine like the sun in the firmament of heaven.[s]

PLI. This is very pleasant; and what else?

CHR. There shall be no more crying, nor sorrow; for He that is owner of the place will wipe all tears from our eyes.[t]

PLI. And what company shall we have there?

CHR. There we shall be with seraphims and cherubims, creatures that will dazzle your eyes to look on them.[u] There also you shall meet with thousands and ten thousands that have gone before us to that place; none of them are hurtful, but loving and holy; every one walking in the sight of God, and standing in his presence with acceptance for ever. In a word, there we shall see the elders with their golden crowns;[v] there we shall see the holy virgins with their golden harps;[w] there we shall see men that by the world were cut in pieces, burnt in flames, eaten of beasts, drowned in the seas, for the love they bare to the Lord of the place, all well, and clothed with immortality as with a garment.[x]

PLI. The hearing of this is enough to ravish one's heart. But are these things to be enjoyed? How shall we get to be sharers thereof?

CHR. The Lord, the governor of the country, hath recorded that in this book, the substance of which is, If we be truly willing to have it, he will bestow it upon us freely.[y]

r Isa. lxv. 17. John x. 27—29. s 2 Tim. iv. 8. Rev. xxii. 5. Matt. xiii. 43.
t Isa. xxv. 8. Rev. vii. 16, 17. xxi. 4. u Isa. vi. 2. 1 Thess. iv. 16, 17.
v Rev. iv. 4. w Rev. xiv. 1—5. x John xii. 25. 2 Cor. v. 2—4.
y Isa. lv. 1—8. John vi. 37. vii. 37. Rev. xxi. 6, 7. xxii. 17.

PLI. Well, my good companion, glad am I to hear of these things: come on, let us mend our pace.*

CHR. I cannot go so fast as I would, by reason of this burden that is on my back.

Now I saw in my dream, that just as they had ended this talk, they drew nigh to a very miry slough, that was in the midst of the plain; and they being heedless, did both fall suddenly into the bog. The name of the slough was Despond. Here, therefore, they wallowed for a time, being grievously bedaubed with the dirt; and Christian, because of the burden that was on his back, began to sink in the mire.

THE SLOUGH OF DESPOND.

PLI. Then said Pliable, Ah, neighbour Christian, where are you now?

CHR. Truly, said Christian, I do not know.

PLI. At this Pliable began to be offended, and angrily said to his fellow, Is this the happiness you have told me all this while of? If we have such ill speed at our first setting out, what may we expect between this and our journey's end? May I get out again with my life, you shall possess the brave country alone for me. And with that he gave a desperate struggle or two, and got out of the mire on that side of

IT IS NOT ENOUGH TO BE PLIABLE.

* Here see the fleshly joys and fleshly comforts of temporary professors: he is too hot to hold; too light, having never felt the burden of his sins, to travel far. Our Lord describes such, as the stony-ground hearers. They receive the word with joy; the word hath no root in their hearts; they believe for a while, but in times of temptation fall away, Luke viii. 13. So did Pliable at the Slough of Despond. This signifies those desponding fears and despairing doubts, which beset us, arising from unbelief of God's word, the suggestions of Satan, and the carnal reasonings of our corrupt nature, against the revealed truths and precious promises of God. These try the reality of our convictions, and the sincerity of our faith.

the slough which was next to his own house: so away he went, and Christian saw him no more.*

Wherefore Christian was left to tumble in the Slough of Despond alone: but still he endeavoured to struggle to that side of the slough that was farthest from his own house, and next to the Wicket-gate;† the which he did, but could not get out because of the burden that was upon his back. But I beheld in my dream, that a man came to him, whose name was Help,‡ and asked him, What he did there?

CHRISTIAN, IN TROUBLE, SEEKS STILL TO GET FARTHER FROM HIS OWN HOUSE.

CHR. Sir, said Christian, I was bid to go this way by a man called Evangelist, who directed me also to yonder gate, that I might escape the wrath to come. And as I was going thither, I fell in here.

HELP. But why did not you look for the steps?§

THE PROMISES.

CHR. Fear followed me so hard, that I fled the next way, and fell in.

HELP. Then said he, Give me thy hand; so he gave him his hand, and he drew him out, and set him upon sound ground, and bid him go on his way.[z]

HELP LIFTS HIM OUT.

z Psalm xl. 2.

* It is not enough to be Pliable; for the first trial he met with cooled his courage, damped his joy, killed his faith, and sent him back to the city of Destruction.

† Christian, in trouble, seeks still to get farther from his own house. See the difference between a truly convinced sinner, and a pliable unconvinced professor: one keeps his face towards Christ for hope and help; the other flies back for comfort to the city of Destruction.

‡ The arm of Christ's omnipotent grace, reached forth to snatch poor sinners from destruction; for he says of them, "Thou hast destroyed thyself, but in me is thine help," Hos. xiii. 9.

§ The great and precious promises of God, which are in Christ Jesus, to poor, needy, and distressed sinners.

Then I stepped to him that plucked him out, and said, Sir, wherefore, since over this place is the way from the city of Destruction to yonder gate, is it, that this plat is not mended, that poor travellers might go thither with more security? And he said unto me, This miry slough is such a place as cannot be mended: it is the descent whither the scum and filth that attends conviction for sin doth continually run, and therefore it is called the Slough of Despond; for still, as the sinner is awakened about his lost condition, there arise in his soul many fears and doubts, and discouraging apprehensions, which all of them get together, and settle in this place. And this is the reason of the badness of this ground.

WHAT MAKES THE SLOUGH OF DESPOND.

It is not the pleasure of the King that this place should remain so bad.[a] His labourers also have, by the direction of his Majesty's surveyors, been for above these sixteen hundred years employed about this patch of ground, if perhaps it might have been mended: yea, and to my knowledge, said he, here have been swallowed up at least twenty thousand cart-loads, yea, millions of wholesome instructions, that have at all seasons been brought from all places of the King's dominions, (and they that can tell, say, they are the best materials to make good ground of the place,) if so be it might have been mended; but it is the slough of Despond still, and so will be when they have done what they can.*

True, there are, by the direction of the Lawgiver, certain good and substantial steps, placed even through the very midst of this slough; but at such time as this place doth much

THE PROMISE OF FORGIVENESS AND ACCEPTANCE TO LIFE BY FAITH IN CHRIST.

a Isa. xxxv. 3, 4, 8.

* Signifying, that there is nothing but despondency and despair in the fallen nature of sinful man: the best that we can do, leaves us in the Slough of Despond, as to any hopes in ourselves.

spew out its filth, as it doth against change of weather, these steps are hardly seen; or if they be, men, through the dizziness of their heads, step beside; and then they are bemired to purpose, notwithstanding the steps be there:[b] but the ground is good when they are once got in at the gate.*

PLIABLE GOT HOME, AND IS VISITED BY HIS NEIGHBOURS.

Now I saw in my dream, that by this time Pliable was got home to his house. So his neighbours came to visit him; and some of them called him wise man for coming back, and some called him fool for hazarding himself with Christian: others again did mock at his cowardliness, saying, Surely, since you began to venture, I would not have been so base as to have given out for a few difficulties: so Pliable sat sneaking among them. But at last he got more confidence, and then they all turned their tales, and began to deride poor Christian behind his back. And thus much concerning Pliable.

MR. WORLDLY WISEMAN MEETS WITH CHRISTIAN.

Now as Christian was walking solitarily by himself, he espied one afar off, come crossing over the field to meet him; and their hap was to meet just as they were crossing the way of each other. The gentleman's name that met him was Mr. Worldly Wiseman: he dwelt in the town of Carnal Policy, a very great town, and also hard-by from whence Christian came. This man then, meeting with Christian, and having some inkling of him, (for Christian's setting forth from the city of Destruction was much noised abroad, not only in the town where he dwelt, but also

b 1 Sam. xii. 21.

* That is the Lord Jesus Christ. We never find good ground, nor safe standing, nor comfortable walking, till we enter into possession of Christ by faith, and till our feet are set upon Christ, who is the Rock of Ages.

it began to be the town-talk in some other places,)—Mr. Worldly Wiseman, therefore, having some guess of him, by beholding his laborious going, by observing his sighs and groans, and the like, began thus to enter into some talk with Christian.

TALK BETWEEN MR. WORLDLY WISEMAN AND CHRISTIAN.

WORLD. How now, good fellow, whither away after this burdened manner?

CHR. A burdened manner indeed, as ever I think poor creature had! And whereas you ask me, Whither away? I tell you, sir, I am going to yonder wicket-gate before me; for there, as I am informed, I shall be put into a way to be rid of my heavy burden.

WORLD. Hast thou a wife and children?

CHR. Yes; but I am so laden with this burden, that I cannot take that pleasure in them as formerly: methinks I am as if I had none.[c]

WORLD. Wilt thou hearken to me, if I give thee counsel?

CHR. If it be good, I will; for I stand in need of good counsel.

WORLD. I would advise thee, then, that thou with all speed get thyself rid of thy burden; for thou wilt never be settled in thy mind till then: nor canst thou enjoy the benefits of the blessings which God hath bestowed upon thee, till then.

WORLDLY WISEMAN'S COUNSEL TO CHRISTIAN.

CHR. That is that which I seek for, even to be rid of this heavy burden: but get it off myself I cannot; nor is there any man in our country that can take it off my shoulders; therefore am I going this way, as I told you, that I may be rid of my burden.*

c 1 Cor. vii. 29.

* A glimpse of the wicket-gate, or of deliverance from the guilt of sin by Christ, will make the sinner reject all other ways, and press on towards Christ only.

WORLD. Who bid thee go this way to be rid of thy burden?

CHR. A man that appeared to me to be a very great and honourable person: his name, as I remember, is Evangelist.

WORLD. I beshrew him for his counsel! there is not a more dangerous and troublesome way in the world than is that into which he hath directed thee; and that thou shalt find, if thou wilt be ruled by his counsel. Thou hast met with something, as I perceive, already; for I see the dirt of the Slough of Despond is upon thee: but that slough is the beginning of the sorrows that do attend those that go on in that way. Hear me; I am older than thou: thou art like to meet with, in the way which thou goest, wearisomeness, painfulness, hunger, perils, nakedness, sword, lions, dragons, darkness, and, in a word, death, and what not. These things are certainly true, having been confirmed by many testimonies. And should a man so carelessly cast away himself, by giving heed to a stranger?

MR. WORLDLY WISEMAN CONDEMNETH EVANGELIST'S COUNSEL.

CHR. Why, sir, this burden upon my back is more terrible to me than are all these things which you have mentioned: nay, methinks I care not what I meet with in the way, if so be I can also meet with deliverance from my burden.*

THE FRAME OF THE HEART OF A YOUNG CHRISTIAN.

WORLD. How camest thou by thy burden at first?

CHR. By reading this book in my hand.

WORLD. I thought so;† and it is happened unto thee as to other weak men, who, meddling with things too high for them, do suddenly fall into thy distractions;

* Such is the frame of the heart of a young Christian.

† Mr. Worldly-Wiseman does not like that men should be serious in reading the Bible.

HE DOES NOT LIKE THAT MEN SHOULD BE SERIOUS IN READING THE BIBLE.

which distractions do not only unman men, as thine I perceive have done thee, but they run them upon desperate ventures, to obtain they know not what.

CHR. I know what I would obtain; it is ease from my heavy burden.

WORLD. But why wilt thou seek for ease this way, seeing so many dangers attend it? especially since (hadst thou but patience to hear me) I could direct thee to the obtaining of what thou desirest, without the dangers that thou in this way wilt run thyself into. Yea, and the remedy is at hand. Besides, I will add, that, instead of those dangers, thou shalt meet with much safety, friendship, and content.

CHR. Sir, I pray open this secret to me.

WORLD. Why, in yonder village (the village is named Morality) there dwells a gentleman whose name is Legality, a very judicious man, and a man of a very good name, that has skill to help men off with such burdens as thine is from their shoulders; yea, to my knowledge, he hath done a great deal of good this way; ay, and besides, he hath skill to cure those that are somewhat crazed in their wits with their burdens.* To him, as I said, thou mayst go, and be helped presently. His house is not quite a mile from this place; and if he should not be at home himself, he hath a pretty young man to his son, whose name is

HE PREFERS MORALITY BEFORE THE STRAIT-GATE.

* Mr. Worldly Wiseman prefers Morality to Christ the strait-gate. This is the exact reasoning of the flesh. Carnal reason ever opposes spiritual truth. The notion of justification by our own obedience to God's law, ever works in us, contrary to the way of justification by the obedience of Christ. Self-righteousness is as contrary to the faith of Christ, as indulging the lusts of the flesh. The former is the white devil of pride, the latter the black devil of rebellion and disobedience. See the awful consequences of listening to the reasonings of the flesh!

Civility, that can do it (to speak on) as well as the old gentleman himself: there, I say, thou mayest be eased of thy burden; and if thou art not minded to go back to thy former habitation, (as indeed I would not wish thee,) thou mayst send for thy wife and children to thee to this village, where there are houses now stand empty, one of which thou mayst have at a reasonable rate: provision is there also cheap and good; and that which will make thy life the more happy is, to be sure there thou shalt live by honest neighbours, in credit and good fashion.

CHRISTIAN SNARED BY MR. WORLDLY WISE-MAN'S WORDS.

Now was Christian somewhat at a stand; but presently he concluded, If this be true which this gentleman hath said, my wisest course is to take his advice: and with that he thus farther spake.

CHR. Sir, which is my way to this honest man's house?

MOUNT SINAI.

WORLD. Do you see yonder high hill?

CHR. Yes, very well.

WORLD. By that hill you must go, and the first house you come at is his.

CHRISTIAN AFRAID THAT MOUNT SINAI WOULD FALL ON HIS HEAD.

So Christian turned out of his way to go to Mr. Legality's house for help:* but, behold, when he was got now hard by the hill, it seemed so high, and also that side of it that was next the way-side did hang so much over, that Christian was afraid to venture further, lest the hill should fall on his head; wherefore there he stood still, and wotted not what to do. Also his burden now seemed heavier to

* And a sad turn it proved to him; for he turned from the work of Christ, for his salvation, to his own works and obedience; so did the Galatians of old. Mark the consequence: Christian is afraid that Mount Sinai (all the dreadful curses of the law) would fall on his head. Exod. xix. 18.

him than while he was in his way. There came also flashes of fire out of the hill, that made Christian afraid that he should be burnt:[d] here therefore he did sweat, and quake for fear. And now he began to be sorry that he had taken Mr. Worldly Wiseman's counsel; and with that he saw Evangelist* coming to meet him, at the sight also of whom he began to blush for shame. So Evangelist drew nearer and nearer; and coming up to him, he looked upon him with a severe and dreadful countenance, and thus began to reason with Christian.

EVANGELIST FINDETH CHRISTIAN UNDER MOUNT SINAI.

EVAN. What dost thou here, Christian? said he: at which words Christian knew not what to answer; where-

d Exod. xix. 16—18. Heb. xii. 21.

* Evangelist findeth Christian under Mount Sinai, and looketh severely upon him. See the effects of disobeying the Gospel!

fore at present he stood speechless before him. Then said Evangelist farther, Art not thou the man that I found crying without the walls of the city of Destruction?

EVANGELIST REASONS AFRESH WITH CHRISTIAN.

CHR. Yes, dear sir, I am the man.

EVAN. Did not I direct thee the way to the little wicket-gate?

CHR. Yes, dear sir, said Christian.

EVAN. How is it then that thou art so quickly turned aside? For thou art now out of the way.

CHR. I met with a gentleman so soon as I had got over the Slough of Despond, who persuaded me that I might, in the village before me, find a man that could take off my burden.

EVAN. What was he?

CHR. He looked like a gentleman,* and talked much to me, and got me at last to yield; so I came hither; but when I beheld this hill, and how it hangs over the way, I suddenly made a stand, lest it should fall on my head.

EVAN. What said that gentleman to you?

CHR. Why, he asked me whither I was going; and I told him.

EVAN. And what said he then?

CHR. He asked me if I had a family; and I told him. But, said I, I am so loaden with the burden that is on my back, that I cannot take pleasure in them as formerly.

* Beware of taking men by their looks. They may look as gentle as lambs, while the poison of asps is under their tongue; whereby they infect many souls with pernicious errors and pestilent heresies, turning them from Christ and the hope of full justification and eternal life through him only, to look to and rely upon their own works, in whole or in part, for salvation.

EVAN. And what said he then?

CHR. He bid me with speed get rid of my burden; and I told him it was ease that I sought. And, said I, I am therefore going to yonder gate, to receive farther direction how I may get to the place of deliverance. So he said that he would show me a better way, and short, not so attended with difficulties as the way, sir, that you set me in; which way, said he, will direct you to a gentleman's house that hath skill to take off these burdens: so I believed him,* and turned out of that way into this, if haply I might be soon eased of my burden. But when I came to this place, and beheld things as they are, I stopped, for fear (as I said) of danger: but I now know not what to do.†

EVANGELIST CONVINCES HIM OF HIS ERROR.

EVAN. Then said Evangelist, Stand still a little, that I may show thee the words of God. So he stood trembling. Then said Evangelist, "See that ye refuse not Him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from Him that speaketh from heaven."[e] He said, moreover, "Now the just shall live by faith; but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him."[f] He also did thus apply them: Thou art the man that art running into this misery; thou hast begun to reject the counsel of the Most High, and to draw back thy foot

e Heb. xii. 25. f Heb. x. 38.

* As the belief of the truth lies at the foundation of the hope of eternal life, and is the cause of any one becoming a pilgrim; so the belief of a lie is the cause of any one's turning out of the way which leads to glory.

† Legality will bring the soul to perplexity, and cause him to stop for fear, unless he is suffered to go on, blinded by pride and self-righteousness, to his own destruction.

from the way of peace, even almost to the hazarding of thy perdition.*

Then Christian fell down at his feet as dead, crying, Woe is me, for I am undone! At the sight of which Evangelist caught him by the right hand, saying, "All manner of sin and blasphemies shall be forgiven unto men." "Be not faithless, but believing." Then did Christian again a little revive, and stood up trembling, as at first, before Evangelist.†

Then Evangelist proceeded, saying, Give more earnest heed to the things that I shall tell thee of. I will now show thee who it was that deluded thee, and who it was also to whom he sent thee. The man that met thee is one Worldly Wiseman, and rightly is he so called; partly because he savoureth only of the doctrine of this world,[g] (therefore he always goes to the town of Morality to church;) and partly because he loveth that doctrine best, for it saveth him best from the cross:[h] and because he is of this carnal temper, therefore he seeketh to pervert my ways, though right. Now there are three things in this man's counsel that thou must utterly abhor.

MR. WORLDLY WISEMAN DESCRIBED BY EVANGELIST.

1. His turning thee out of the way.
2. His labouring to render the cross odious to thee.

g 1 John iv. 5. h Gal. vi. 12.

* See the danger of turning from the faith of Christ, to trust in any degree to our own works for justification and eternal life. Beware of legal teachers, and of thy own legal spirit.

† See the glory of gospel grace to sinners. See the amazing love of Christ in dying for sinners. O remember the price which Christ obtained the pardon of your sins at, nothing less than his own most precious blood. Believe his wonderful love. Rejoice in his glorious salvation. Live in the love of him, in the hatred of your sins, and in humbleness of mind before him.

3. And his setting thy feet in that way that leadeth unto the administration of death.*

First, Thou must abhor his turning thee out of the way; yea, and thine own consenting thereto; because this is to reject the counsel of God for the sake of the counsel of a Worldly Wiseman. The Lord says, "Strive to enter in at the strait gate," the gate to which I send thee; "for strait is the gate that leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it."[i] From this little wicket-gate, and from the way thereto, hath this wicked man turned thee, to the bringing of thee almost to destruction: hate, therefore, his turning thee out of the way, and abhor thyself for hearkening to him.

Secondly, Thou must abhor his labouring to render the cross odious unto thee; for thou art to prefer it before the treasures of Egypt.[k] Besides, the King of glory hath told thee, that he that will save his life shall lose it. And he that comes after him, and hates not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.[l] I say, therefore, for man to labour to persuade thee that that shall be thy death, without which, the truth hath said, thou canst not have eternal life: this doctrine thou must abhor.

Thirdly, Thou must hate his setting of thy feet in the

i Luke xiii. 24. Matt. vii. 13, 14. k Heb. xi. 25, 26.
l Matt. x. 37—39. Mark viii. 34, 35. Luke xiv. 26, 27. John xii. 25.

* Gospel comfort cannot be enjoyed, till the soul is convinced of the evil, and rejects the doctrine of Legality, or trust in, and dependence upon, our own works for justification, in whole or in part. Beware of compounding with Mr. Legality, so as to be justified by grace at first, and by works at last; for this is confounding grace and works, so as to exalt our vile selves, and to dishonour precious Christ and his glorious righteousness. This detestable heresy abounds greatly in the present day.

way that leadeth to the ministration of death. And for this thou must consider to whom he sent thee, and also how unable that person was to deliver thee from thy burden.

He to whom thou wast sent for ease, being by name Legality, is the son of the bond-woman which now is, and is in bondage with her children;[m] and is, in a mystery, this mount Sinai, which thou hast feared will fall on thy head. Now, if she with her children are in bondage, how canst thou expect by them to be made free? This Legality, therefore, is not able to set thee free from thy burden. No man was as yet ever rid of his burden by him; no, nor ever is like to be. Ye cannot be justified by the works of the law; for by the deeds of the law no man living can be rid of his burden: therefore Mr. Worldly Wiseman is an alien, and Mr. Legality is a cheat; and for his son Civility, notwithstanding his simpering looks, he is but a hypocrite, and cannot help thee. Believe me, there is nothing in all this noise that thou hast heard of these sottish men, but a design to beguile thee of thy salvation, by turning thee from the way in which I had set thee.* After this, Evangelist called aloud to the heavens for confirmation of what he had said; and with that there came words and fire out of the mountain under which poor Christian stood, that made the hair of his flesh stand up. The words were thus pronounced; "As many as are of the works of the law are under the curse; for it is written,

m Gal. iv. 21—27.

* The Gospel pays no respect to demure looks, and a sanctified face; but pronounces such cheats, hypocrites, and beguilers, who turn souls from the cross of Christ, and the way of salvation by him, to trust in anywise to their own works for justification and salvation.

Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them."[n]*

Now Christian looked for nothing but death, and began to cry out lamentably; even cursing the time in which he met with Mr. Worldly Wiseman; still calling himself a thousand fools for hearkening to his counsel. He also was greatly ashamed to think that this gentleman's arguments, flowing only from the flesh, should have the prevalency with him so far as to cause him to forsake the right way. This done, he applied himself again to Evangelist in words and sense as follows.

CHRISTIAN INQUIRES IF HE MAY YET BE HAPPY.

CHR. Sir, what think you,† is there any hope? May I now go back, and go up to the wicket-gate? Shall I not be abandoned for this, and sent back from thence ashamed? I am sorry I have hearkened to this man's counsel: but may my sin be forgiven?

EVANGELIST COMFORTS HIM.

EVAN. Then said Evangelist to him, Thy sin is very great, for by it thou hast committed two evils; thou hast forsaken the way that is good, to tread in forbidden paths. Yet will the man at the gate receive thee, for he has *good-will* for men; only, said he, take heed that thou turn not aside again, "lest thou perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little."[o]

n Gal. iii. 10. o Psalm ii. 12.

* Legality is as great an enemy to the cross of Christ as licentiousness, for it keeps the soul from coming to, believing in, and trusting wholly to the blood of Christ for pardon, and the righteousness of Christ for justification; so that it keeps the soul in bondage, and swells the mind with pride, while licentiousness brings a scandal on the cross.

† Christian inquires if he may yet be happy. Legal hopes will bring on distress of soul, and despondency of spirit, as well as outward sins: there is no hope of a sinner's being comforted by the cross of Christ, till he is made sensible of this.

Drawn by H. Melville

Engraved by W. Floyd

Then did Christian address himself to go back; and Evangelist, after he had kissed him, gave him one smile, and bid him God speed.* So he went on with haste, neither spake he to any man by the way; nor if any man asked him, would he vouchsafe them an answer. He went like one that was all the while treading on forbidden ground, and could by no means think himself safe till again he was got into the way which he had left to follow Mr. Worldly Wiseman's counsel. So in process of time Christian got up to the gate. Now over the gate there was written, "Knock, and it shall be opened unto you."[p]

He knocked, therefore, more than once or twice,† saying,

> "May I now enter here? Will he within
> Open to sorry me, though I have been
> An undeserving rebel? Then shall I
> Not fail to sing his lasting praise on high.'

At last there came a grave person to the gate, named Good-will, who asked who was there? and whence he came? and what he would have?

CHR. Here is a poor burdened sinner. I come from the city of Destruction, but am going to Mount Zion, that I may be delivered from the wrath to come. I would, therefore, sir, since I am informed that by this gate is the way thither, know if you are willing to let me in.

GOOD. I am willing with all my heart,‡ said he; and with that he opened the gate.

THE GATE WILL BE OPENED TO BROKEN-HEARTED SINNERS.

p Matt. vii. 8.

* Nothing but the Gospel of Christ can direct our steps in the right way, and bring peace and comfort to our souls. It salutes us with a cheering smile, a kiss of peace, and a blessing of consolation; and hence it wings our speed to Christ and holiness.

† This is praying and pleading in faith with God for mercy and forgiveness of sin, through the blood of Jesus Christ.

‡ The gate will be opened to broken-hearted sinners. Here behold the love of Jesus, in freely and heartily receiving every poor sinner

So when Christian was stepping in, the other gave him a pull.* Then said Christian, What means that? The other told him, A little distance from this gate there is erected a strong castle, of which Beelzebub is the captain: from thence both he, and them that are with him, shoot arrows at those that come up to this gate, if haply they may die before they can enter in.

SATAN ENVIES THOSE THAT ENTER THE STRAIT GATE.

Then said Christian, I rejoice and tremble. So when he was got in, the man at the gate asked him, who directed him thither?

CHRISTIAN ENTERS THE GATE WITH JOY AND TREMBLING.

CHR. Evangelist bid me come hither and knock, as I did; and he said, that you, sir, would tell me what I must do.

TALK BETWEEN GOODWILL AND CHRISTIAN.

GOOD. An open door is set before thee, and no man can shut it.

CHR. Now I begin to reap the benefit of my hazards.

GOOD. But how is it that you came alone?

CHR. Because none of my neighbours saw their danger, as I saw mine.

GOOD. Did any of them know of your coming?

CHR. Yes, my wife and children saw me at the first, and called after me to turn again: also some of my neighbours stood crying, and calling after me to return; but I put my fingers in my ears, and so came on my way.

GOOD. But did none of them follow you, to persuade you to go back?

CHR. Yes, both Obstinate and Pliable: but when

who comes unto him. No matter how vile they have been, nor what sins they have committed; he loves them freely, and receives them graciously. For he has nothing but good-will to them. Hence the heavenly host sang at his birth, "Good-will towards men," Luke ii. 14.

* Every saved sinner is as a brand plucked out of the fire by the loving arm of Christ, Zech. iii. 2.

they saw that they could not prevail, Obstinate went railing back, but Pliable came with me a little way.

GOOD. But why did he not come through?

CHR. We indeed came both together, until we came to the Slough of Despond, into the which we also suddenly fell. And then was my neighbour Pliable discouraged, and would not adventure farther.* Wherefore, getting out again on the side next to his own house, he told me, I should possess the brave country alone for him: so he went *his* way, and I came *mine:* he after Obstinate, and I to this gate.

A MAN MAY HAVE COMPANY WHEN HE SETS OUT FOR HEAVEN, AND YET GO THITHER ALONE.

GOOD. Then said Good-will, Alas, poor man! is the celestial glory of so little esteem with him, that he counteth it not worth running the hazard of a few difficulties to obtain it?

CHR. Truly, said Christian, I have said the truth of Pliable, and if I should also say all the truth of myself, it will appear there is no betterment betwixt him and myself. It is true, he went back to his own house, but I also turned aside to go into the way of death, being persuaded thereto by the carnal argument of one Mr. Worldly Wiseman.†

CHRISTIAN ACCUSETH HIMSELF BEFORE THE MAN AT THE GATE.

GOOD. Oh, did he light upon you? What, he would have had you seek for ease at the hands of Mr. Legality! they are both of them a very cheat. But did you take his counsel?

* A man may have company when he sets out for heaven, and yet go thither alone. "Many be called, but few chosen," Matt. xx. 16.

† Where there is true grace in the heart, it will take shame to itself, and give all the glory to God's sovereign grace, for any difference there is between us and others. Free grace kills free-will pride, and lays the sinner low, while it exalts Christ, and causes sinners to triumph in his righteousness and salvation.

CHR. Yes, as far as I durst, I went to find out Mr. Legality, until I thought that the mountain that stands by his house would have fallen upon my head; wherefore there was I forced to stop.*

GOOD. That mountain has been the death of many, and will be the death of many more: it is well you escaped being by it dashed in pieces.

CHR. Why, truly, I do not know what had become of me there, had not Evangelist happily met me again as I was musing in the midst of my dumps: but it was God's mercy that he came to me again, for else I had never come hither. But now I am come, such a one as I am, more fit indeed for death by that mountain, than thus to stand talking with my Lord. But, oh! what a favour is this to me, that yet I am admitted entrance here.†

CHRISTIIAN IS COMFORTED AGAIN, AND DIRECTED YET ON HIS WAY.

GOOD. We make no objections against any, notwithstanding all that they have done before they come hither; they in no wise are cast out.[q] And therefore, good Christian, come a little way with me, and I will teach thee about the way thou must go. Look before thee; dost thou see

q John vi. 37.

* Though Jesus knows what is in man, and all his ways, yet he will bring the soul to confession unto him. See the loving heart of Christ to sinners, and the free communication he admits them to with himself. O ye his people, pour out your hearts before him; God-Jesus is a refuge for us, Psalm lxii. 8.

† It is a sure sign of a genuine work of grace, when the heart ascribes all to grace. Here is no talk of being faithful to grace—no ascribing any thing to his own free-will or power; but his escape from destruction, and being yet in the way of salvation, are wholly resolved into the grace of the Gospel, the mercy of God, and into his free favour and almighty power. It is sweet to converse with Jesus, of his free grace to wretched and unworthy sinners. Do not you find it so?

this narrow way? that is the way thou must go. It was cast up by the patriarchs, prophets, Christ, and his apostles, and it is as straight as a rule can make it: this is the way thou must go.

CHR. But, said Christian, are there no turnings nor windings, by which a stranger may lose his way?*

CHRISTIAN AFRAID OF LOSING HIS WAY.

GOOD. Yes, there are many ways butt down upon this, and they are crooked and wide: but thus thou mayest distinguish the right from the wrong, the right only being straight and narrow.[r]

Then I saw in my dream, that Christian asked him further, if he could not help him off with his burden that was upon his back; for as yet he had not got rid thereof, nor could he by any means get it off without help.

CHRISTIAN WEARY OF HIS BURDEN.

He told him, As to thy burden, be content to bear it, until thou comest to the place of deliverance;† for there it will fall from thy back of itself.

THERE IS NO DELIVERANCE FROM THE GUILT AND BURDEN OF SIN, BUT BY THE DEATH AND BLOOD OF CHRIST.

Then Christian began to gird up his loins, and to address himself to his journey. So the other told him, that by that he was gone some distance from the gate, he would come at the house of the Interpreter, at whose door he should knock, and he would show him excellent

r Matt. vii. 14.

* Christian afraid of losing his way; a blessed sign of a gracious heart, when it possesses godly jealousy.

† There is no deliverance from the guilt and burden of sin, but by the death and blood of Christ. Here observe, that though a sinner, at his first coming to Christ, finds some comfort and encouragement, yet he may not have a clear sense of pardon, and assurance of the forgiveness of his sins; but he may still feel the burden of them. But his faith in Jesus will be putting his Lord in mind of them.

things. Then Christian took his leave of his friend, and he again bid him God speed.

CHRISTIAN COMES TO THE HOUSE OF THE INTERPRETER.

Then he went on, till he came at the house of the Interpreter,* where he knocked over and over. At last one came to the door, and asked who was there?

CHR. Sir, here is a traveller, who was bid by an acquaintance of the goodman of this house to call here for my profit; I would therefore speak with the master of the house.

So he called for the master of the house, who, after a little time, came to Christian, and asked him what he would have.†

CHR. Sir, said Christian, I am a man that am come from the city of Destruction, and am going to the Mount Zion; and I was told by the man that stands at the gate at the head of this way, that, if I called here, you would show me excellent things, such as would be helpful to me on my journey.

HE IS ENTERTAINED.

INTER. Then said the Interpreter, Come in; I will show thee that which will be profitable to thee.‡ So he commanded his man to light the candle, and bid Christian follow him; so he had him into a private room, and bid his man open a door; the which, when he had done, Christian saw the picture of a very grave person hang up against the wall; and this was the fashion of it: it had eyes lifted up to

ILLUMINATION.

CHRISTIAN SEES A BRAVE PICTURE.

THE FASHION OF THE PICTURE.

* Christian comes to the house of the Interpreter, which means the Lord the Spirit, the teacher of his people.

† Christians too often go to consult with men, instead of the Lord himself; this is a fault and a folly.

‡ O how loving, how condescending, is the Spirit of God to poor miserable sinners!

heaven, the best of books in his hand, the law of truth was written upon its lips, the world was behind its back; it stood as if it pleaded with men, and a crown of gold did hang over its head.

CHR. Then said Christian, What meaneth this?

INTER. The man whose picture this is, is one of a thousand; he can beget children,[s] travail in birth with children,[t] and nurse them himself when they are born. And whereas thou seest him with his eyes lift up to heaven, the best of books in his hand, and the law of truth writ on his lips: it is to show thee, that his work is to know and unfold dark things to sinners; even as also thou seest him stand as if he pleaded with men: and whereas thou seest the world as cast behind him, and that a crown hangs over his head; that is to show thee, that slighting and despising the things that are present for the love that he hath to his Master's service, he is sure in the world that comes next to have glory for his reward. Now, said the Interpreter, I have showed thee this picture first, because the man whose picture this is, is the only man whom the Lord of the place whither thou art going hath authorized to be thy guide in all difficult places thou mayest meet with in the way. Wherefore take good heed to what I have showed thee, and bear well in thy mind what thou hast seen; lest in thy journey thou meet with some that pretend to lead thee right, but their way goes down to death.*

MEANING OF THE PICTURE.

WHY HE SHOWED HIM THIS PICTURE FIRST.

s 1 Cor. iv. 15. t Gal. iv. 19.

* This is a true picture of a gospel minister, one whom the Lord the Spirit has called and qualified for preaching the everlasting gospel. He is one who despises the world—is dead to its pleasures and joys; his chief aim is to exalt and glorify the Lord Jesus, his atoning blood, justifying righteousness, and finished salvation; and his greatest glory

Then he took him by the hand, and led him into a very large parlour, that was full of dust, because never swept; the which, after he had reviewed it a little while, the Interpreter called for a man to sweep. Now, when he began to sweep, the dust began so abundantly to fly about, that Christian had almost therewith been choked. Then said the Interpreter to a damsel that stood by, Bring hither water, and sprinkle the room; the which when she had done, it was swept and cleansed with pleasure.

CHR. Then said Christian, What means this?

INTER. The Interpreter answered, This parlour is the heart of a man that was never sanctified by the sweet grace of the gospel: the dust is his original sin, and inward corruptions that have defiled the whole man. He that began to sweep at first is the law; but she that brought water, and did sprinkle it, is the gospel. Now, whereas thou sawest that so soon as the first began to sweep, the dust did so fly about, that the room by him could not be cleansed, but that thou wast almost choked therewith; this is to show thee, that the law, instead of cleansing the heart (by its working) from sin, doth revive, put strength into, and increase it in the soul, even as it doth discover and forbid it; for it doth not give power to subdue.[u]

u Rom. v. 20. vii. 7—11. 1 Cor. xv. 56.

is to bring sinners to Christ, to point him out as the one way to them, and to edify and build up saints *in him*. But there are many who profess to do this, but turn poor sinners out of the way, and point them to a righteousness of their own for justification in whole or in part. Of these the Spirit teaches us to beware: the former, he leads and directs souls to love and esteem highly for their labours and faith in the Lord, and zeal for his honour and glory, and for the salvation of souls. Take heed what you hear, Mark iv. 24.

Again, as thou sawest the damsel sprinkle the room with water, upon which it was cleansed with pleasure; this is to show thee, that when the gospel comes in the sweet and precious influences thereof to the heart, then, I say, even as thou sawest the damsel lay the dust by sprinkling the floor with water, so is sin vanquished and subdued, and the soul made clean, through the faith of it, and consequently fit for the King of glory to inhabit.*[v]

HE SHOWED HIM PASSION AND PATIENCE.

I saw moreover in my dream, that the Interpreter took him by the hand, and had him into a little room, where sat two little children, each one in his chair. The name of the eldest was *Passion*, and the name of the other *Patience*. Passion seemed to be much discontented, but Patience was very quiet. Then Christian asked, What is the reason of the discontent of Passion? The Interpreter answered, The governor of them would have him stay for his best things till the beginning of the next year; but he will have all now. But Patience is willing to wait.

PASSION WILL HAVE IT NOW.

PATIENCE IS FOR WAITING.

v John xiv. 21—23. xv. 3. Acts xv. 9. Rom. xvi. 25, 26. Eph. v. 26.

* Now judge by this, whether you are under the law, or the Gospel. Have you ever found in yourself what is here described? 1. Of the law, have you ever felt your lusts and corruptions irritated, and sin made to abound in you, as to your perception and feeling, by the commandment working in you all manner of concupiscence? for without the law, sin was dead, Rom. vii. 8. Has the application of the law to your conscience made sin to revive in you, so as that you died to all your former hopes of being justified by your obedience to the law? If not, you are yet dead in sin, and cleave to legal hopes and vain confidences. But if through the law you are become dead to the law, has the Gospel come to you with its reviving, comforting, sanctifying influence? Has it made Christ's blood and righteousness precious to your soul, and given you the victory of faith over the law, sin, and death. If so, go on your way rejoicing.

Then I saw that one came to Passion, and brought him a bag of treasure, and poured it down at his feet: the which he took up, and rejoiced therein, and withal laughed Patience to scorn. But I beheld but a while, and he had lavished all away, and had nothing left him but rags.

PASSION HATH HIS DESIRE, AND QUICKLY LAVISHES ALL AWAY.

CHR. Then said Christian to the Interpreter, Expound this matter more fully to me.

INTER. So he said, These two lads are figures, Passion of the men of this world, and Patience of the men of that which is to come: for, as here thou seest, Passion will have all now, this year, that is to say, in this world; so are the men of this world: they must have all their good things now; they cannot stay till the next year, that is, until the next world, for their portion of good. That proverb, "A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush," is of more authority with them, than are all the divine testimonies of the good of the world to come. But as thou sawest that he had quickly lavished all away, and had presently left him nothing but rags; so will it be with all such men at the end of this world.*

THE WORLDLY MAN FOR A BIRD IN THE HAND.

CHR. Then said Christian, Now I see that Patience has the best wisdom, and that upon many accounts. 1. Because he stays for the best things. 2. And also because he will have the glory of his, when the other has nothing but rags.

PATIENCE HAD THE BEST WISDOM.

INTER. Nay, you may add another, to wit, the glory

* Carnal men seek nothing more than the gratification of their senses: their end will be the loss of all things, and the destruction of their souls. But the just live by faith on Jesus, and in hope of joys to come: their end will be glorious; for they shall receive the end of their faith, the salvation of their souls, and the everlasting enjoyment of Christ in glory.

of the next world will never wear out; but these are suddenly gone. Therefore Passion had not so much reason to laugh at Patience, because he had his good things first, as Patience will have to laugh at Passion, because he had his best things last; for first must give place to last, because last must have his time to come: but last gives place to nothing, for there is not another to succeed. He, therefore, that hath his portion first, must needs have a time to spend it; but he that hath his portion last, must have it lastingly: therefore it is said of Dives, "In thy life-time thou receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things; but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented."[w]

THINGS THAT ARE FIRST MUST GIVE PLACE; BUT THINGS THAT ARE LAST ARE LASTING.

DIVES HAD HIS GOOD THINGS FIRST.

CHR. Then I perceive it is not best to covet things that are now, but to wait for things to come.

INTER. You say truth, for the things that are seen are temporal, but the things that are not seen are eternal.[x] But though this be so, yet since things present and our fleshly appetite are such near neighbours one to another; and again, because things to come and carnal sense are such strangers one to another; therefore it is, that the first of these so suddenly fall into amity, and that distance is so continued between the second.*

THE FIRST THINGS ARE BUT TEMPORAL.

Then I saw in my dream, that the Interpreter took Christian by the hand, and led him into a place where

w Luke xiv. 19—31. x 2 Cor. iv. 18.

* Here see the preciousness and glory of faith: it causeth the soul to make a proper estimate, and set a due value on things: it pierceth through the objects of time and sense, and fixes upon glory and eternity. This is the proper character of every heaven-born soul; the just shall live by faith, Heb. ii. 4. This is a life of heaven upon earth.

was a fire burning against a wall, and one standing by it, always casting much water upon it to quench it: yet did the fire burn higher and hotter.

Then said Christian, What means this?

The Interpreter answered, This fire is the work of grace that is wrought in the heart; he that casts water upon it, to extinguish and put it out, is the devil: but in that thou seest the fire, notwithstanding, burn higher and hotter, thou shalt also see the reason of that. So he had him about to the back side of the wall, where he saw a man with a vessel of oil in his hand, of the which he did also continually cast (but secretly) into the fire.*

Then said Christian, What means this?

The Interpreter answered, This is Christ, who continually, with the oil of his grace, maintains the work already begun in the heart; by the means of which, notwithstanding what the devil can do, the souls of his people prove gracious still.[y] And in that thou sawest, that the man stood behind the wall to maintain the fire; this is to teach thee, that it is hard for the tempted to see how this work of grace is maintained in the soul.†

* Some, having never been at the back side of the wall, to see how the work of grace is kept up in the soul by Christ, ascribe it to other causes, as man's faithfulness, &c. which their pride and folly devise. Hence they ignorantly assert, that a work of grace may come to nothing, and the subjects of Christ's grace may perish. But they do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of Christ's love and grace to sinners.

† What, then, has the sinner, who is the subject of grace, no hand in keeping up the work of grace in his heart? No. It is plain Mr. Bunyan was no Arminian; he did not ascribe any of that glory to the work and power of the creature, which is due solely to the Lord, who is the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last; the beginner, carrier on, and finisher of his work in sinners' hearts; and never can his work be extinguished there, till Satan's water is more powerful to

I saw also that the Interpreter took him again by the hand, and led him into a pleasant place, where was built a stately palace, beautiful to behold, at the sight of which Christian was greatly delighted; he saw also upon the top thereof certain persons walking, who were clothed all in gold.

Then said Christian, May we go in thither?

Then the Interpreter took him, and led him up toward the door of the palace; and behold, at the door stood a great company of men, as desirous to go in, but durst not. There also sat a man at a little distance from the door, at a table-side, with a book and his ink-horn before him, to take the names of them that should enter therein; he saw also that in the door-way stood many men in armour to keep it, being resolved to do to the men that would enter what hurt and mischief they could. Now was Christian somewhat in amaze. At last, when every man started back for fear of the armed men, Christian saw a man of a very stout countenance THE VALIANT MAN. come up to the man that sat there to write, saying, Set down my name, sir; the which when he had done, he saw the man draw his sword, and put a helmet upon his head, and rush toward the door upon the armed men, who laid upon him with deadly force; but the man, not at all discouraged, fell to cutting and hacking most fiercely. So after he had received and given many wounds* to those that attempted to keep him out, he cut his way through them all, and pressed forward into

quench, than Christ's oil and grace are to keep the fire burning. Poor sinner, believe this, and love, praise, and rejoice in thy Lord; for he loves with an everlasting love; he saves with an everlasting salvation.

* We must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God, Acts xiv. 22.

the palace, at which there was a pleasant voice heard from those that were within, even of those that walked upon the top of the palace, saying,

> "Come in, come in;
> Eternal glory thou shalt win."

So he went in, and was clothed with such garments as they. Then Christian smiled, and said, I think verily I know the meaning of this.*

Now, said Christian, let me go hence. Nay, stay, said the Interpreter, till I have showed thee a little more, and after that thou shalt go on thy way. So he took him by the hand again, and led him into a very dark room, where there sat a man in an iron cage.

DESPAIR LIKE AN IRON CAGE.

Now the man, to look on, seemed very sad: he sat with his eyes looking down to the ground, his hands folded together; and he sighed as if he would break his heart. Then said Christian, What means this? At which the Interpreter bid him talk with the man.†

Then said Christian to the man, What art thou? The man answered, I am what I was not once?‡

* Such is the spirit and disposition of a soul who is determined to win Christ, and enjoy the kingdom of glory. In spite of all opposition, he resolutely forces his way, and presses towards the mark, for the prize of his high calling of God in Christ Jesus, Phil. iii. 14. He is not content with a few lazy wishes, or languid hopes; for the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force, Matt. xi. 12.

† The Holy Spirit would have us take warning by the sad examples of others. Hence he sets before us, in the Scripture, the dreadful things which have befallen professors, that we may see our danger, be humble and watchful, and pray to the Lord to keep us from falling away.

‡ Most dreadful change! Think of it with trembling. Thou standest by faith; be not high-minded, but fear.

CHR. What wast thou once?

MAN. The man said, I was once a fair and flourishing professor, both in mine own eyes, and also in the eyes of others: I once was, as I thought, fair for the celestial city, and had then even joy at the thoughts that I should get thither.[z]*

CHR. Well, but what art thou now?

MAN. I am now a man of despair, and am shut up in it, as in this iron cage. I cannot get out; O now I cannot!†

CHR. But how camest thou into this condition?

MAN. I left off to watch and be sober; I laid the reins upon the neck of my lusts; I sinned against the light of the word, and the goodness of God; I have grieved the Spirit, and he is gone; I tempted the devil, and he is come to me; I have provoked God to anger, and he has left me: I have so hardened my heart, that I cannot repent.‡

Then said Christian to the Interpreter, But is there no hope for such a man as this? Ask him, said the Interpreter.

CHR. Then said Christian, Is there no hope, but you must be kept in the iron cage of despair?

MAN. No, none at all.

CHR. Why, the Son of the Blessed is very pitiful.

z Luke viii. 13.

* Soaring professors, beware. See how far this man went; see what he thought of himself; see what others thought of him; yea, he felt great joy in himself at the thoughts of getting to heaven; but yet despair seized on him. "Let us watch and be sober," 1 Thess. v. 6.

† A more dreadful state on this side hell cannot be.

‡ An awful warning to professors. O take heed of trifling with the God of truth, and the truths of God: he is a jealous God; jealous of his honour and glory: yea, our God is a consuming fire, Heb. xii. 29.

MAN. I have crucified him to myself afresh; I have despised his person, I have despised his righteousness, I have counted his blood an unholy thing, I have done despite to the Spirit of grace:[a] therefore I have shut myself out of all the promises, and there now remains to me nothing but threatenings, dreadful threatenings, faithful threatenings, of certain judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour me as an adversary.*

CHR. For what did you bring yourself into this condition?

MAN. For the lusts, pleasures, and profits of this world; in the enjoyment of which I did then promise myself much delight: but now every one of those things also bite me, and gnaw me like a burning worm.

CHR. But canst thou not now repent and turn?

MAN. God hath denied me repentance. His word gives me no encouragement to believe; yea, himself hath shut me up in this iron cage: nor can all the men in the world let me out. O eternity! eternity! how shall I grapple with the misery that I must meet with in eternity!

INTER. Then said the Interpreter to Christian, Let this man's misery be remembered by thee, and be an everlasting caution to thee.

CHR. Well, said Christian, this is fearful! God help me to watch and be sober, and to pray that I may shun

a Luke xix. 14. Heb. vi. 4—6. x. 28, 29.

* It is exceeding difficult to draw the line here, so as not to encourage in sin, or not discourage broken-hearted sinners from entertaining hope in Christ. Many have written the same bitter things against themselves as here, but to whom they have in no wise belonged. A sight of sin, a sense of sin, and a sorrow for sin, with a desire to be saved by Jesus from all sin, as well as from wrath, do really bespeak the workings of the grace of Christ in the heart.

the cause of this man's misery.* Sir, is it not time for me to go on my way now?†

INTER. Tarry till I shall show thee one thing more, and then thou shalt go on thy way.

So he took Christian by the hand again, and led him into a chamber, where there was one rising out of bed; and as he put on his raiment, he shook and trembled. Then said Christian, Why doth this man thus tremble? The Interpreter then bid him tell to Christian the reason of his so doing.

So he began, and said, This night, as I was in my sleep, I dreamed, and behold the heavens grew exceeding black: also it thundered and lightened in most fearful wise, that it put me into an agony. So I looked up in my dream, and saw the clouds rack at an unusual rate; upon which I heard a great sound of a trumpet, and saw also a man sitting upon a cloud, attended with the thousands of heaven: they were all in flaming fire, also the heavens were on a burning flame. I heard then a voice, saying, "Arise, ye dead, and come to judgment;" and with that the rocks rent, the graves opened, and the dead that were therein came forth.[b] Some of them

b John v. 28, 29. 1 Cor. xv. 51—58. 2 Thess. i. 7—10. Jude 14, 15. Rev. xx. 11—15.

* Reader, thou hast constant need to put up this prayer for thyself. Thou art in a body of sin, hast a most deceitful and desperately wicked heart, and art exposed to the world's snares and Satan's devices.

† Why in such haste, Christian? Poor dear soul, he had yet got the burden of his sins upon his back; this urged his speed. He wanted to get to the cross, to be delivered of his burden: but the Spirit had many things to show him first, which would be profitable to him hereafter. "He who believeth shall not make haste," Isa. xxviii. 16. God has a set time to comfort his people with a sense of his pardoning love: till then, the Spirit leads us on step by step; shows us one thing after another, till the fulness of that time comes. Wait in God's way, for God's comforts. "The just shall live by faith," Heb. ii. 4.

were exceeding glad, and looked upward; and some sought to hide themselves under the mountains:[c] then I saw the man that sat upon the cloud open the book, and bid the world draw near. Yet there was, by reason of a fierce flame that issued out and came from before him, a convenient distance betwixt him and them, as betwixt the judge and the prisoners at the bar.[d] I heard it also proclaimed to them that attended on the man that sat on the cloud, "Gather together the tares, the chaff, and stubble, and cast them into the burning lake;" and with that the bottomless pit opened, just whereabout I stood, out of the mouth of which there came, in an abundant manner, smoke and coals of fire, with hideous noises. It was also said to the same persons, "Gather my wheat into the garner."[e] And with that I saw many catched up and carried away into the clouds,[f] but I was left behind. I also sought to hide myself, but I could not, for the Man that sat upon the cloud still kept his eye upon me: my sins also came into my mind, and my conscience did accuse me on every side.[g] Upon this I awakened from my sleep.

CHR. But what was it that made you so afraid of this sight?

MAN. Why, I thought that the day of judgment was come, and that I was not ready for it: but this frighted me most, that the angels gathered up several, and left me behind; also the pit of hell opened her mouth just where I stood: my conscience too afflicted me;* and,

c Psalm l. 1—3, 22. Isa. xxvi. 20,21. Mic. vii. 16, 17. d Dan. vii. 9, 10. Mal. iii. 2, 3.
e Mal. iv. 2. Matt. iii. 12. xviii. 30. Luke iii. 17. f 1 Thess. iv. 13—18.
g Rom. ii. 14, 15.

* Natural men's consciences are often alarmed and terrified, when there are no spiritual convictions; but such fears and terrors soon wear away, and do not issue in real conversion.

as I thought, the Judge had always his eye upon me, showing indignation in his countenance.

Then said the Interpreter to Christian, Hast thou considered all these things?

CHR. Yes, and they put me in hope and fear.*

INTER. Well, keep all things so in thy mind, that they may be as a goad in thy sides, to prick thee forward in the way thou must go. Then Christian began to gird up his loins, and to address himself to his journey. Then said the Interpreter, The Comforter be always with thee, good Christian, to guide thee in the way that leads to the city. So Christian went on his way, saying,

> "Here I have seen things rare and profitable,
> Things pleasant, dreadful, things to make me stable
> In what I have begun to take in hand;
> Then let me think on them, and understand
> Wherefore they showed me were, and let me be
> Thankful, O good Interpreter, to thee."

Now I saw in my dream, that the highway up which Christian was to go, was fenced on either side with a wall, and that wall was called Salvation.[h] Up this way, therefore, did burdened Christian run, but not without great difficulty, because of the load on his back.†

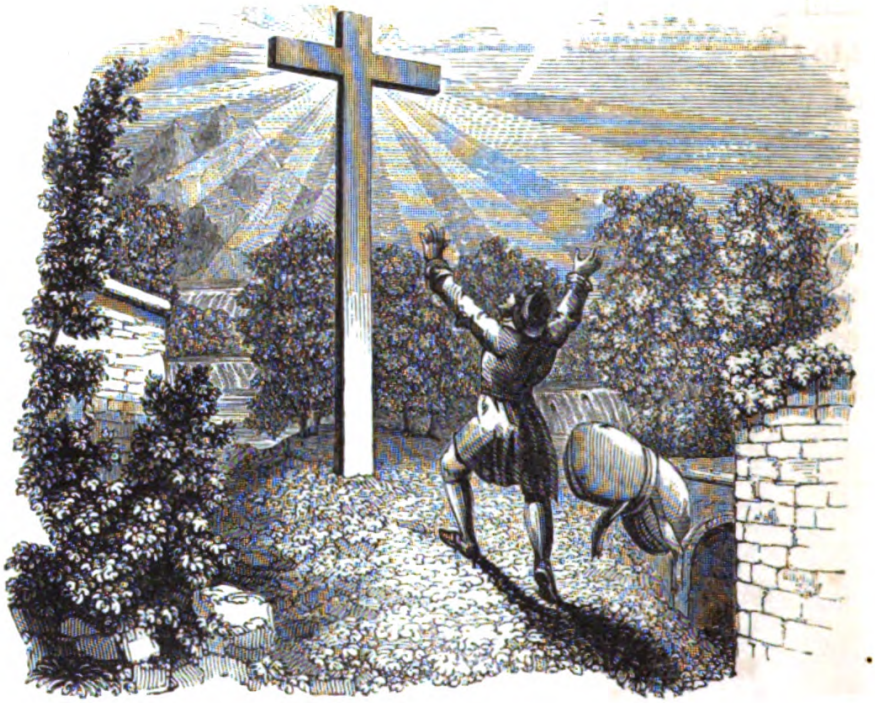
He ran thus till he came at a place somewhat ascending; and upon that place stood a Cross, and a little below, in the bottom, a sepulchre. So I saw in my dream, that just as Christian came up with the Cross,

h Isaiah xxvi. 1.

* Where there is a Gospel hope, there will be a godly fear; both are necessary; both are the graces of the Holy Spirit. Fear makes us cautious: hope animates us.

† Our up-hill difficulties are the way to the greatest comforts. Burdens are most felt when comforts are near at hand.

his burden loosed from off his shoulders, and fell from off his back, and began to tumble, and so continued to do, till it came to the mouth of the sepulchre, where it fell in, and I saw it no more.*



WHEN GOD RELEASES US OF OUR GUILT AND BURDEN WE ARE AS THOSE THAT LEAP FOR JOY.

Then was Christian glad and lightsome, and said with a merry heart, He hath given me rest by his sorrow, and life by his death. Then he stood still a while, to look and

* Christian had faith; he believed that there was redemption in the blood of Christ, even the forgiveness of sins, before he came up to the cross; but now he finds and feels the comfort of it. He has now the joy of faith; the guilt of his sins is taken off his conscience, and he is filled with all joy and peace in believing. You who believe Christ to be the only Saviour, go on believing, till you experience the comfort of knowing that he is *your* Saviour, and feel pardon in his blood; for, when God releases us of our guilt and burden, we are as those that leap for joy: but you cannot have this till the hour fixed—when you come to the cross, and rest all your hopes upon it.

wonder, for it was very surprising to him that the sight of the cross should thus ease him of his burden. He looked, therefore, and looked again, even till the springs that were in his head sent the waters down his cheeks.[i] Now as he stood looking and weeping, behold, three shining ones came to him, and saluted him with, "Peace be to thee:" so the first said to him, "Thy sins be forgiven thee;"[k] the second stripped him of his rags, and clothed him with change of raiment;* the third also set a mark on his forehead, and gave him a roll with a seal upon it,[l] which he bid him look on as he ran, and that he should give it in at the celestial gate: so they went their way. Then Christian gave three leaps for joy, and went on singing,

A CHRISTIAN CAN SING, THOUGH ALONE, WHEN GOD DOTH GIVE HIM JOY IN HIS HEART.

"Thus far did I come loaden with my sin,
Nor could aught ease the grief that I was in,
Till I came hither! What a place is this!
Must here be the beginning of my bliss?
Must here the burden fall from off my back?
Must here the strings that bound it to me crack?
Blest cross! blest sepulchre! blest rather be
The Man that there was put to shame for me!"

I saw then in my dream, that he went on thus, even until he came at a bottom, where he saw, a little out of the way, three men fast asleep, with fetters upon their heels. The name of the one was Simple, another Sloth, and the third Presumption.†

SIMPLE, SLOTH, AND PRESUMPTION.

i Zech. xii. 10. k Mark ii. 5. l Zech. iii. 4. Eph. i. 13.

* Here is the love and grace of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost. Pray mind; when God pardons the sinner, through the blood of Christ, he also clothes him with the righteousness of Christ. Those who deny the imputation of Christ's righteousness, never saw the purity of the law, their own nakedness, nor abhorred the filthy rags of their own righteousness.

† The Lord shows us the misery and danger of other professors, to give us warning by the way, and to stir us up to watchfulness.

Christian then seeing them lie in this case, went to them, if peradventure he might awake them, and cried, You are like them that sleep on the top of a mast,[m] for the Dead Sea is under you, a gulf that hath no bottom: awake, therefore, and come away; be willing also, and I will help you off with your irons. He also told them, If he that goeth about like a roaring lion comes by, you will certainly become a prey to his teeth.[n] With that they looked upon him, and began to reply in this sort:*

THERE IS NO PERSUASION WILL DO, IF GOD OPENETH NOT THE EYES.

Simple said, I see no danger. Sloth said, Yet a little more sleep. And Presumption said, Every fat must stand upon its own bottom. And so they laid down to sleep again, and Christian went on his way.

Yet he was troubled to think, that men in that danger should so little esteem the kindness of him that so freely offered to help them, both by awakening of them, counselling of them, and proffering to help them off with their irons.† And as he was troubled thereabout, he espied two men come tumbling over the wall, on the left hand of the narrow way; and they made up apace to him. The name of the one was Formalist, and the name of the other Hypocrisy. So, as I said, they drew up unto him, who thus entered with them into discourse.

CHRISTIAN TALKS WITH THEM.

CHR. Gentlemen, whence came you, and whither do you go?

m Prov. xxiii. 34. n 1 Pet. v. 8.

* There is no persuasion will do, if God openeth not the eyes. Remember, all is of grace. It is God's grace that quickens, enlightens, converts, justifies, preserves, sanctifies, and glorifies. Well may pilgrims sing every step,

O to grace what mighty debtors,
Daily, hourly, Lord, are we!

† A christian spirit feels for others' dangers, and aims and strives to be profitable to them.

FORM. and HYP. We were born in the land of Vainglory, and are going for praise to Mount Zion.

CHR. Why came you not in at the gate which standeth at the beginning of the way? Know ye not that it is written, that "he that cometh not in by the door, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber."[o]

FORM. and HYP. They said, that to go to the gate for entrance was by all their countrymen counted too far about; and that, therefore, their usual way was to make a short cut of it, and to climb over the wall, as they had done.

CHR. But will it not be counted a trespass against the Lord of the city whither we are bound, thus to violate his revealed will?

FORM. and HYP. They told him, That as for that, he needed not to trouble his head thereabout; for what they did they had custom for, and could produce, if need were, testimony that would witness it, for more than a thousand years.

CHR. But, said Christian, will you stand a trial at law?

FORM. and HYP. They told him, that custom, it being of so long standing as above a thousand years, would doubtless now be admitted as a thing legal by an impartial judge. And besides, say they, if we get into the way, what matter is it which way we get in? If we are in, we are in: thou art but in the way, who, as we perceive, came in at the gate; and we also are in the way, that came tumbling over the wall: wherein now is thy condition better than ours?

THEY THAT COME INTO THE WAY, BUT NOT BY THE DOOR, THINK THAT THEY CAN SAY SOMETHING IN VINDICATION OF THEIR OWN PRACTICE.

o John x. 1.

CHR. I walk by the rule of my Master; you walk by the rude working of your fancies. You are counted thieves already by the Lord of the way; therefore I doubt you will not be found true men at the end of the way. You come in by yourselves without his direction, and shall go out by yourselves, without his mercy.*

To this they made him but little answer; only they bid him look to himself. Then I saw that they went on, every man in his way, without much conference one with another, save that these two men told Christian, that, as to laws and ordinances, they doubted not but that they should as conscientiously do them as he. Therefore, said they, we see not wherein thou differest from us, but by the coat that is on thy back, which was, as we trow, given thee by some of thy neighbours, to hide the shame of thy nakedness.†

CHR. By laws and ordinances you will not be saved,[p] since you came not in by the door. And as for this coat that is on my back, it was given me by the Lord of the place whither I go; and that, as you say, to cover my nakedness with. And I take it as a token of kindness to me, for I had nothing but rags before. And, besides, thus I comfort myself as I go. Surely, think I, when I come to the gate of the city, the Lord thereof will know

CHRISTIAN HAS GOT HIS LORD'S COAT ON HIS BACK, AND IS COMFORTED THEREWITH.

p Gal. ii. 16.

* Here is the essential difference between a real Christian and formal hypocrites; he takes the word of God for the warrant of his faith, and the rule of his conduct, which they reject; for they are left under the power of their natural will and carnal reason, and hence they brave it out for a season with vain hopes and false confidence.

† The glorious robe of Christ's righteousness, which is imputed to and put upon every believer, is sneered at and held in contempt by formal professors, who see not their nakedness and want of covering. But humbled souls confess their want of it, and praise Christ for it.

me for good, since I have his coat on my back; a coat that he gave me freely in the day that he stripped me of my rags. I have, moreover, a mark in my forehead, of which perhaps you have taken no notice, which one of my Lord's most intimate associates fixed there in the day that my burden fell off my shoulders. I will tell you, moreover, that I had then given me a roll sealed, to comfort me, by reading as I go on the way: I was also bid to give it in at the celestial gate, in token of my certain going in after it; all which things I doubt you want, and want them because you came not in at the gate.*

HE IS COMFORTED ALSO WITH HIS MARK AND HIS ROLL.

To these things they gave him no answer, only they looked upon each other, and laughed.† Then I saw that they went all on, save that Christian kept before, who had no more talk but with himself, and that sometimes sighingly,‡ and sometimes comfortably: also he would be often reading in the roll§ that one of the shining ones gave him, by which he was refreshed.

CHRISTIAN HAS TALK WITH HIMSELF.

I beheld then, that they all went on till they came to the foot of the hill Difficulty,‖

HE COMES TO THE HILL DIFFICULTY.

* Where there is the witness of the Spirit, and the seal of the Spirit, that soul will also glory in the righteousness of Christ; for this is the joy of faith, that Christ is the Lord our righteousness, Jer. xxiii. 6. In vain do men talk of inward comforts, who reject the clothing of Christ's righteousness.

† Vain-glorious fools laugh at Christ's humble pilgrims.

‡ What! sighing already, and just pardoned? One should expect that he was all joy, nothing but joy. Oh, these are sighs of love, which strangers to spiritual joy know nothing of.

§ This means the assurance which he had from the Spirit, of the free love, free grace, free pardon, free justification, of Christ to his soul.

‖ He comes to the hill Difficulty; a way unpleasing to flesh and blood, which proves and tries the sincerity of our faith, and the earnestness of our souls, in our pilgrimage.

at the bottom of which was a spring. There were also in the same place two other ways, besides that which came straight from the gate: one turned to the left hand, and the other to the right, at the bottom of the hill; but the narrow way lay right up the hill, and the name of the going up the side of the hill is called Difficulty. Christian now went to the spring, and drank thereof to refresh himself,[q] and then he began to go up the hill, saying,

"The hill, though high, I covet to ascend;
The difficulty will not me offend;
For I perceive the way to life lies here:
Come, pluck up heart, let's neither faint nor fear.
Better, though difficult, the right way to go,
Than wrong, though easy, where the end is woe."*

The other two also came to the foot of the hill, but when they saw that the hill was steep and high, and that there were two other ways to go; and supposing also that these two ways might meet again with that up which Christian went, on the other side of the hill; therefore they were resolved to go in those ways. Now the name of one of those ways was Danger, and the name of the other Destruction. So the one took the way which is called Danger, which led him into a great wood; and the other took directly up the way to Destruction, which led him into a wide field, full of dark mountains, where he stumbled and fell, and rose no more.†

THE DANGER OF TURNING OUT OF THE WAY.

q Isaiah xlix. 10—12.

* Depend on it, pilgrim, some great blessing is at hand, when thou hast some great difficulty to grapple with and to overcome.

† Formalists and hypocrites, as they come easily into the way of profession, without any convictions of sin to cause them to fly to Christ the wicket-gate, so they find the easiest path to flesh and blood, and perish in the end.

I looked then after Christian, to see him go up the hill, where I perceived he fell from running to going, and from going to clambering upon his hands and his knees, because of the steepness of the place. Now about the midway to the top of the hill was a pleasant arbour, made by the Lord of the hill, for the refreshment of weary travellers. Thither, therefore, Christian got, where also he sat down to rest him: then he pulled his roll out of his bosom, and read therein to his comfort; he also now began afresh to take a review of the coat or garment that was given to him as he stood by the cross. Thus pleasing himself a while, he at last fell into a slumber, and thence into a fast sleep, which detained him in that place until it was almost night; and in his sleep his roll fell out of his hand.* Now, as he was sleeping, there came one to him, and awaked him, saying, "Go to the ant, thou sluggard, consider her ways, and be wise."[r] And with that, Christian suddenly started up, and sped him on his way, and went apace till he came to the top of the hill.†

A WARD OF GRACE.

HE THAT SLEEPS IS A LOSER.

Now when he was got up to the top of the hill, there came two men running amain; the name of the one

r Prov. vi. 6.

* Happy for Christian that he did not fall into the dream of his own *sinless perfection,* so as to take up with a fool's paradise; nor get into antinomian notions, so as to sleep in a false security without his roll. The best of blessings, even spiritual comforts from the God of grace, are, through the infection of our nature, liable to be abused, so as to cause us to sleep when we should be active and diligent in running the heavenly race, looking unto Jesus.

† The Lord loves his people too well to let them sleep the sleep of death; though he may suffer them to sleep to the loss of their comfort: this is great grief and distress to their souls.

CHRISTIAN MEETS WITH MISTRUST AND TIMOROUS.

was Timorous,* and of the other Mistrust: to whom Christian said, Sirs, what's the matter? you run the wrong way. Timorous answered, That they were going to the city of Zion, and had got up that difficult place: but, said he, the farther we go, the more danger we meet with, wherefore we turned, and are going back again.

Yes, said Mistrust, for just before us lie a couple of lions in the way, whether sleeping or waking we know not; and we could not think, if we came within reach, but they would presently pull us in pieces.

CHR. Then said Christian, You make me afraid; but whither shall I fly to be safe? If I go back to mine own country, that is prepared for fire and brimstone, and I shall certainly perish there; if I can get to the celestial city, I am sure to be in safety there:† I must venture. To go back is nothing but death; to go forward is fear of death, and life everlasting beyond it: I will yet go forward. So Mistrust and Timorous ran down the hill, and Christian went on his way. But thinking again of what he had heard from the men, he felt in his bosom for his roll, that he

CHRISTIAN SHAKES OFF FEAR.

* Timorous and Mistrust are great enemies to the Christian's faith, and bring up an evil report of his way. Listen not to them, but look to God's truth and faithfulness: rely on his precious promises, and have your feet shod with the gospel of peace. Who or what shall harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

† Christian shakes off fear, by sound scriptural reasoning; even the reasoning of faith, against the fear of the flesh, and mistrust or unbelief. We have always a sure word of prophecy, whereunto we shall do well to take heed. When dangers beset, and fears assault, remember whose ye are, and whom ye serve: look to the way you are in, and to the end of your faith, even the salvation of your soul. Study the word of God, and obey it.

might read therein and be comforted: but he felt, and found it not. Then was Christian in great distress, and knew not what to do; for he wanted that which used to relieve him, and that which should have been his pass into the celestial city. Here, therefore, he began to be much perplexed,* and knew not what to do. At last he bethought himself that he had slept in the arbour that is on the side of the hill; and, falling down upon his knees, he asked God forgiveness for that foolish fact, and then went back to look for his roll. But all the way he went back, who can sufficiently set forth the sorrow of Christian's heart? Sometimes he sighed, sometimes he wept, and oftentimes he chid himself for being so foolish to fall asleep in that place, which was erected only for a little refreshment for his weariness. Thus, therefore, he went back, carefully looking on this side and on that, all the way as he went, if happily he might find his roll, that had been his comfort so many times in his journey. He went thus till he came again within sight of the arbour where he sat and slept; but that sight renewed his sorrow the more, by bringing again, even afresh, his evil of sleeping into his mind.† Thus, therefore,

CHRISTIAN MISSES HIS ROLL, WHEREIN HE USED TO BE COMFORTED.

HE IS PERPLEXED FOR HIS ROLL.

CHRISTIAN BEWAILS HIS FOOLISH SLEEPING.

* He is perplexed for his roll: this is right. If we suffer spiritual loss, and are easy and unconcerned about it, it is a sad sign that we indulge carnal security and vain confidence. Many go on so, till they sink into a downright antinomian spirit. O beware of this; for many, who abhor the name, yet have drunk into the spirit of it, and hence live and walk without spiritual communion with God the Father and his Son Jesus Christ, and rest contented without the witness of the Spirit with their spirits, that they are the children of God.

† Look to your spirits, Christian. See if you have not after-sorrow for former indulgences. But it is far better to be crying, "O wretched man that I am," than to be alive to carnal confidence, and dead to the desire of spiritual comforts.

he now went on, bewailing his sinful sleep, saying, O wretched man that I am! that I should sleep in the day-time![s] that I should sleep in the midst of difficulty! that I should so indulge the flesh, as to use that rest for ease to my flesh, which the Lord of the hill hath erected only for the relief of the spirits of pilgrims! How many steps have I taken in vain! Thus it happened to Israel; for their sin they were sent back again by the way of the Red Sea; and I am made to tread those steps with sorrow, which I might have trod with delight, had it not been for this sinful sleep. How far might I have been on my way by this time! I am made to tread those steps thrice over, which I needed not to have trod but once: yea, now also I am like to be benighted, for the day is almost spent. O that I had not slept!

CHRISTIAN FINDETH HIS ROLL WHERE HE LOST IT.

Now by this time he was come to the arbour again, where for a while he sat down and wept; but at last, (as Providence would have it,) looking sorrowfully down under the settle, there he espied his roll, the which he with trembling and haste catched up and put into his bosom. But who can tell how joyful this man was when he had gotten his roll again! For this roll was the assurance of his life, and acceptance at the desired haven. Therefore he laid it up in his bosom, gave thanks to God for directing his eye to the place where it lay, and with joy and tears betook himself again to his journey.* But, O how nimbly did he go up the rest of the hill! Yet before

s 1 Thess. v. 7, 8. Rev. ii. 4, 5.

* This means a fresh sense of the love and power of God, and joy in the Holy Ghost, through faith in Christ Jesus. Mind with what alacrity and speed Pilgrim now pursues his journey. Oh, this rich blessing of assurance is not enough prized, and is too little sought for by professors! But how can any be content without it? It is impossible

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by J. C. Bentley.

he got up, the sun went down upon Christian; and this made him again recall the vanity of his sleeping to his remembrance; and thus he again began to condole with himself: O thou sinful sleep! how for thy sake am I like to be benighted in my journey! I must walk without the sun, darkness must cover the path of my feet, and I must hear the noise of the doleful creatures, because of my sinful sleep! Now also he remembered the story that Mistrust and Timorous told him of, how they were frighted with the sight of the lions. Then said Christian to himself again, These beasts range in the night for their prey; and if they should meet with me in the dark, how should I shift them? how should I escape being by them torn in pieces? Thus he went on his way. But while he was bewailing his unhappy miscarriage, he lift up his eyes, and behold there was a very stately palace before him, the name of which was Beautiful, and it stood by the highway-side.*

So I saw in my dream, that he made haste, and went forward, that if possible he might get lodging there. Now before he had gone far, he entered into a very narrow passage, which was about a furlong off of the Porter's lodge; and looking very narrowly before him as he went, he espied two lions in the way.† Now,

for them to be happy, and to rejoice in the Lord, without a real scriptural assurance of his love and favour. It is this which adds wings to faith, liveliness to hope, joy to love, and cheerfulness to obedience. Plead the precious promises: be not content without the enjoyment of the blessings contained in them. Says our Lord, "Ask and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full," John xvi. 24.

* This means a visible church of Christ, to which he might be joined, and enjoy the blessing and comfort of the communion of saints.

† The two lions may signify to us, the roaring of the devil and the world against us: but both are chained, they cannot go one link

thought he, I see the dangers that Mistrust and Timorous were driven back by. (The lions were chained, but he saw not the chains.) Then he was afraid, and thought also himself to go back after them, for he thought nothing but death was before him. But the Porter at the lodge, whose name is Watchful, perceiving that Christian made a halt as if he would go back, cried unto him, saying, Is thy strength so small?[t] Fear not the lions, for they are chained, and are placed there for trial of faith where it is; and for discovery of those that have none: keep in the midst of the path, and no hurt shall come unto thee.

Then I saw that he went on, trembling for fear of the lions; but taking good heed to the directions of the Porter, he heard them roar, but they did him no harm. Then he clapped his hands, and went on till he came and stood before the gate where the Porter was.* Then said Christian to the Porter, Sir, what house is this? and may I lodge here to-night? The Porter answered, This house was built by the Lord of the hill, and he built it for the relief and security of pilgrims. The Porter also asked whence he was, and whither he was going?

CHR. I am come from the city of Destruction, and am going to Mount Zion; but because the sun is now set, I desire, if I may, to lodge here to-night.

PORT. What is your name?

t Mark iv. 40.

beyond what our God permits. Sometimes we may not see the chain, and unscriptural fears may beset us. But this is the watch-word of our Lord, Fear not.

* A minister of Christ, one who is watchful for the good of souls. O how precious are they to pilgrims' hearts! See the sweet encouragement and blessed advice Pilgrim obtained from him.

CHR. My name is now Christian, but my name at the first was Graceless;* I came of the race of Japheth,[u] whom God will persuade to dwell in the tents of Shem.

PORT. But how doth it happen that you come so late? the sun is set.

CHR. I had been here sooner, but that, wretched man that I am! I slept in the arbour that stands on the hill-side!† Nay, I had, notwithstanding that, been here much sooner, but that in my sleep I lost my evidence, and came without it to the brow of the hill; and then feeling for it, and not finding it, I was forced with sorrow of heart to go back to the place where I slept my sleep; where I found it, and now I am come.‡

PORT. Well, I will call out one of the virgins of this place, who will, if she likes your talk, bring you in to the rest of the family, according to the rules of the house. So Watchful the Porter rang a bell, at the sound of which came out of the door of the house a grave and beautiful damsel, named Discretion,§ and asked why she was called?

The Porter answered, This man is on a journey from the city of Destruction to Mount Zion; but being weary

u Gen. ix. 27.

* O soul, did you ever know that this was your name? Hast thou tasted that the Lord is rich in grace to graceless sinners? Oh, then sing of free grace, and unmerited love, every step of thy pilgrimage.

† Look well to your roll. Beware of losing your assurance. See the evil of it; it keeps the soul back. Many have lost it, and have never found it till at the end of their life.

‡ None ought to be admitted into a church of Christ, but such as can give good evidence that they are the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus, and are sincere pilgrims in the way to the heavenly city.

§ Admitting members into churches, should be done with *discretion.*

and benighted, he asked me if he might lodge here to-night: so I told him I would call for thee, who, after discourse had with him, mayest do as seemeth thee good, even according to the law of the house.

Then she asked him whence he was, and whither he was going? and he told her. She asked him also, how he got into the way? and he told her. Then she asked him what he had seen and met with in the way? and he told her. And at last she asked his name? So he said, It is Christian; and I have so much the more a desire to lodge here to-night, because, by what I perceive, this place was built by the Lord of the hill for the relief and security of pilgrims. So she smiled, but the water stood in her eyes; and after a little pause she said, I will call forth two or three more of the family. So she ran to the door, and called out Prudence, Piety, and Charity, who, after a little more discourse with him, had him into the family; and many of them meeting him at the threshold of the house, said, Come in, thou blessed of the Lord; this house was built by the Lord of the hill, on purpose to entertain such pilgrims in. Then he bowed his head, and followed them into the house. So when he was come in and sat down, they gave him something to drink, and consented together that, until supper was ready, some of them should have some particular discourse with Christian, for the best improvement of time; and they appointed Piety, Prudence, and Charity to discourse with him: and thus they began.*

PIETY DISCOURSES WITH HIM.

PIETY. Come, good Christian, since we have been so loving to you to receive you into our house this night, let us, if perhaps we

* The blessedness of savoury, experimental conversation with fellow-pilgrims.

may better ourselves thereby, talk with you of all things that have happened to you in your pilgrimage.

CHR. With a very good will; and I am glad that you are so well disposed.

PIETY. What moved you at first to betake yourself to a pilgrim's life?

HOW CHRISTIAN WAS DRIVEN OUT OF HIS OWN COUNTRY.

CHR. I was driven out of my native country by a dreadful sound that was in mine ears; to wit, that unavoidable destruction did attend me, if I abode in that place where I was.

PIETY. But how did it happen that you came out of your country this way?

HOW HE GOT INTO THE WAY TO ZION.

CHR. It was as God would have it; for when I was under the fears of destruction, I did not know whither to go; but by chance there came a man, even to me, as I was trembling and weeping, whose name is Evangelist, and he directed me to the Wicket-gate, which else I should never have found, and so set me into the way that hath led me directly to this house.

PIETY. But did you not come by the house of the Interpreter?

A REHEARSAL OF WHAT HE SAW IN THE WAY.

CHR. Yes, and did see such things there, the remembrance of which will stick by me as long as I live, especially three things; to wit, how Christ, in despite of Satan, maintains his work of grace in the heart; how the man had sinned himself quite out of hopes of God's mercy, and also the dream of him that thought in his sleep the day of judgment was come.*

PIETY. Why, did you hear him tell his dream?

* Hope and fear should accompany us every step of our journey. Without true piety there can be no real Christianity. The Lord shows us many things in our way concerning the cases of others, to

CHR. Yes, and a dreadful one it was, I thought; it made my heart ache as he was telling of it, but yet I am glad I heard it.

PIETY. Was this all you saw at the house of the Interpreter?

CHR. No; he took me, and had me where he showed me a stately palace, and how the people were clad in gold that were in it; and how there came a venturous man, and cut his way through the armed men that stood in the door to keep him out; and how he was bid to come in, and win eternal glory. Methought those things did ravish my heart. I would have stayed at that good man's house a twelvemonth, but that I knew I had farther to go.

PIETY. And what saw you else in the way?

CHR. Saw? Why, I went but a little farther, and I saw one, as I thought in my mind, hang bleeding upon a tree; and the very sight of him made my burden fall off my back; for I groaned under a very heavy burden, but then it fell down from off me. It was a strange thing to me, for I never saw such a thing before: yea, and while I stood looking up, (for then I could not forbear looking,) three shining ones came to me. One of them testified that my sins were forgiven me; another stripped me of my rags, and gave me this broidered coat which you see; and the third set the mark which you see in my forehead, and gave me this sealed roll, (and with that he plucked it out of his bosom.)*

make us fear falling away; while he displays the glory of his grace in keeping his saints, to animate our hope on his power, and trust in his grace. Look unto Jesus.

* A blessed scripture-experience of what the Lord had done for his soul: quite necessary for every one, before admission into a church of Christ. For want of this, many who are joined, prove of

PIETY. But you saw more than this, did you not?

CHR. The things that I have told you were the best; yet some other matters I saw, as, namely, I saw three men, Simple, Sloth, and Presumption, lie asleep, a little out of the way as I came, with irons upon their heels; but do you think I could awake them? I also saw Formality and Hypocrisy come tumbling over the wall, to go, as they pretended, to Zion; but they were quickly lost, even as I myself did tell them, but they would not believe. But, above all, I found it hard work to get up this hill, and as hard to come by the lions' mouths; and truly, if it had not been for the good man the Porter, that stands at the gate, I do not know but that, after all, I might have gone back again: but I thank God I am here, and I thank you for receiving of me.

Then Prudence thought good to ask him a few questions, and desired his answer to them.

PRUDENCE DISCOURSES WITH HIM.

PRU. Do you not think sometimes of the country from whence you came?

CHRISTIAN'S THOUGHTS OF HIS NATIVE COUNTRY.

CHR. Yes, but with much shame and detestation; truly, if I had been mindful of that country from whence I came out, I might have had opportunity to have returned; but now I desire a better country, that is an heavenly.[v]

PRU. Do you not yet bear away with you some of the things that then you were conversant withal?*

v Heb. xi. 15, 16.

no profit to other souls, and get no good to their own. A mere profession of Christ, without an experience of his love, grace, and peace being sealed upon the heart by the Spirit the Comforter, is nothing but empty speculation.

* Prudence must be joined to piety. Christian prudence should be visible in every step of the Christian; for, says Solomon, "I wisdom dwell with prudence," Prov. viii. 12, and "the wisdom of the prudent is to understand his way," xiv. 8. His path is peace, and his end salvation.

CHR. Yes, but greatly against my will; especially my inward and carnal cogitations, with which all my countrymen, as well as myself, were delighted; but now all those things are my grief; and might I but choose mine own things, I would choose never to think of those things more; but when I would be a doing of that which is best, that which is worst is with me.[w]

CHRISTIAN DISTASTED WITH CARNAL COGITATIONS.

CHRISTIAN'S CHOICE.

PRU. Do you not find sometimes as if those things were vanquished, which at other times are your perplexity?

CHR. Yes, but that is but seldom; but they are to me golden hours in which such things happen to me.

CHRISTIAN'S GOLDEN HOURS.

PRU. Can you remember by what means you find your annoyances at times as if they were vanquished?

CHR. Yes: when I think what I saw at the cross, that will do it; and when I look upon my broidered coat, that will do it; and when I look into the roll that I carry in my bosom, that will do it; and when my thoughts wax warm about whither I am going, that will do it.*

HOW CHRISTIAN GETS POWER AGAINST HIS CORRUPTIONS.

PRU. And what is it that makes you so desirous to go to Mount Zion?

CHR. Why, there I hope to see him alive that did hang dead on the cross; and there I hope to be rid of all those things that to this day are in me an annoyance to me: there they say

WHY CHRISTIAN WOULD BE AT MOUNT ZION.

w Rom. vii. 21.

* Mind this. By believing his pardon by the blood—his justification by the righteousness of Christ—the free, everlasting love of God to him, by the witness of his Spirit—and the glory of heaven to which he is going—are what strengthen the Christian's heart against all his lusts and corruptions.

there is no death,[x] and there I shall dwell with such company as I like best. For, to tell you truth, I love him, because I was by him eased of my burden; and I am weary of my inward sickness. I would fain be where I shall die no more, and with the company that shall continually cry, Holy, holy, holy.*

CHARITY DISCOURSES WITH HIM.

Then said Charity to Christian, Have you a family? are you a married man?

CHR. I have a wife and four small children?

CHA. And why did not you bring them along with you?

CHRISTIAN'S LOVE TO HIS WIFE AND CHILDREN.

CHR. Then Christian wept, and said, Oh! how willingly would I have done it, but they were all of them utterly averse to my going on pilgrimage.†

CHA. But you should have talked to them, and have endeavoured to have shown them the danger of staying behind.

CHR. So I did; and told them also what God had shown to me of the destruction of our city; but I seemed to them as one that mocked, and they believed me not.[y]

CHA. And did you pray to God that he would bless your counsel to them?

CHR. Yes, and that with much affection; for you

x Isa. xxv. 8. Rev. xxi. 4. y Gen. xix. 14.

* A sight of Christ by faith, begets longing of soul to see him in glory. A sense of his pardoning love makes us long to be with him; a desire of being perfectly freed from the very being of sin, ever accompanies a true and lively faith in him, and manifests that we possess a most *holy* faith, Jude 20.

† So the spirit of a pilgrim manifests itself in love to those of his own house, by earnestly wishing, striving, and praying, if by any means he can prevail on them to flee from destruction, and come to Jesus for salvation.

must think that my wife and poor children were very dear to me.

CHA. But did you tell them of your own sorrow, and fear of destruction? for I suppose that destruction was visible enough to you.

CHR. Yes, over, and over, and over. They might also see my fears in my countenance, in my tears, and also in my trembling under the apprehension of the judgment that did hang over our heads; but all was not sufficient to prevail with them to come with me.

CHRISTIAN'S FEAR OF PERISHING MIGHT BE READ IN HIS VERY COUNTENANCE.

CHA. But what could they say for themselves why they came not?

CHR. Why, my wife was afraid of losing this world, and my children were given to the foolish delights of youth: so, what by one thing, and what by another, they left me to wander in this manner alone.

THE CAUSE WHY HIS WIFE AND CHILDREN DID NOT GO WITH HIM.

CHA. But did you not with your vain life damp all that you by words used by way of persuasion to bring them away with you?*

CHR. Indeed, I cannot commend my life, for I am conscious to myself of many failings therein. I know also, that a man by his conversation may soon overthrow what, by argument or persuasion, he doth labour to

* O soul, consider this deeply: it is the life of a Christian that carries more conviction and persuasion than his words. Though like an angel you talk of Christ, of the gospel, of the doctrines of grace, and of heaven; yet if you indulge devilish tempers, and live under the power of any sinful lusts and passions, you will hereby harden others against the things of God, and prevent their setting out in the ways of God. Study and pray to be a consistent walker in the ways of holiness, else all is but windy profession, and airy talking. O how much harm is done to Christ's cause by the unholy walk of many professors!

fasten upon others for their good. Yet, this I can say, I was very wary of giving them occasion, by any unseemly action, to make them averse to going on pilgrimage. Yea, for this very thing, they would tell me I was too precise, and that I denied myself of things, for their sakes, in which they saw no evil. Nay, I think I may say, that if what they saw in me did hinder them, it was my great tenderness in sinning against God, or of doing any wrong to my neighbour.

CHRISTIAN'S GOOD CONVERSATION BEFORE HIS WIFE AND CHILDREN.

CHA. Indeed, Cain hated his brother, because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous;[z] and if thy wife and children have been offended with thee for this, they thereby show themselves to be implacable to good: and thou hast delivered thy soul from their blood.[a]*

CHRISTIAN CLEAR OF THEIR BLOOD, IF THEY PERISH.

Now I saw in my dream, that thus they sat talking together until supper was ready. So when they had made ready, they sat down to meat.† Now the table was furnished with fat things, and with wine that was well refined; and all their talk at the table was about the Lord of the hill; as, namely, about what he had done, and wherefore he did what he did, and why he had builded that house: and, by what they said, I per-

WHAT CHRISTIAN HAD TO HIS SUPPER.

THEIR TALK AT SUPPER TIME.

z 1 John iii. 12. a Ezek. iii. 19.

* Hence see the necessity of a Christian's giving good evidence, that he is really possessed of those graces of piety, prudence, and charity or love, before he can enjoy the communion of saints. True faith in Jesus is never alone, but is always attended with a train of christian graces. These are the evidences of the faith of God's elect.

† This means the Lord's supper; where Christians in common feed on Jesus by faith, and dwell in contemplation, with wonder, love, and praise, for what Jesus hath done for them, obtained to them, is in them, and is now doing for them at the right hand of God. Thus Christians feed on him by faith, and are nourished up by him unto eternal life.

ceived that he had been a great warrior, and had fought with, and slain him that had the power of death;[b] but not without great danger to himself, which made me love him the more.

For, as they said, and as I believed, said Christian, he did it with the loss of much blood. But that which put the glory of grace into all he did, was, that he did it out of pure love to his country. And, besides, there were some of them of the household that said, they had been and spoke with him since he did die on the cross; and they have attested that they had it from his own lips, that he is such a lover of poor pilgrims, that the like is not to be found from the east to the west.

They, moreover, gave an instance of what they affirmed, and that was, he had stripped himself of his glory, that he might do this for the poor; and that they heard him say and affirm, that he would not dwell in the mountain of Zion alone. They said, moreover, that he had made many pilgrims princes, though by nature they were beggars born, and their original had been the dunghill.[c]

CHRIST MAKES PRINCES OF BEGGARS.

Thus they discoursed together till late at night; and, after they had committed themselves to their Lord for protection, they betook themselves to rest: the pilgrim they laid in a large upper chamber, whose window opened towards the sun-rising: the name of the chamber was Peace, where he slept till break of day, and then he awoke and sang—

CHRISTIAN'S BEDCHAMBER.

Where am I now! Is this the love and care
Of Jesus, for the men that pilgrims are
Thus to provide! that I shall be forgiven,
And dwell already the next door to heaven!*

b Heb. ii. 14. c 1 Sam. ii. 8. Psalm cxiii. 7.

* A sinner never sleeps safely and comfortably till he has found peace with God. But "being justified by faith, we have peace with

So in the morning they all got up; and, after some more discourse, they told him that he should not depart till they had showed him the rarities of that place. And first they had him into the study,* where they showed him records of the greatest antiquity: in which, as I remember my dream, they showed him the pedigree of the Lord of the hill, that he was the Son of the Ancient of days, and came by that eternal generation. Here also was more fully recorded the acts that he had done, and the names of many hundreds that he had taken into his service; and how he had placed them in such habitations, that could neither by length of days, nor decays of nature, be dissolved.

CHRISTIAN HAD INTO THE STUDY, AND WHAT HE SAW THERE.

Then they read to him some of the worthy acts that some of his servants had done; as how they had subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, and turned to flight the armies of the aliens.[d]

Then they read again in another part of the records of the house, where it was shown how willing their Lord was to receive into his favour any, even any, though they in time past had offered great affronts to his

d Heb. xi. 33, 34.

God," and peace in our consciences, "through our Lord Jesus Christ," Rom. v. 1. But all unbelievers of the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ are under the curse of the law, and condemnation for sin, and are at enmity against God.

* Christ, and meditation on Christ, on his birth, his person, his life, his works, his death, his atonement, righteousness, and salvation, are the delight of Christian souls. Says David, "My meditation of him shall be sweet: I will be glad in the Lord," Psa. civ. 34. A lively Christian cannot live without spiritual meditation.

person and proceedings. Here also were several other histories of many other famous things, of all which Christian had a view; as of things both ancient and modern, together with prophecies and predictions of things that have their certain accomplishment, both to the dread and amazement of enemies, and the comfort and solace of pilgrims.*

CHRISTIAN HAD INTO THE ARMOURY.

The next day they took him, and had him into the armoury, where they showed him all manner of furniture, which the Lord had provided for pilgrims, as sword, shield, helmet, breast-plate, all-prayer, and shoes that would not wear out.† And there was here enough of this to harness out as many men for the service of their Lord, as there be stars in the heaven for multitude.

CHRISTIAN IS MADE TO SEE ANCIENT THINGS.

They also showed him some of the engines with which some of his servants had done wonderful things. They showed him Moses's rod; the hammer and nail with which Jael slew Sisera; the pitchers, trumpets, and lamps too, with which Gideon put to flight the armies of Midian. Then they showed him the ox's goad wherewith Shamgar slew six hundred men. They showed him also the jaw-bone with

* Many not only slight, but speak contemptuously of, the everlasting love and covenant grace of God; hence they never get established in their souls, but live in a wavering, fluctuating state, trusting to and living upon their own frames and feelings. But here Christian is shown the comfortable plan, and certain accomplishment of God's purposes and decrees. These a Christian humbly submits to, and rejoices that the Lord reigns, and executes his gracious purposes in the church, in the world, and in the hearts of his people, for his glory and his people's good.

† The Lord is infinitely wise to know all our foes, and gracious to provide proper armour for his people. O what a most blessed Lord do we serve!

which Samson did such mighty feats: they showed him moreover the sling and stone with which David slew Goliah of Gath; and the sword also with which the Lord will kill the man of sin, in the day that he shall rise up to the prey. They showed him besides many excellent things, with which Christian was much delighted.* This done, they went to their rest again.

Then I saw in my dream, that on the morrow he got up to go forwards, but they desired him to stay till the next day also; and then, said they, we will, if the day be clear, show you the Delectable Mountains; which, they said, would yet farther add to his comfort, because they were nearer the desired haven than the place where at present he was; so he consented, and staid.

CHRISTIAN SHOWED THE DELECTABLE MOUNTAINS.

When the morning was up, they had him to the top of the house, and bid him look south: so he did; and, behold, at a great distance,[e] he saw a most pleasant mountainous country, beautified with woods, vineyards, fruits of all sorts, flowers also, with springs and fountains, very delectable to behold. Then he asked the name of the country. They said, It was Immanuel's Land; and it is as common, said they, as this hill is, to and for all the pilgrims. And when thou comest there, from thence thou mayest see to the gate of the celestial city, as the shepherds that live there will make appear.†

e Isaiah xxxiii. 16, 17.

* Contemplation on the things of old, recorded in the word of God, is the joy and glory of faith, animates hope, and causes the soul to press forward in the christian race.

† All this is descriptive of those spiritual and experimental views which souls are favoured with, by the preaching of the word of grace, in a visible church of Christ.

Now he bethought himself of setting forward, and they were willing he should. But first, said they, let us go again into the armoury. So they did; and when he came there, they harnessed him from head to foot, with what was of proof, lest perhaps he should meet with assaults in the way. He being therefore thus accoutred,* walked out with his friends to the gate, and there he asked the Porter, if he saw any pilgrim pass by? Then the Porter answered, Yes.

CHRISTIAN SETS FORWARD.

CHRISTIAN SENT AWAY ARMED.

CHR. Pray, did you know him? said he.

POR. I asked his name, and he told me it was Faithful.

CHR. Oh, said Christian, I know him; he is my townsman, my near neighbour, he comes from the place where I was born. How far do you think he may be before?

POR. He is got by this time below the hill.

CHR. Well, said Christian, good Porter, the Lord be with thee, and add to all thy blessings much increase, for the kindness that thou hast showed to me.†

HOW CHRISTIAN AND THE PORTER GREET AT PARTING.

Then he began to go forward; but Discretion, Piety, Charity, and Prudence would accompany him down to the foot of the hill. So they went on together, reiterating their former discourses, till they came to go down the hill. Then said Christian, As it was difficult coming up, so, so far as I can see, it is dangerous going down. Yes, said Prudence, so it is; for it is a hard

* See what this christian armour is, in Ephes. vi. 13, &c.

† Christians love the ministers of Christ, and bless them and pray for them, because the Lord has made them profitable to their souls, in edifying, comforting, and establishing them in the faith of his love, and the hope of his salvation.

matter for a man to go down into the Valley of Humiliation, as thou art now, and to catch no slip by the way; therefore, said they, we are come out to accompany thee down the hill. So he began to go down, but very warily, yet he caught a slip or two.*

THE VALLEY OF HUMILIATION.

Then I saw in my dream, that these good companions, when Christian was got down to the bottom of the hill, gave him a loaf of bread, a bottle of wine, and a cluster of raisins; and then he went on his way.

Whilst Christian is among his godly friends,
Their golden mouths make him sufficient mends
For all his griefs; and when they let him go,
He's clad with northern steel from top to toe.

But now in this Valley of Humiliation, poor Christian was hard put to it; for he had gone but a little way, before he espied a foul fiend coming over the field to meet him: his name is Apollyon. Then did Christian begin to be afraid, and to cast in his mind whether to go back or to stand his ground. But he considered again, that he had no armour for his back, and therefore thought that to turn the back to him might give him greater advantage, with ease to pierce him with his darts, therefore he resolved

CHRISTIAN HAS NO ARMOUR FOR HIS BACK.

* Thus it is, after a pilgrim has been favoured with many special and peculiar blessings, there is danger of his being puffed up by them, and exalted on the account of them; so was even holy Paul: therefore the messenger of Satan was permitted to buffet him, 2 Cor. xii. 7. In our present mixed state, the Lord knows it would not be best for us, always to dwell on the mount of spiritual joy; therefore, for the good of the soul, the flesh must be humbled, and kept low, lest spiritual pride prevail. It is hard going down into the valley of humiliation, without slipping into murmuring and discontent, and calling in question the dealings of God with us.

to venture and stand his ground: for, thought he, had I no more in mine eye than the saving of my life, it would be the best way to stand.

So he went on, and Apollyon met him. Now the monster was hideous to behold: he was clothed with scales like a fish, and they are his pride; he had wings like a dragon, feet like a bear, and out of his belly came fire and smoke, and his mouth was as the mouth of a lion. When he was come up to Christian, he beheld him with a disdainful countenance, and thus began to question him.*

DISCOURSE BETWIXT CHRISTIAN AND APOLLYON.

APOL. Whence came you; and whither are you bound?

CHR. I am come from the city of Destruction, which is the place of all evil, and am going to the city of Zion.

APOL. By this I perceive that thou art one of my subjects; for all that country is mine, and I am the prince and god of it. How is it then that thou hast run away from thy king? Were it not that I hope thou mayest do me more service, I would strike thee now at one blow to the ground.

CHR. I was indeed born in your dominions, but your service was hard, and your wages such as a man could not live on; for the wages of sin is death;[f] therefore when I was come to years, I did as other con-

f Rom. vi 23.

* Do not be terrified, though you meet Satan, and he assaults you in the most terrible form: but mind this, before Satan is suffered to attack Pilgrim, his Lord had provided and fitted him with an armour; the armour of God, wherewith he could stand his ground, conquer Satan, and repel all his fiery darts. In every conflict with Satan, the battle is the Lord's; his strength is engaged for our victory; therefore fight the good fight of faith.

siderate persons do, look out if perhaps I might mend myself.*

APOL. There is no prince that will thus lightly lose his subjects, neither will I as yet lose thee: but since thou complainest of thy service and wages, be content to go back; what our country will afford, I do here promise to give thee.

APOLLYON'S FLATTERY.

CHR. But I have let myself to another, even to the King of princes; and how can I with fairness go back with thee?

APOL. Thou hast done in this according to the proverb, "changed a bad for a worse:" but it is ordinary for those that have professed themselves his servants, after a while to give him the slip, and return again to me. Do thou so too, and all shall be well.†

APOLLYON UNDERVALUES CHRIST'S SERVICES.

CHR. I have given him my faith, and sworn my allegiance to him; how then can I go back from this, and not be hanged as a traitor?

APOL. Thou didst the same by me, and yet I am willing to pass by all, if now thou wilt yet turn again, and go back.

* All this is the effect of believing God's word, and the conviction which it brings to the mind of the evil of sin, of the deplorable state the sinner finds himself in, and of the grace and salvation of the Son of God. As soon as a man believes these truths, he quits the service of the father of lies; and, by the faith of the truth, he is armed to resist Satan: for it is the glory of faith, to draw all its reasonings from divine truth.

† Here the father of lies delivers a most awful truth; but, like himself, backs it with a lying promise. Most dreadful to think of, to set out in the possession of Jesus, and again to turn back to the service of Satan! yet how common is this! Such reject Christ's truth, and believe the devil's lie, "that all shall be well." But their end is ill, and their death damnation.

CHR. What I promised thee was in my nonage; and besides, I count that the Prince under whose banner now I stand is able to absolve me; yea, and to pardon also what I did as to my compliance with thee: and besides, O thou destroying Apollyon, to speak truth, I like his service, his wages, his servants, his government, his company, and country, better than thine; and therefore leave off to persuade me further: I am his servant, and I will follow him.

APOLLYON PLEADS THE GRIEVOUS ENDS OF CHRISTIANS, TO DISSUADE CHRISTIAN FROM PERSISTING IN HIS WAY.

APOL. Consider again, when thou art in cool blood, what thou art like to meet with in the way that thou goest. Thou knowest that, for the most part, his servants come to an ill end, because they are transgressors against me and my ways. How many of them have been put to shameful deaths! And besides, thou countest his service better than mine; whereas, he never yet came from the place where he is, to deliver any that served him out of their hands: but as for me, how many times, as all the world very well knows, have I delivered, either by power or fraud, those that have faithfully served me, from him and his, though taken by them: and so will I deliver thee.*

CHR. His forbearing at present to deliver them is on purpose to try their love, whether they will cleave to him to the end: and as for the ill end thou sayest they come to, that is most glorious in their account: For, for present deliverance, they do not much expect it; for they stay for their glory, and then they shall have it,

* Mark the many subtle ways and artful reasonings of Satan, to prevent pilgrims from persevering in the ways of the Lord. Happy for us not to be ignorant of Satan's devices!

when their Prince comes in his, and the glory of the angels.*

APOL. Thou hast already been unfaithful in thy service to him; and how dost thou think to receive wages of him?

CHR. Wherein, O Apollyon, have I been unfaithful to him?

APOL. Thou didst faint at first setting out, when thou wast almost choked in the gulf of Despond. Thou didst attempt wrong ways to be rid of thy burden, whereas thou shouldest have stayed till thy Prince had taken it off. Thou didst sinfully sleep, and lose thy choice things. Thou wast also almost persuaded to go back at the sight of the lions: and when thou talkest of thy journey, and of what thou hast heard and seen, thou art inwardly desirous of vainglory in all that thou sayest or doest.†

APOLLYON PLEADS CHRISTIAN'S INFIRMITIES AGAINST HIM.

CHR. All this is true, and much more which thou hast left out; but the Prince whom I serve and honour is merciful, and ready to forgive. But, besides, these infirmities possessed me in thy country, for there I sucked them in, and I have groaned under them, being sorry for them, and have obtained pardon of my Prince.‡

* Here is the precious reasoning of faith. Well might Paul say, "Above all, (or over all,) taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one," Eph. vi. 16.

† Satan is justly styled the accuser of the brethren of Christ, Rev. xii. 10, for he accuseth them before God, and to their own consciences. But "they overcome him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony," Rev. xii. 11, namely, "that they have redemption in the blood of Christ, even the forgiveness of their sins," Eph. i. 7.

‡ This is the best way—to own Satan's charges if they be true, yea, to exaggerate them also, to exalt the riches of the grace of Christ

APOL. Then Apollyon broke out into a grievous rage, saying, I am an enemy to this Prince; I hate his person, his laws, and people: I am come out on purpose to withstand thee.

APOLLYON IN RAGE, FALLS UPON CHRISTIAN.

CHR. Apollyon, beware what you do, for I am in the King's highway, the way of holiness; therefore take heed to yourself.

APOL. Then Apollyon straddled quite over the whole breadth of the way, and said, I am void of fear in this matter. Prepare thyself to die; for I swear by my infernal den that thou shalt go no farther: here will I spill thy soul. And with that he threw a flaming dart at his breast; but Christian had a shield in his hand, with which he caught it, and so prevented the danger of that.*

Then did Christian draw, for he saw it was time to bestir him; and Apollyon as fast made at him, throwing darts as thick as hail; by the which, notwithstanding all that Christian could do to avoid it, Apollyon wounded him in his head, his hand, and foot. This made Christian give a little back: Apollyon, therefore, followed his work amain, and Christian again took courage, and resisted as manfully as he could. This sore combat lasted for above half a day, even till Christian was almost quite

CHRISTIAN WOUNDED IN HIS UNDERSTANDING, FAITH, AND CONVERSATION.

above all, in pardoning all of them freely. By thus humbling ourselves, and exalting Christ, Satan can get no advantage over us, though this will put him into a rage against us.

* The shield of faith; the belief of what Christ had done for him, was to him, had done in him, and what he was in Christ—pardoned, justified, and sanctified. This glorious confession of faith honours Christ, repels and quenches all the fiery darts of Satan, and gets the victory over him. This is what Peter exhorts—to "resist the devil, steadfast in the faith," 1 Pet. v. 9.

spent; for you must know that Christian, by reason of his wounds, must needs grow weaker and weaker.*

Then Apollyon, espying his opportunity, began to gather up close to Christian, and, wrestling with him, gave him a dreadful fall; and with that Christian's sword flew out of his hand. Then said Apollyon, I am sure of thee now: and with that he had almost pressed him to death, so that Christian began to despair of life. But, as God would have it,† while Apollyon was fetching his last blow, thereby to make a full end of this good man, Christian nimbly reached out his hand for his sword, and caught it, saying, Rejoice not against me, O mine enemy! when I fall, I shall arise![g] and with that gave him a deadly thrust, which made him give back, as one that had received his mortal wound. Christian, perceiving that, made at him again, saying, Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors, through him that loved us.[h] And, with that, Apollyon spread forth his dragon's wings, and sped him away, that Christian saw him no more.

APOLLYON CASTETH CHRISTIAN DOWN TO THE GROUND.

CHRISTIAN'S VICTORY OVER APOLLYON.

In this combat no man can imagine, unless he had seen and heard, as I did, what yelling and hideous roaring Apollyon made all

A BRIEF RELATION OF THE COMBAT BY THE SPECTATOR.

g Mic. vii. 8. h Rom. viii. 37, 39. Jam. iv. 7.

* We may think this is hard work;—why should a Christian be so severely attacked by Satan? The Lord does not give us armour to be useless, but to fight with, and to prove its excellency, and in the use of it to experience his almighty power and unchangeable love; for though we are weak, he is almighty to strengthen us, therefore we are called upon to be "strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might," Eph. vi. 10.

† Mind that—the Lord does not look on as a mere spectator of our conflicts; but he strengthens us in every evil day, and in every fight of faith, and brings us off at last more than conquerors through his love.

the time of the fight: he spake like a dragon; and, on the other side, what sighs and groans burst from Christian's heart. I never saw him all the while give so much as one pleasant look, till he perceived he had wounded Apollyon with his two-edged sword; then, indeed, he did smile and look upward!* But it was the dreadfullest sight that ever I saw.

CHRISTIAN GIVES GOD THANKS FOR HIS DELIVERANCE.

So when the battle was over, Christian said, I will here give thanks to him that hath delivered me out of the mouth of the lion, to him that did help me against Apollyon. And so he did, saying—

Great Beelzebub, the captain of this fiend,
Design'd my ruin; therefore to this end
He sent him harness'd out; and he with rage
That hellish was, did fiercely me engage:
But blessed Michael helped me, and I,
By dint of sword, did quickly make him fly:
Therefore to him let me give lasting praise,
And thank and bless his holy name always.

Then there came to him a hand with some of the leaves of the tree of life, the which Christian took and applied to the wounds that he had received in the battle, and was healed immediately.† He also sat down in that place to eat bread, and to drink of the bottle that was given him a little before: so being refreshed, he addressed himself to his journey with his

* Not a vainglorious and self-applauding, but an humble, thankful smile. He looked up, and smilingly gave the Lord all the glory of his victory.

† No matter what wounds we get in our conflicts with Satan, for Jesus will heal them all. But who will heal those which we get by complying with the devil, instead of resisting him?

sword drawn in his hand;* for he said, I know not but some other enemy may be at hand. But he met with no other affront from Apollyon quite through this valley.

CHRISTIAN GOES ON HIS JOURNEY, WITH HIS SWORD DRAWN IN HIS HAND.

Now, at the end of this valley was another, called the Valley of the Shadow of Death;† and Christian must needs go through it, because the way to the Celestial City lay through the midst of it. Now, this valley is a very solitary place. The prophet Jeremiah thus describes it: "A wilderness, a land of deserts and of pits; a land of drought, and of the Shadow of Death; a land that no man (but a Christian) passeth through,‡ and where no man dwelt."[i]

THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH.

Now, here Christian was worse put to it than in his fight with Apollyon; as by the sequel you shall see.

I saw then in my dream, that when Christian was got to the borders of the Shadow of Death, there met him two men, children of them that brought up an evil report of the good land,[k] making haste to go back;§ to whom Christian spake as follows.

THE CHILDREN OF THE SPIES GO BACK.

i Jer. ii. 6. k Numb. xiii.

* Conflicts with Satan make Christians wary, and value their sword, so as to walk with the sword of the Spirit, the word of God, in their hands.

† This signifies darkness and desertion of soul.

‡ None but the heart of a Christian knows the bitterness of God's hiding his face. It is death to all his comforts: his mourning under a sense of it, manifests his love to the Lord, and delight in his presence.

§ Such we frequently meet with, who set out without a sense of sin, true faith, real hope, and sincere love to Christ; and as sure as they go back from a profession, they bring up an evil report of the way to the kingdom of Christ.

CHR. Whither are you going?

MEN. They said, Back! back! and we would have you do so too, if either life or peace is prized by you.

CHR. Why, what's the matter? said Christian.

MEN. Matter! said they: we were going that way as you are going, and went as far as we durst; and indeed we were almost past coming back: for had we gone a little further, we had not been here to bring the news to thee.

CHR. But what have you met with? said Christian.

MEN. Why, we were almost in the Valley of the Shadow of Death;[l] but that by good hap we looked before us, and saw the danger before we came to it.

CHR. But what have you seen? said Christian.

MEN. Seen! why, the valley itself, which is as dark as pitch: we also saw there the hobgoblins, satyrs, and dragons of the pit: we heard also in that valley a continual howling and yelling, as of a people under unutterable misery, who there sat bound in affliction and irons: and over that valley hang the discouraging clouds of confusion: death also doth always spread his wings over it.[m] In a word, it is every whit dreadful, being utterly without order.

CHR. Then said Christian, I perceive not yet, by what you have said, but that this is my way to the desired haven.

MEN. Be it thy way; we will not choose it for ours.*

l Psalm xliv. 19. m Job iii. 5. x. 22.

See what it is, when men are left to will and choose for themselves; they prefer their own ways, though it be to destruction: their wills are averse to God's, and they choose death in the error of their life; but the faithful soul is under the reign of grace, and he chooses

So they parted; and Christian went on his way, but still with his sword drawn in his hand, for fear lest he should be assaulted.

I saw then in my dream, so far as this valley reached, there was on the right hand a very deep ditch; that ditch is it into which the blind have led the blind in all ages, and have both there miserably perished.* Again, behold, on the left hand there was a very dangerous quag, into which if even a good man falls, he finds no bottom for his foot to stand on: into that quag king David once did fall, and had, no doubt, therein been smothered, had not he that is able plucked him out.[n]

The pathway was here also exceeding narrow, and therefore good Christian was the more put to it; for when he sought in the dark to shun the ditch on the one hand, he was ready to tip over into the mire on the other: also when he sought to escape the mire, without great carefulness he would be ready to fall into the ditch.† Thus he went on, and I heard him here sigh bitterly; for besides the danger mentioned above, the pathway was here so dark, that ofttimes, when he

n Psalm lxix. 14.

to obey the will of God, and to walk in the ways of God, though they are not pleasing to flesh and blood: hence true faith is tried, and a mere empty profession made manifest.

* The ditch on the right-hand is error in principle, into which the blind—as to spiritual truths, blind guides—lead the blind, who were never spiritually enlightened. The ditch on the left hand, means outward sins and wickedness, which many fall into. Both are alike dangerous to pilgrims; but the Lord will keep the feet of his saints, 1 Sam. ii. 9.

† A tender conscience is as much afraid of corrupt principles, as of sinful practices. This manifests the sincerity of the soul, even when a Christian walks in darkness.

lifted up his foot to set forward, he knew not where, or upon what, he should set it next.

About the midst of this valley, I perceived the mouth of hell to be, and it stood also hard by the wayside. Now, thought Christian, what shall I do? And ever and anon the flame and smoke would come out in such abundance, with sparks and hideous noises, (things that cared not for Christian's sword, as did Apollyon before,) that he was forced to put up his sword, and betake himself to another weapon, called All-prayer: so he cried in my hearing, "O Lord, I beseech thee, deliver my soul."[o]

Thus he went on a great while, yet still the flames would be reaching towards him: also he heard doleful voices, and rushings to and fro, so that sometimes he thought he should be torn in pieces, or trodden down like mire in the streets. This frightful sight was seen, and these dreadful noises were heard by him, for several miles together; and coming to a place where he thought he heard a company of fiends* coming forward to meet him, he stopped, and began to muse what he had best to do. Sometimes he had half a thought to go back; then again he thought he might be half way through the valley; he remembered also how he had already vanquished many a danger; and that the danger of going back might be much more than for to go forward. So he resolved to go on: yet

CHRISTIAN PUT TO A STAND FOR A WHILE.

o Psalm cxvi. 4. Eph. vi. 11.

* But it may be asked, Why doth the Lord suffer his children to walk in such darkness? It is for his glory; it tries their faith in him, and excites prayer to him; but his love abates not in the least towards them, since he lovingly inquires after them: "Who is there among you that feareth the Lord, and walketh in darkness, and hath no light?" Then he gives most precious advice to them: "Let him trust in the Lord, and stay himself upon his God," Isa. l. 10.

the fiends seemed to come nearer and nearer; but, when they were come even almost at him, he cried out with a most vehement voice, "I will walk in the "strength of the Lord God;" so they gave back, and came no further.

One thing I would not let slip: I took notice, that now poor Christian was so confounded, that he did not know his own voice; and thus I perceived it: just when he was come over against the mouth of the burning pit, one of the wicked ones got behind him, and stepped up softly to him, and whisperingly suggested many grievous blasphemies to him, which he verily thought had proceeded from his own mind. This put Christian more to it than any thing that he met with before, even to think that he should now blaspheme him that he loved so much before; yet if he could have helped it, he would not have done it: but he had not the discretion either to stop his ears, or to know from whence those blasphemies came.*

CHRISTIAN MADE BELIEVE THAT HE SPAKE BLASPHEMIES, WHEN IT WAS SATAN THAT SUGGESTED THEM INTO HIS MIND.

When Christian had travelled in this disconsolate condition some considerable time, he thought he heard the voice of a man, as going before him, saying, "Though I walk through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I will fear no ill, for thou art with me."[p]†

p Psalm xxiii. 4.

* Now, here the conscience manifests its tenderness, by abhorring the evil of Satan's suggestions. O what near access has the enemy of our peace and holiness to our hearts! But the Lord is also near, to save to the uttermost all who trust in him: "he will hear their cry, and save them," Psalm cxlv. 19.

† The experience of other saints is very encouraging, for the soul finds that others have gone before him in dreadful, dark, and dreary paths.

Then was he glad, and that for these reasons.

First, Because he gathered from thence, that some who feared God were in this valley as well as himself.

Secondly, For that he perceived God was with them, though in that dark and dismal state: and why not, thought he, with me; though, by reason of the impediment that attends this place, I cannot perceive it?[q]

Thirdly, For that he hoped (could he overtake them) to have company by and by.

So he went on, and called to him that was before; but he knew not what to answer, for that he also thought himself to be alone. And by and by the day broke: then said Christian, He hath "turned the shadow of death into the morning."[r]*

CHRISTIAN GLAD AT BREAK OF DAY.

Now morning being come, he looked back, not out of desire to return, but to see, by the light of the day, what hazards he had gone through in the dark: so he saw more perfectly the ditch that was on the one hand, and the quag that was on the other; also how narrow the way was which led betwixt them both: also now he saw the hobgoblins, and satyrs, and dragons of the pit, but all afar off: for after break of day they came not nigh; yet they were discovered to him, according to that which is written, "He discovereth deep things out of darkness, and bringeth out to light the shadow of death."[s]

Now was Christian much affected with this deliverance from all the dangers of his solitary way; which dangers, though he feared them much before, yet he saw them more clearly now, because the light of the day made

q Job ix. 11. r Amos v. 8. s Job xii. 22.

* To walk in darkness, and not to be distressed for it, argues stupidity of soul. To have the light of God's countenance shine upon us, and not to rejoice and be thankful, is impossible.

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by J. H. Kernot.

them conspicuous to him. And about this time the sun was rising, and this was another mercy to Christian; for you must note, that, though the first part of the Valley of the Shadow of Death was dangerous, yet this second part, which he was yet to go, was, if possible, far more dangerous;* for, from the place where he now stood, even to the end of the valley, the way was all along set so full of snares, traps, gins, and nets here, and so full of pits, pitfalls, deep holes, and shelvings-down there, that, had it now been dark, as it was when he came the first part of the way, had he had a thousand souls, they had in reason been cast away; but, as I said, just now the sun was rising. Then said he, "His candle shineth on my head, and by his light I go through darkness."[t]

THE SECOND PART OF THIS VALLEY VERY DANGEROUS.

In this light, therefore, he came to the end of the valley. Now I saw in my dream, that at the end of the valley lay blood, bones, ashes, and mangled bodies of men, even of pilgrims that had gone this way formerly; and while I was musing what should be the reason, I espied a little before me a cave, where two giants, Pope and Pagan, dwelt in old times, by whose power and tyranny the men, whose bones, blood, ashes, &c. lay there, were cruelly put to death. But by this place Christian went without much danger, whereat I somewhat wondered; but I have learned since, that Pagan has been dead many a day; and as for the other, though he be yet alive, he is, by reason of age, and also of the many shrewd brushes that he met with in his younger

t Job xxix. 3.

* This means, the raging of Romish persecution for the truth's sake, and those dreadful deaths which the martyrs suffered in the cause of Christ, and his glorious gospel and precious salvation. But here Christian had the blessed light of the glorious Reformation.

days, grown so crazy and stiff in his joints, that he can now do little more than sit in his cave's mouth, grinning at pilgrims as they go by, and biting his nails because he cannot come at them.*

So I saw that Christian went on his way; yet, at the sight of the old man that sat at the mouth of the cave, he could not tell what to think, especially because he spoke to him, though he could not go after him, saying, You will never mend till more of you be burnt.† But he held his peace, and set a good face on it; and so went by, and catched no hurt. Then sang Christian—

O world of wonders! (I can say no less,)
That I should be preserv'd in that distress
That I have met with here! O blessed be
That hand that from it hath deliver'd me!
Dangers in darkness, devils, hell, and sin,
Did compass me while I this vale was in:
Yea, snares, and pits, and traps, and nets did lie
My path about, that worthless silly I
Might have been catch'd, entangled, and cast down:
But since I live, let Jesus wear the crown.

* Pagan darkness has been expelled from our land by the light of the glorious gospel. Romish superstition and idolatry, and all the corrupt doctrines of that church, with the pope's power and supremacy, are abolished by the blessed Reformation. O may we Protestants see our great mercies, be truly thankful to God for them, and study to walk worthy of them!

† Our scene is changed, from popish persecution into heathenish infidelity. Though in this day we are in no danger of being burnt for the faith of Christ; yet we are exposed to cruel mockings from infidels and profane men, who despise revelation, and set at nought the glorious gospel of the grace of God, and the way of salvation by our precious Christ. His pilgrims are esteemed fools and madmen by the great, the wise, and the learned of this world, though these are the greatest fools in the sight of God.

Now, as Christian went on his way, he came to a little ascent, which was cast up on purpose that pilgrims might see before them:* up there, therefore, Christian went; and looking forward, he saw Faithful before him upon his journey. Then said Christian aloud, Ho, ho! so-ho! stay, and I will be your companion. At that Faithful looked behind him; to whom Christian cried again, Stay, stay, till I come up to you. But Faithful answered, No, I am upon my life, and the avenger of blood is behind me.†

CHRISTIAN OVERTAKES FAITHFUL.

At this Christian was somewhat moved, and, putting to all his strength, he quickly got up with Faithful, and did also overrun him; so the last was first. Then did Christian vaingloriously smile, because he had gotten the start of his brother; but not taking good heed to his feet, he suddenly stumbled and fell, and could not rise again, until Faithful came up to help him.‡

CHRISTIAN'S FALL MAKES FAITHFUL AND HE GO LOVINGLY TOGETHER.

Then I saw in my dream, they went very lovingly on together, and had sweet discourse of all things that had happened to them in their pilgrimage; and thus Christian began.

CHR. My honoured and well-beloved brother Faithful, I am glad that I have overtaken you, and that God has

* The Lord cares for his people: he has cast up, by his word and promises, many a little hill of prospect and comfort in their way, that they may look forward with pleasure and delight.

† It is good to beware and to be jealous of what company we fall into. Many have joined hurtful professors, instead of profitable pilgrims.

‡ How soon doth spiritual pride show its cursed head, at thinking we have outstripped another. Then danger is near; a fall is at hand, to humble us. The very person's hand we need, to help us, whom we thought we had exceeded.

so tempered our spirits,* that we can walk as companions in this so pleasant a path.

FAITH. I had thought, dear friend, to have had your company quite from our town, but you did get the start of me; wherefore I was forced to come thus much of the way alone.

CHR. How long did you stay in the city of Destruction, before you set out after me on your pilgrimage?

THEIR TALK ABOUT THE COUNTRY FROM WHENCE THEY CAME.

FAITH. Till I could stay no longer;† for there was a great talk presently after you were gone out, that our city would in a short time, with fire from heaven, be burned down to the ground.

CHR. What! did your neighbours talk so?

FAITH. Yes, it was for a while in every body's mouth.

CHR. What! and did no more of them but you come out to escape the danger?

FAITH. Though there was, as I said, a great talk thereabout, yet I do not think they did firmly believe it; for, in the heat of the discourse, I heard some of them deridingly speak of you and of your desperate journey, (for so they called this your pilgrimage.) But I did believe, and do still, that the end of our city will be with fire and brimstone from above; and therefore I have made my escape.

* Two cannot walk together, except they are agreed that they are poor miserable sinners; that Christ is a precious Saviour; and that they both alike expect salvation and eternal life from him only.

† This is the case with every pilgrim. From the powerful convictions which he has from above, of his state and danger, he is urged by necessity to flee from the wrath to come. It is not in the day of man's free-will, but in the day of Christ's power, that any soul becomes a stranger and pilgrim. Therefore, O Christian, give Christ and free grace all the glory of your setting your face Zionward. Every step you take, remember what a debtor you are to God's grace.

CHR. Did you hear no talk of neighbour Pliable?

FAITH. Yes, Christian, I heard that he followed you till he came to the Slough of Despond, where, as some said, he fell in; but he would not be known to have so done; but I am sure he was soundly bedabbled with that kind of dirt.

CHR. And what said the neighbours to him?

FAITH. He hath, since his going back, been had greatly in derision, and that among all sorts of people: some do mock and despise him, and scarce will any set him on work. He is now seven times worse than if he had never gone out of the city.

HOW PLIABLE WAS ACCOUNTED OF WHEN HE GOT HOME.

CHR. But why should they be so set against him, since they also despise the way that he forsook?

FAITH. Oh, they say, Hang him; he is a turncoat; he was not true to his profession! I think God has stirred up even his enemies to hiss at him, and make him a proverb, because he hath forsaken the way.[u]

CHR. Had you no talk with him before you came out?

FAITH. I met him once in the streets, but he leered away on the other side, as one ashamed of what he had done: so I spake not to him.*

CHR. Well, at my first setting out I had hopes of that man; but now I fear he will perish in the overthrow of the city. For it has happened to him according to the true proverb, "The dog is turned to his vomit again, and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire."[v]

THE DOG AND SOW.

u Jer. xxix. 18, 19. v 2 Pet. ii. 22.

* Apostates from the profession of Christ cannot look the followers of Christ boldly in the face: some convictions will follow them, till their hearts are hardened, and their conscience seared.

FAITH. These are my fears of him too: but who can hinder that which will be?

CHR. Well, neighbour Faithful, said Christian, let us leave him, and talk of things that more immediately concern ourselves. Tell me now what you have met with in the way as you came; for I know you have met with some things, or else it may be writ for a wonder.

FAITH. I escaped the slough that I perceived you fell into, and got up to the gate without that danger;* only I met with one whose name was Wanton, that had like to have done me a mischief.

FAITHFUL ASSAULTED BY WANTON.

CHR. It was well you escaped her net: Joseph was hard put to it by her, and he escaped her as you did; but it had like to have cost him his life.[w] But what did she do to you?

FAITH. You cannot think, but that you know something, what a flattering tongue she had; she lay at me hard to turn aside with her, promising me all manner of content.†

CHR. Nay, she did not promise you the content of a good conscience.

FAITH. You know that I mean all carnal and fleshly content.

CHR. Thank God you have escaped her: "the abhorred of the Lord shall fall into the ditch."[x]

w Gen. xxxix. 11—13. x Prov. xxii. 14.

* Though no sinner will flee from the wrath to come, to Christ for salvation, till the Spirit has convinced of sin, and deserved wrath and destruction: yet all do not fall under the like dreadful despondency of soul at first setting out.

† Fleshly lusts will plead hard, and promise fair. Happy to look to the Lord for power against them, and to eye his precious promises, that we may escape them.

FAITH. Nay, I know not whether I did wholly escape her, or no.*

CHR. Why, I trow you did not consent to her desires.

FAITH. No, not to defile myself, for I remembered an old writing that I had seen, which said, "her steps take hold of hell."[y] So I shut mine eyes, because I would not be bewitched with her looks:—then she railed on me, and I went my way.

CHR. Did you meet with no other assault as you came?

HE WAS ASSAULTED BY ADAM THE FIRST.

FAITH. When I came to the foot of the hill called Difficulty, I met with a very aged man, who asked me what I was, and whither bound? I told him that I am a pilgrim going to the Celestial City. Then said the old man, Thou lookest like an honest fellow; wilt thou be content to dwell with me, for the wages that I shall give thee? Then I asked him his name, and where he dwelt. He said, his name was Adam the First,† and that he dwelt in the town of Deceit.[z] I asked him then what was his work, and what the wages that he would give? He told me, that his work was *many delights;* and his wages, that I should be his heir at last. I further asked him, what house he kept, and what other servants he had? So he told me, that his house was maintained with all the dainties of the world, and that his servants were those of his own begetting. Then I asked how many children

y Prov. 5. 5. Job xxxi. 1. z Eph. iv. 22.

* A jealous conscience is grieved for the secret inclining of the flesh to lust, and can hardly acquit itself of guilt. This makes the cleansing blood of Christ exceedingly precious, while the soul is sunk into humility and self-loathing.

† That is, original sin, or indwelling corruption, which has infected our whole nature.

he had? He said, that he had but three daughters, "the Lust of the Flesh, the Lust of the Eyes, and the Pride of Life;"[a] and that I should marry them if I would. Then I asked, how long time he would have me live with him? And he told me, as long as he lived himself.

CHR. Well, and what conclusion came the old man and you to at last?

FAITH. Why, at first I found myself somewhat inclinable to go with the man, for I thought he spoke very fair; but looking in his forehead as I talked with him, I saw there written, "Put off the old man with his deeds."*

CHR. And how then?

FAITH. Then it came burning hot into my mind, whatever he said, and however he flattered, when he got me home to his house he would sell me for a slave. So I bid him forbear to talk, for I would not come near the door of his house. Then he reviled me, and told me, that he would send such a one after me, that should make my way bitter to my soul. So I turned to go away from him; but just as I turned myself to go thence, I felt him take hold of my flesh, and give me such a deadly twitch back, that I thought he had pulled part of me after himself:† this made me cry, O wretched man![b]—So I went on my way up the hill.

a 1 John ii. 16. b Rom. vii. 24.

* Blessed is the man who does not consult with flesh and blood, but looks to and obeys what is written by the Lord.

† Though original sin is hard to be borne, it is good to be sensible of its evil. Though it makes us cry, "O wretched!" yet it tends to keep up a sense of our want of Christ, and of the worth of him, and that nothing less than the God-man Christ Jesus can be our salvation.

Now, when I had got about half way up, I looked behind me, and saw one coming after me, swift as the wind; so he overtook me just about the place where the settle stands.

CHR. Just there, said Christian, did I sit down to rest me; but being overcome with sleep, I there lost this roll out of my bosom.

FAITH. But, good brother, hear me out:—So soon as the man overtook me, he was but a word and a blow, for down he knocked me, and laid me for dead. But when I was a little come to myself again, I asked him wherefore he served me so? He said, because of my secret inclining to Adam the First;* and with that he struck me another deadly blow on the breast, and beat me down backward: so I lay at his foot as dead as before. So when I came to myself again, I cried, him mercy: but he said, I know not how to show mercy; and with that knocked me down again. He had doubtless made an end of me, but that one came by, and bid him forbear.

CHR. Who was that that bid him forbear?

FAITH. I did not know him at first; but as he went by, I perceived the holes in his hands and in his sides; then I concluded that he was our Lord. So I went up the hill.

THE TEMPER OF MOSES.

CHR. That man that overtook you was Moses. He spareth none, neither knoweth

* This is afterwards explained to be Moses, or the law of God. Think not that the law reacheth only to outward gross actions; nay, but it reacheth to the thoughts and intents of the heart. It knocks a man's hopes down, and curses him to death, even for only secret inclining to lust. So strict, so spiritual, so pure is the holy law of God. Hence none but self-righteous, vain-glorious fools can place the least confidence in their obedience to the law, and trust in their own righteousness for justification.

he how to show mercy to those that transgress his law.

FAITH. I know it very well; it was not the first time that he has met with me. It was he that came to me when I dwelt securely at home, and that told me he would burn my house over my head if I staid there.*

CHR. But did you not see the house that stood there on the top of the hill, on the side of which Moses met you?

FAITH. Yes, and the lions too, before I came at it:—but, for the lions, I think they were asleep; for it was about noon:—and, because I had so much of the day before me, I passed by the Porter, and came down the hill.

CHR. He told me, indeed, that he saw you go by; but I wish that you had called at the house, for they would have showed you so many rarities, that you would scarce have forgot them to the day of your death.—But pray tell me, did you meet nobody in the valley of Humility?

FAITHFUL ASSAULTED BY DISCONTENT.

FAITH. Yes, I met with one Discontent, who would willingly have persuaded me to go back again with him: his reason was, for that the valley was altogether without honour. He told me, moreover, that there to go was the way to disobey all my friends, as Pride, Arrogancy, Self-conceit, Worldly-glory, with others, who he knew, as he said, would be very much offended if I made such a fool of myself as to wade through this valley.†

* That sinner, who never had a threatening fiery visit from Moses, is yet asleep in his sins, and secure in his soul, though under the curse and wrath of the fiery law of God.

† Here observe the different experience of Christians, in regard to the enemies they meet with. We do not read that Christian was

CHR. Well, and how did you answer him?

FAITH. I told him, that although all these that he named might claim a kindred of me, and that rightly, (for indeed they were my relations according to the flesh;) yet since I became a pilgrim, they have disowned me, and I also have rejected them, and therefore they were to me now no more than if they had never been of my lineage. I told him, moreover, that as to this valley, he had quite misrepresented the thing; for "before honour is humility," and "a haughty spirit before a fall." Therefore, said I, I had rather go through this valley to the honour that was so accounted by the wisest, than choose that which he esteemed most worthy of our affections.

FAITHFUL'S ANSWER TO DISCONTENT.

CHR. Met you with nothing else in that valley?

FAITH. Yes, I met with Shame; but of all the men that I met with on my pilgrimage, he, I think, bears the wrong name. The other would be said nay, after a little argumentation and somewhat else: but this boldfaced Shame would never have done.

HE IS ASSAULTED BY SHAME.

CHR. Why, what did he say to you?

FAITH. What! why he objected against religion itself: he said, it was a pitiful, low, sneaking business, for a man to mind religion. He said, that a tender conscience was an unmanly thing; and that for a man to watch over his words and ways, so as to tie up himself from that hectoring liberty that the brave spirits of

attacked by Discontent, as Faithful was; but yet Faithful reasoned, and got the better of this enemy. Many pilgrims go on much more contented than others. The reasoning of faith will ever prevail over that discontent which springs from pride, arrogancy, self-conceit, and a thirst for worldly glory, riches, and pleasures.

the times accustom themselves unto, would make him the ridicule of the times. He objected also, that but few of the mighty, rich, or wise were ever of my opinion; nor any of them neither, before they were persuaded to be fools, and to be of a voluntary fondness to venture the loss of all for nobody knows what.[c] He moreover objected the base and low estate and condition of those that were chiefly the pilgrims of the times in which they lived; also their ignorance, and want of understanding in all natural science. Yea, he did hold me to it at that rate also about a great many more things than here I relate; as, that it was a shame to sit whining and mourning under a sermon, and a shame to come sighing and groaning home; that it was a shame to ask my neighbour forgiveness for petty faults, or to make restitution where I have taken from any. He said also, that religion made a man grow strange to the great because of a few vices, which he called by finer names; and made him own and respect the base, because of the same religious fraternity: and is not this, said he, a shame?*

c John vii. 48. 1 Cor. i. 26. iii. 18. Phil. iii. 7—9.

* Nothing can be a stronger proof, that we have lost the image of God, than that shame which is natural to us concerning the things of God. This shame, joined to the fear of man, is a very powerful adversary to God's truth, Christ's glory, and our soul's comfort. Better at once get out of our pain, by declaring boldly for Christ and his cause, than stand shivering on the brink of profession, ever dreading the loss of our good name and reputation: for Christ says, (awful words!) "Whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed when he cometh in the glory of his Father," Mark viii. 38. It is one thing to be attacked by shame, and another to be conquered by it.

CHR. And what did you say to him?

FAITH. Say? I could not tell what to say at first. Yea, he put me so to it, that my blood came up in my face; even this Shame fetched it up, and had almost beat me quite off. But at last I began to consider, that that which is highly esteemed among men is had in abomination with God.[d] And I thought again, this Shame tells me what men are, but it tells me nothing what God, or the word of God, is. And I thought, moreover, that at the day of doom we shall not be doomed to death or life according to the hectoring spirits of the world, but according to the wisdom and law of the Highest. Therefore, thought I, what God says is best, indeed is best, though all the men in the world are against it. Seeing, then, that God prefers his religion; seeing God prefers a tender conscience; seeing they that make themselves fools for the kingdom of heaven are wisest; and that the poor man that loveth Christ is richer than the greatest man in the world that hates him; Shame, depart, thou art an enemy to my salvation: shall I entertain thee against my sovereign Lord? how then shall I look him in the face at his coming? Should I now be ashamed of his ways and servants, how can I expect the blessing.[e] But indeed this Shame was a bold villain; I could scarcely shake him out of my company; yea, he would be haunting of me, and continually whispering me in the ear with some one or other of the infirmities that attend religion. But at last I told him that it was but in vain to attempt further in this business; for those things that he disdained, in those did I see most glory: and so at last I got past this importunate one. And when I had shaken him off, then I began to sing—

d Luke xvi. 15. e Mark viii. 38.

The trials that those men do meet withal,
That are obedient to the heavenly call,
Are manifold, and suited to the flesh,
And come, and come, and come again afresh;
That now, or sometime else, we by them may
Be taken, overcome, and cast away.
O let the pilgrims, let the pilgrims then,
Be vigilant, and quit themselves like men.

CHR. I am glad, my brother, that thou didst withstand this villain so bravely; for, of all, as thou sayest, I think he has the wrong name; for he is so bold as to follow us in the streets, and to attempt to put us to shame before all men; that is, to make us ashamed of that which is good.* But if he was not himself audacious, he would never attempt to do as he does: but let us still resist him; for, notwithstanding all his bravadoes, he promoteth the fool, and none else. The wise shall inherit glory, said Solomon, but shame shall be the promotion of fools.[f]

FAITH. I think we must cry to Him for help against Shame, that would have us to be valiant for truth upon the earth.

CHR. You say true; but did you meet nobody else in that valley?

FAITH. No, not I; for I had sunshine all the rest of the way through that, and also through the Valley of the Shadow of Death.

f Prov. iii. 35.

* Christians' experiences perfectly agree in regard to shame. No one ever set out for glory, but he was attacked by shame in the way. Giving way to shame, prevents much glory being brought to our God-Jesus, who is not ashamed to call us, who are cursed, hell-deserving sinners, "brethren," Heb. ii. 11. Alas! shame to us, we are prone to glory in our shame, and to be ashamed of Christ, of his words, and of his ways, which are our greatest glory. O let us cry for more boldness for Christ, our best friend, that Shame may hide his pitifu. head, and skulk away from us as our greatest enemy!

CHR. 'Twas well for you; I am sure it fared far otherwise with me. I had for a long season, as soon almost as I entered into that valley, a dreadful combat with that foul fiend Apollyon; yea, I thought verily he would have killed me, especially when he got me down, and crushed me under him, as if he would have crushed me to pieces; for as he threw me, my sword flew out of my hand: nay, he told me he was sure of me; but I cried to God, and he heard me, and delivered me out of all my troubles. Then I entered into the Valley of the Shadow of Death, and had no light for almost half the way through it. I thought I should have been killed there over and over: but at last day brake, and the sun rose, and I went through that which was behind with far more ease and quiet.

Moreover, I saw in my dream, that, as they went on, Faithful, as he chanced to look on one side, saw a man whose name is Talkative, walking at a distance beside them;* for in this place there was room enough for them all to walk. He was a tall man, and something more comely at a distance than at hand. To this man Faithful addressed himself in this manner.

TALKATIVE DESCRIBED.

FAITH. Friend, whither away? Are you going to the heavenly country?

TALK. I am going to the same place.

FAITH. That is well: then I hope we shall have your good company.

TALK. With a very good will, will I be your companion.

* There is a great difference between having notions in the head, and being able to talk of doctrines of grace—and experiencing the grace and power of those doctrines in the heart. Look to yourselves, 2 John 8.

FAITHFUL AND TALKATIVE ENTER INTO DISCOURSE.

FAITH. Come on, then, and let us go together, and let us spend our time in discoursing of things that are profitable.

TALKATIVE'S DISLIKE OF BAD DISCOURSE.

TALK. To talk of things that are good, to me is very acceptable, with you, or with any other; and I am glad that I have met with those that incline to so good a work; for, to speak the truth, there are but few who care thus to spend their time as they are in their travels, but choose much rather to be speaking of things to no profit; and this hath been a trouble to me.

FAITH. That is, indeed, a thing to be lamented; for what things so worthy of the use of the tongue and mouth of men on earth, as are the things of the God of heaven?

TALK. I like you wonderfully well, for your sayings are full of conviction; and I will add, what thing is so pleasant, and what so profitable, as to talk of the things of God? What things so pleasant? that is, if a man hath any delight in things that are wonderful. For instance: if a man doth delight to talk of the history or the mystery of things; or if a man doth love to talk of miracles, wonders, or signs, where shall he find things recorded so delightful, and so sweetly penned, as in the holy scripture?

FAITH. That's true; but to be profited by such things in our talk, should be that which we design.

TALKATIVE'S FINE DISCOURSE.

TALK. That is it that I said; for to talk of such things is most profitable; for by so doing a man may get knowledge of many things; as, of the vanity of earthly things, and the benefit of things above. Thus in general: but more particularly, by this a man may learn the necessity of the new birth, the insufficiency of our works, the need of Christ's

righteousness, &c. Besides, by this a man may learn what it is to repent, to believe, to pray, to suffer, or the like: by this also a man may learn what are the great promises and consolations of the gospel, to his own comfort. Further, by this a man may learn to refute false opinions, to vindicate the truth, and also to instruct the ignorant.*

FAITH. All this is true; and glad am I to hear these things from you.

TALK. Alas! the want of this is the cause that so few understand the need of faith, and the necessity of a work of grace in their soul, in order to eternal life; but ignorantly live in the works of the law, by which a man can by no means obtain the kingdom of heaven.

FAITH. But, by your leave, heavenly knowledge of these is the gift of God; no man attaineth to them by human industry, or only by the talk of them.

TALK. All that I know very well; for a man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven: all is of grace, not of works. I could give you a hundred scriptures for the confirmation of this.

OH, BRAVE TALKATIVE!

FAITH. Well, then, said Faithful, what is that one thing that we shall at this time found our discourse upon?

TALK. What you will: I will talk of things heavenly, or things earthly; things moral, or things evangelical; things sacred, or things pro-

OH, BRAVE TALKATIVE!

* Is not here the very standard of orthodoxy? Hence observe, a mere professor may learn, like a parrot, to talk of sound doctrines, and he may have a sound judgment about them; while his heart is rotten, as to any experience of them, love to them, and the power and influence of them upon his affections and his life. Many own Christ for their master now, whom he will condemn hereafter as their judge.

fane; things past, or things to come; things foreign, or things at home; things more essential, or things circumstantial, provided that all be done to our profit.

FAITHFUL BEGUILED BY TALKATIVE.

FAITH. Now did Faithful begin to wonder; and stepping to Christian, (for he walked all this while by himself,) he said to him, but softly, What a brave companion have we got! Surely this man will make a very excellent pilgrim.

CHRISTIAN MAKES A DISCOVERY OF TALKATIVE, TELLING FAITHFUL WHO HE WAS.

CHR. At this Christian modestly smiled, and said, This man, with whom you are so taken, will beguile with this tongue of his, twenty of them that know him not.

FAITH. Do you know him, then?

CHR. Know him! Yes, better than he knows himself.

FAITH. Pray what is he?

CHR. His name is Talkative: he dwelleth in our town. I wonder that you should be a stranger to him; only I consider that our town is large.

FAITH. Whose son is he? and whereabout doth he dwell?

CHR. He is the son of one Say-well, he dwelt in Prating-row; and he is known to all that are acquainted with him by the name of Talkative, of Prating-row; and, notwithstanding his fine tongue, he is but a sorry fellow.*

FAITH. Well, he seems to be a very pretty man.

CHR. That is, to them that have not a thorough acquaintance with him, for he is best abroad; near home

* Are we not forbid to speak evil of any man? Titus iii. 2. Is not Christian guilty of this? No, for where the glory of God and the honour of the gospel is at stake, and there is danger of a brother's being deceived by a mere talkative, loose, wicked professor, here it is right, and the nature of things require it, that we should detect and expose such in a becoming spirit.

he is ugly enough. Your saying that he is a pretty man, brings to my mind what I have observed in the work of the painter, whose pictures show best at a distance; but very near, more unpleasing.

FAITH. But I am ready to think you do but jest, because you smiled.

CHR. God forbid that I should jest (though I smiled) in this matter, or that I should accuse any falsely. I will give you a further discovery of him. This man is for any company, and for any talk; as he talketh now with you, so will he talk when he is on the ale-bench; and the more drink he hath in his crown, the more of these things he hath in his mouth. Religion hath no place in his heart, or house, or conversation; all he hath lieth in his tongue, and his religion is to make a noise therewith.*

FAITH. Say you so? Then am I in this man greatly deceived.

CHR. Deceived! you may be sure of it. Remember the proverb, "They say, and do not:" but the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.[g] He talketh of prayer, of repentance, of faith, and of the new birth; but he knows but only to talk of them. I have been in his family, and have observed him both at home and abroad; and I know what I say of him is the truth. His house is as empty of religion as the white of an egg is of savour. There is there neither prayer, nor

TALKATIVE TALKS, BUT DOES NOT.

HIS HOUSE IS EMPTY OF RELIGION.

g Matt. xxiii. 3. 1 Cor. iv. 20.

* Such professors there are now, as there always were. The most blessed cause is wounded by them, and the most glorious truths are brought into contempt through them. There is more hurt to be got by them, than from the utterly ignorant and openly profane. Shun and avoid such.

sign of repentance for sin; yea, the brute, in his kind, serves God far better than he. He is the very stain, reproach, and shame of religion to all that know him;[h] it can hardly have a good word in all that end of the town where he dwells, through him. Thus say the common people that know him, "A saint abroad, and a devil at home." His poor family finds it so; he is such a churl, such a railer at, and so unreasonable with his servants, that they neither know how to do for, or to speak to him. Men that have any dealings with him say, It is better to deal with a Turk than with him, for fairer dealings they shall have at their hands. This Talkative (if it be possible) will go beyond them, defraud, beguile, and overreach them. Besides, he brings up his sons to follow his steps; and if he finds in any of them a foolish timorousness, (for so he calls the first appearance of a tender conscience,) he calls them fools and blockheads, and by no means will employ them in much, or speak to their commendation before others. For my part, I am of opinion, that he has, by his wicked life, caused many to stumble and fall; and will be, if God prevents not, the ruin of many more.*

HE IS A STAIN TO RELIGION.

THE PROVERB THAT GOES OF HIM.

MEN SHUN TO DEAL WITH HIM.

h Rom. ii. 23, 24.

* Read this and tremble, ye whose profession lies only on your tongue, but who never knew the love and grace of Christ in your souls. O how do you trifle with the grace of God, with precious Christ, and with the holy word of truth! O what an awful account have you to give hereafter to a holy, heart-searching God! Ye true pilgrims of Jesus, read this, and give glory to your Lord, for saving you from resting in barren notions, and taking up with talking of truths; and that he has given you to know the truth in its power, to embrace it in your heart, and to live and walk under its constraining, sanctifying influence. Who made you to differ?

FAITH. Well, my brother, I am bound to believe you, not only because you say you know him, but also because, like a Christian, you make your reports of men. For I cannot think that you speak these things of ill-will, but because it is even so as you say.

CHR. Had I known him no more than you, I might, perhaps, have thought of him as at the first you did; yea, had I received this report at their hands only that are enemies to religion, I should have thought it had been a slander,—a lot that often falls from bad men's mouths upon good men's names and professions. But all these things, yea, and a great many more as bad, of my own knowledge, I can prove him guilty of. Besides, good men are ashamed of him; they can neither call him brother nor friend; the very naming of him among them makes them blush, if they know him.

FAITH. Well, I see that saying and doing are two things, and hereafter I shall better observe this distinction.

CHR. They are two things indeed, and are as diverse as are the soul and the body; for, as the body without the soul is but a dead carcase, so saying, if it be alone, is but a dead carcase also. THE CARCASE OF RELIGION. The soul of religion is the practical part: "pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world."[i] This, Talkative is not aware of; he thinks that hearing and saying will make a good Christian; and thus he deceiveth his own soul. Hearing is but as the sowing of the seed; talking is not sufficient to prove that fruit is indeed in the heart and life. And let us assure ourselves, that at the day of doom, men shall be judged according to their fruit.[k]

i James i. 22—27 k Matt. xiii. 23.

It will not be said then, Did you believe? but, Were you doers, or talkers only?* and accordingly shall they be judged. The end of the world is compared to our harvest; and you know, men at harvest regard nothing but fruit. Not that any thing can be accepted that is not of faith; but I speak this to show you how insignificant the profession of Talkative will be at that day.

FAITH. This brings to my mind that of Moses, by which he describeth the beast that is clean.[1] He is such an one that parteth the hoof, and cheweth the cud; not that parteth the hoof only, or that cheweth the cud only. The hare cheweth the cud, but yet is unclean, because he parteth not the hoof. And this truly resembleth Talkative; he cheweth the cud, he seeketh knowledge; he cheweth upon the word, but he divideth not the hoof. He parteth not with the way of sinners; but, as the hare, he retaineth the foot of a dog or bear, and therefore he is unclean.

FAITHFUL CONVINCED OF THE BADNESS OF TALKATIVE.

CHR. You have spoken, for aught I know, the true gospel sense of these texts; and I will add another

1 Lev. xi. Deut. xiv.

* Though sinners are redeemed, and their sins for ever washed away by the blood of Christ—though they are fully justified in the righteousness of Christ—though the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ; yet none are partakers of these invaluable blessings, but those who partake of precious faith in Christ. And this faith, which is the gift of God, the faith of God's elect, manifests itself by its obedience to the will of God, and in bringing forth fruits to the glory of God. Though the persons of the saints will not be justified, and have eternal life bestowed upon them, for the sake of their works, or because their works merited justification and salvation; but their works will be declared to justify their faith in the Lord their righteousness and salvation; that as they professed to believe in him, so they manifested their love to him by being obedient to his commands. Therefore, let no one deceive himself. For faith without works is dead, and a dead faith never begets living hope upon a risen Saviour; nor will it avail, when he shall appear as the Judge.

thing: Paul calleth some men, yea, and those great talkers too, sounding brass and tinkling cymbals; that is, as he expounds them in another place, things without life, giving sound.[m] Things without life; that is, without the true faith and grace of the gospel; and, consequently, things that shall never be placed in the kingdom of heaven among those that are the children of life; though their sound, by their talk, be as if it were the tongue or voice of an angel.

TALKATIVE LIKE TWO THINGS THAT SOUND, WITHOUT LIFE

FAITH. Well, I was not so fond of his company at first, but I am as sick of it now. What shall we do to be rid of him?

CHR. Take my advice, and do as I bid you, and you shall find that he will soon be sick of your company too, except God shall touch his heart and turn it.

FAITH. What would you have me to do?

CHR. Why, go to him, and enter into some serious discourse about the *power* of religion; and ask him plainly, (when he has approved of it, for that he will,) whether this thing be set up in his heart, house, or conversation.*

Then Faithful stepped forward again, and said to Talkative, Come, what cheer? how is it now?

TALK. Thank you, well; I thought we should have had a great deal of talk by this time.

FAITH. Well, if you will, we will fall to it now: and since you left it with me to state the question, let it be

m 1 Cor. xiii. 1—3. xiv. 7.

* Without this, all is but empty notion, mere sound, and unavailing profession. Men only take up fancy for faith; the form of godliness instead of the power; and the old nature is dressed up in the specious appearance of new pretensions. True faith will ever show itself by its fruits: a real conversion, by the life and conversation. Be not deceived; God is not mocked with the tongue, if the heart be not right towards him in love and obedience.

this: How doth the saving grace of God discover itself when it is in the heart of man?

TALKATIVE'S FALSE DISCOVERY OF A WORK OF GRACE.

TALK. I perceive, then, that our talk must be about the power of things. Well, it is a very good question, and I shall be willing to answer you; and take my answer in brief thus: First, where the grace of God is in the heart, it causeth there a great outcry against sin. Secondly,—

FAITH. Nay, hold; let us consider of one at once. I think you should rather say, It shows itself by inclining the soul to abhor its sin.

TALK. Why, what difference is there between crying out against, and abhorring of sin?

TO CRY OUT AGAINST SIN NO SIGN OF GRACE.

FAITH. Oh! a great deal. A man may cry out against sin, of policy; but he cannot abhor it but by virtue of a godly antipathy against it. I have heard many cry out against sin in the pulpit, who yet can abide it well enough in the heart, house, and conversation. Joseph's mistress cried out with a loud voice, as if she had been very holy; but she would willingly, notwithstanding that, have committed uncleanness with him.[n] Some cry out against sin, even as the mother cries out against her child in her lap, when she calls it slut and naughty girl, and then falls to hugging and kissing it.

TALK. You lie at the catch, I perceive.

FAITH. No, not I, I am only for setting things right. But what is the second thing whereby you would prove a discovery of a work of grace in the heart?

TALK. Great knowledge of gospel mysteries.

GREAT KNOWLEDGE NO SIGN OF GRACE.

FAITH. This sign should have been first: but, first or last, it is also false; for knowledge, great knowledge, may be obtained in the myste-

n Gen. xxxix. 11—15.

ries of the gospel, and yet no work of grace in the soul.[o] Yea, if a man have all knowledge, he may yet be nothing, and so, consequently, be no child of God. When Christ said, "Do ye know all these things?" and the disciples had answered, Yes, he added, "Blessed are ye, if ye do them." He doth not lay the blessing in the knowing of them, but in the doing of them. For there is a knowledge that is not attended with doing: "he that knoweth his master's will, and doeth it not." A man may know like an angel, and yet be no Christian: therefore your sign of it is not true. Indeed, to *know* is a thing that pleaseth talkers and boasters; but to *do*, is that which pleaseth God. Not that the heart can be good without knowledge, for without that the heart is naught. There is, therefore, knowledge and knowledge: knowledge that resteth in the bare speculation of things, and knowledge that is accompanied with the grace of faith and love, which puts a man upon doing even the will of God from the heart: the first of these will serve the talker; but without the other, the true Christian is not content. "Give me understanding, and I shall keep thy law; yea, I shall observe it with my whole heart."[p]

KNOWLEDGE AND KNOWLEDGE.

TRUE KNOWLEDGE ATTENDED WITH ENDEAVOURS.

TALK. You lie at the catch again; this is not for edification.*

FAITH. Well, if you please, propound another sign how this work of grace discovereth itself where it is.

TALK. Not I; for I see we shall not agree.

FAITH. Well, if you will not, will you give me leave to do it?

o 1 Cor. xiii. 2. p Psalm cxix. 34.

* Ay, but it certainly is for self-examination and soul-direction. Better so, than to be edified in false hopes and soul-deceivings.

TALK. You may use your liberty.

FAITH. A work of grace in the soul discovereth itself, either to him that hath it, or to standers-by.

ONE GOOD SIGN OF GRACE.

To him that hath it, thus: It gives him conviction of sin, especially of the defilement of his nature, and the sin of unbelief, for the sake of which he is sure to be damned, if he findeth not mercy at God's hand, by faith in Jesus Christ.[q] This sight and sense of things worketh in him sorrow and shame for sin; he findeth, moreover, revealed in him the Saviour of the world, and the absolute necessity of closing with him for life; at the which he findeth hungerings and thirstings after him; to which hungerings, &c. the promise is made.[r] Now, according to the strength or weakness of his faith in his Saviour, so is his joy and peace, so is his love to holiness, so are his desires to know him more, and also to serve him in this world. But though, I say, it discovereth itself thus unto him, yet it is but seldom that he is able to conclude that this is a work of grace; because his corruptions now, and his abused reason, make his mind to misjudge in this matter: therefore in him that hath this work there is required a very sound judgment, before he can with steadiness conclude that this is a work of grace.

To others it is thus discovered:

First, By an experimental confession of his faith in Christ. Secondly, By a life answerable to that confession; to wit, a life of holiness; heart-holiness, family-holiness, (if he hath a family,) and by conversation-holiness in the world; which in the general teacheth him inwardly to abhor his sin, and himself for that, in secret; to suppress it in his family, and to promote

q Mark xvi. 16. John xvi. 8, 9. Rom. vii. 24.
r Psalm xxxviii. 18. Jer. xxxi. 19. Matt. v. 6. Acts iv. 12. Gal. i. 15, 16. Rev. xxx. 6

holiness in the world: not by talk only, as an hypocrite or talkative person may do, but by a practical subjection in faith and love to the power of the word.[s]* And now, sir, as to this brief description of the work of grace, and also the discovery of it, if you have aught to object, object; if not, then give me leave to propound to you a second question.

TALK. Nay, my part is not now to object, but to hear: let me, therefore, have your second question.

FAITH. It is this: Do you experience this first part of the description of it? and doth your life and conversation testify the same? Or, standeth your religion in word or tongue, and not in deed and truth? Pray, if you incline to answer me in this, say no more than you know the God above will say Amen to; and also nothing but what your conscience can justify you in: "for not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth." Besides, to say I am thus and thus, when my conversation and all my neighbours tell me I lie, is great wickedness.†

ANOTHER GOOD SIGN OF GRACE.

TALK. Then Talkative at first began to blush; but, recovering himself, thus he replied: You come now to experience, to conscience, and God; and to appeal to

s Psalm l. 23. Ezek. xx. 43, 44. Matt. v. 8. John xiv. 15. Rom. x. 9, 10. Phil. iii. 17—20.

* This, and this only, is what will evidence that we are the real disciples of Christ, honour his name and his truths, and recommend his religion in the world. Without this power of godliness, we have only a name to live, while we are dead to the power of the gospel. Examine yourselves: look to your ways.

† Blessed, faithful dealing! O that it were more practised in the world and in the church! How then would vain talkers be detected in the one, and driven out of the other!

him for justification of what is spoken. This kind of discourse I did not expect; nor am I disposed to give an answer to such questions: because I count not myself bound thereto, unless you take upon you to be a catechiser; and though you should so do, yet I may refuse to make you my judge. But, I pray, will you tell me why you ask me such questions?*

TALKATIVE NOT PLEASED WITH FAITHFUL'S QUESTION.

FAITH. Because I saw you forward to talk, and because I knew not that you had aught else but notion. Besides, to tell you all the truth, I have heard of you, that you are a man whose religion lies in talk, and that your conversation gives this your mouth-profession the lie. They say you are a spot among Christians; and that religion fareth the worse for your ungodly conversation; that some have already stumbled at your wicked ways, and that more are in danger of being destroyed thereby; your religion and an alehouse, and covetousness, and uncleanness, and swearing, and lying, and vain company-keeping, &c. will stand together. The proverb is true of you which is said of a whore, to wit, that "She is a shame to all women;" so are you a shame to all professors.

THE REASON WHY FAITHFUL PUT TO HIM THAT QUESTION.

FAITHFUL'S PLAIN DEALING WITH TALKATIVE.

TALK. Since you are so ready to take up reports, and to judge so rashly as you do, I cannot but conclude you are some peevish or

TALKATIVE FLINGS AWAY FROM FAITHFUL.

* Heart-searching, soul-examining, and close-questioning of the conduct of life, will not do with talkative professors. Ring a peal on the doctrines of grace, and many will chime in with you; but speak closely how grace operates upon the heart, and influences the life to follow Christ in self-denying obedience, they cannot bear it; they are offended with you, and will turn away from you, and call you legal.

melancholic man, not fit to be discoursed with: and so, adieu.*

CHR. Then came up Christian, and said to his brother, I told you how it would happen; your words and his lusts could not agree. He had rather leave your company than reform his life; but he is gone, as I said: let him go, the loss is no man's A GOOD RIDDANCE. but his own. He has saved us the trouble of going from him; for he continuing (as I suppose he will do) as he is, he would have been but a blot in our company: besides, the apostle says, "From such withdraw thyself."

FAITH. But I am glad we had this little discourse with him; it may happen that he will think of it again: however, I have dealt plainly with him, and so am clear of his blood if he perisheth.†

CHR. You did well to talk so plainly to him as you did; there is but little of this faithful dealing with men now-a-days, and that makes religion to stink so in the nostrils of many as it doth: for they are these talkative fools, whose religion is only in word, and are debauched and vain in their conversation, that, being so much admitted into the fellowship of the godly, do puzzle the world, blemish Christianity, and grieve the sincere. I wish that all men would deal with such as you have done; then should they either be made more conform-

* Where the heart is rotten, it will ward off conviction, turn from a faithful reprover, condemn him, and justify itself. Faithful dealing will not do for unfaithful souls. Mind not that, but be faithful to the truth.

† Mind this. These are right principles to act from, and right ends to act to, in faithfully reproving, or aiming to convict our fellow-sinners. Study and pursue these.

able to religion, or the company of saints would be too hot for them. Then did Faithful say—

> How Talkative at first lifts up his plumes!
> How bravely doth he speak! How he presumes
> To drive down all before him! But so soon
> As Faithful talks of heart-work, like the moon
> That's past the full, into the wane he goes;
> And so will all but he that heart-work knows.

Thus they went on, talking of what they had seen by the way, and so made that way easy which would otherwise, no doubt, have been tedious to them: for now they went through a wilderness.*

Now, when they were got almost quite out of this wilderness, Faithful chanced to cast his eye back, and espied one coming after them, and he knew him. Oh! said Faithful to his brother, who comes yonder?—Then Christian looked, and said, It is my good friend Evangelist. Ay, and my good friend too, said Faithful, for it was he that set me in the way to the Gate. Now was Evangelist come up unto them, and thus saluted them,

EVANGELIST OVERTAKES THEM.

EVAN. Peace be with you, dearly beloved; and peace be to your helpers.

CHR. Welcome, welcome, my good Evangelist; the sight of thy countenance brings to my remembrance thy ancient kindness and unwearied labours for my eternal good.

THEY ARE GLAD AT THE SIGHT OF HIM.

* Spiritual observations and conferences on past experience, are very animating and enlivening to the soul. They very often change the wilderness of dejection into a garden of delights; and so beguile the weary steps of pilgrims through tedious paths. O Christians, look more to Christ, and talk more to each other of his love to you, and dealings with you, for soul humbling and Christ exalting.

FAITH. And a thousand times welcome, said good Faithful; thy company, O sweet Evangelist, how desirable is it to us poor pilgrims !*

EVAN. Then said Evangelist, How hath it fared with you, my friends, since the time of our last parting? What have you met with,† and how have you behaved yourselves?

Then Christian and Faithful told him of all things that had happened to them in the way; and how, and with what difficulty, they had arrived to that place.

EVAN. Right glad am I, said Evangelist, not that you have met with trials, but that you have been victors, and for that you have, notwithstanding many weaknesses, continued in the way to this very day.

HIS EXHORTATION TO THEM.

I say, right glad am I of this thing, and that for mine own sake and yours. I have sowed, and you have reaped; and the day is coming, when "both he that sowed and they that reaped shall rejoice together;" that is, if you hold out; "for in due time ye shall reap, if ye faint not."[t] The crown is before you, and it is an incorruptible one; so run, that you may obtain it." Some there be that set out for this crown, and after they have gone far for it, another comes in and takes it from them; "hold fast, therefore, that you have; let no

t John iv. 36. Gal. vi. 9.

* A sincere and cordial love for gospel ministers, under a sense of their being made instrumental to our souls' profit, is a sure and blessed sign of a pilgrim's spirit.

† To inquire after soul-concerns and soul-experience and prosperity, should always be the business of faithful ministers of Christ: but is not this sadly neglected? O how often do ministers visit and depart without close, savoury, experimental converse with their people! Hence, both suffer present loss, and much harm in the consequence.

man take your crown."[u] You are not yet out of the gun-shot of the devil: "you have not resisted unto "blood, striving against sin:" let the kingdom be always before you, and believe steadfastly concerning the things that are invisible: let nothing that is on this side the other world get within you: and, above all, look well to your own hearts and to the lusts thereof, for they are "deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked." Set your faces like a flint; you have all power in heaven and earth on your side.*

THEY DO THANK HIM FOR HIS EXHORTATIONS.

CHR. Then Christian thanked him for his exhortation; but told him withal, that they would have him speak further to them for their help the rest of the way; and the rather, for that they well knew that he was a prophet, and could tell them of things that might happen unto them, and also how they might resist and overcome them. To which request Faithful also consented. So Evangelist began as followeth.

HE PREDICTETH WHAT TROUBLES THEY SHALL MEET WITH IN VANITY FAIR, AND ENCOURAGETH THEM TO STEADFASTNESS.

EVAN. My sons, you have heard in the words of the truth of the gospel, "that you must through many tribulations enter into the kingdom of heaven." And again, that "in every city bonds and afflictions abide you;" and therefore you cannot expect that you should go long on your pilgrimage without them, in some sort or other. You have found something of the truth of these testimonies upon you already, and more will immediately follow: for now, as you see, you are

u 1 Cor. ix. 24—27. Rev. iii. 11.

* Here is a blessed word of encouragement, of warning, and of exhortation to be steadfast in faith, joyful in hope, watchful over our hearts, and to abound in the work of the Lord. All this is constantly necessary for pilgrims. Faithful ministers will give advice, and pilgrims will be thankful for such.

almost out of this wilderness, and therefore you will soon come into a town that you will by and by see before you: and in that town you will be hardly beset with enemies, who will strain hard but they will kill you: and be you sure that one or both of you must seal the testimony, which you hold, with blood; but "be you faithful unto death, and the King will give you a crown of life." He that shall die there, although his death will be unnatural, and his pain, perhaps, great, he will yet have the better of his fellow, not only because he will be arrived at the Celestial City soonest, but because he will escape many miseries that the other will meet with in the rest of his journey. But when you are come to the town, and shall find fulfilled what I have here related, then remember your friend, and quit yourselves like men; and commit the keeping of your souls to your God in well-doing, as unto a faithful Creator."*

HE WHOSE LOT IT WILL BE THERE TO SUFFER, WILL HAVE THE BETTER OF HIS BROTHER.

Then I saw in my dream, that when they were got out of the wilderness, they presently saw a town before them, and the name of that town is Vanity; and at the town there is a fair kept, called Vanity Fair. It is kept all the year long: it beareth the name of Vanity Fair, because the town where it is kept is lighter than vanity, and also because all that is there sold, or that cometh thither, is vanity. As is the saying of the wise, "All that cometh is vanity."[v]

v Eccles. i. 2, 14. ii. 11, 17. xi. 8. Isa. xl. 17.

* Wo unto them who fold their hands, and fall asleep in strong confidence. You see what hard work yet lay before these pilgrims. Let us ever remember, this is not our rest. We must be pressing forward, fighting the good fight of faith, labouring to enter into that rest which remaineth for the people of God: looking diligently, lest we fail of the grace of God, Heb. xii. 15.

This fair is no new-erected business, but a thing of ancient standing: I will show you the original of it.

THE ANTIQUITY OF THIS FAIR.

Almost five thousand years ago, there were pilgrims walking to the Celestial City, as these two honest persons are; and Beelzebub, Apollyon, and Legion, with their companions, perceiving by the path that the pilgrims made, that their way to the city lay through this town of Vanity, they contrived here to set up a fair; a fair wherein should be sold all sorts of vanity; and that it should last all the year long. Therefore, at this fair are all such merchandise sold, as houses, lands, trades, places, honours, preferments, titles, countries, kingdoms, lusts, pleasures; and delights of all sorts, as whores, bawds, wives, husbands, children, masters, servants, lives, blood, bodies, souls, silver, gold, pearls, precious stones, and what not.

THE MERCHANDISE OF THIS FAIR.

And, moreover, at this fair there is at all times to be seen jugglings, cheats, games, plays, fools, apes, knaves, and rogues, and that of every kind.

Here are to be seen too, and that for nothing, thefts, murders, adulteries, false-swearers, and that of a blood-red colour.*

And, as in other fairs of less moment, there are several rows and streets under their proper names,

* A just description of this wicked world. How many, though they profess to be pilgrims, have never yet set one foot out of this fair, but live in it all the year round! They walk according to the course of this world, Eph. ii. 2, for the god of this world hath blinded their minds, 2 Cor. iv. 4. But all those for whose sins Jesus hath died, "he delivers from this present evil world," Gal. i. 4. You cannot be a pilgrim, if you are not delivered from this world and its vanities; for if you love the world, if it has your supreme affections, the love of God is not in you, 1 John ii. 15, you have not one grain of precious faith in precious Jesus.

G. Cruikshank.

where such wares are vended; so here, likewise, you have the proper places, rows, streets, (viz. countries and kingdoms,) where the wares of this fair are soonest to be found. Here is the Britain-row, the French-row, the Italian-row, the Spanish-row, the German-row, where several sorts of vanities are to be sold. But, as in other fairs, some one commodity is the chief of all the fair, so the ware of Rome and her merchandise is greatly promoted in this fair: only our English nation, with some others, have taken a dislike thereat.*

THE STREETS OF THE FAIR.

Now, as I said, the way to the Celestial City lies just through this town where this lusty fair is kept; and he that will go to the city, and yet not go through this town, must needs go out of the world. The Prince of princes himself, when here, went through this town to his own country, and that upon a fair-day too: yea, and, as I think, it was Beelzebub, the chief lord of this fair, that invited him to buy of his vanities; yea, would have made him lord of the fair, would he but have done him reverence as he went through the town: yea, because he was such a person of honour, Beelzebub had him from street to street, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a little time, that he might, if possible, allure that blessed One to cheapen and buy some of his vanities: but he had no

CHRIST WENT THROUGH THIS FAIR.

* The doctrine of the church of Rome. It is much to be wished that the vile Romish ware, of man's bartering with God, and purchasing a title to heaven by his performing terms and conditions of salvation, meriting heaven by his good works, and procuring justification by his own obedience, to the exalting his pride, and the debasing the work and glory of Christ, was totally rejected by us, and banished from us. But, alas! these proud, unscriptural notions too much prevail among us.

CHRIST BOUGHT NOTHING IN THIS FAIR.

mind to the merchandise, and therefore left the town, without laying out so much as one farthing upon these vanities.[w] This fair, therefore, is an ancient thing, of long standing, and a very great fair.

THE PILGRIMS ENTER THE FAIR.

Now, these pilgrim, as I said, must needs go through this fair. Well, so they did; but behold, even as they entered into the fair, all the people in the fair were moved, and the town itself, as it were, in a hubbub about them, and that for several reasons: for,

THE FAIR IN A HUBBUB ABOUT THEM.

THE FIRST CAUSE OF THE HUBBUB.

First, The Pilgrims were clothed with such kind of raiment, as was diverse from the raiment of any that traded in that fair. The people, therefore, of the fair made a great gazing upon them: some said they were fools;[x] some, they were bedlams; and some, they were outlandish men.

THE SECOND CAUSE OF THE HUBBUB.

Secondly, And as they wondered at their apparel, so they did likewise at their speech; for few could understand what they said. They naturally spoke the language of Canaan; but they that kept the fair were the men of this world: so that from one end of the fair to the other they seemed barbarians each to the other.

THIRD CAUSE OF THE HUBBUB.

Thirdly, But that which did not a little amuse the merchandisers was, that these pilgrims set very light by all their wares; they cared not so much as to look upon them: and if they called upon them to buy, they would put their fingers in their ears, and cry, "Turn away mine eyes from beholding vanity;"[y] and look upwards, signifying that their trade and traffic was in heaven.

w Matt. iv. 8, 9. Luke iv. 5—7. x 1 Cor. iv. 9, 10. y Psalm cxix. 37.

One chanced, mockingly, beholding the carriage of the men, to say unto them, What will ye buy? But they, looking gravely upon him, said, We buy the truth.[z]* At that, there was an occasion taken to despise the men the more, some mocking, some taunting, some speaking reproachfully, and some calling upon others to smite them. At last, things came to an hubbub and great stir in the fair, insomuch that all order was confounded. Now was word presently brought to the great one of the fair, who quickly came down, and deputed some of his most trusty friends to take those men into examination, about whom the fair was almost overturned. So the men were brought to examination; and they that sate upon them asked them whence they came, whither they went, and what they did there in such an unusual garb? The men told them, that they were pilgrims and strangers in the world, and that they were going to their own country, which was the heavenly Jerusalem;[a] and that they had given no occasion to the men of the town, nor yet to the

FOURTH CAUSE OF THE HUBBUB.

THEY ARE MOCKED.

THEY ARE EXAMINED.

THEY TELL WHO THEY ARE, AND WHENCE THEY CAME.

z Prov. xxiii. 23. a Heb. xi. 13—16.

* An odd reply. What do they mean? That they are neither afraid nor ashamed to own what was the one object of their souls' pursuit, THE TRUTH. Understand hereby, that the whole world, which lieth in wickedness, is deceived by a LIE, and is under the delusion of the father of lies. In opposition to this, all believers in Christ are said to be OF THE TRUTH, 1 John iii. 19. They know and believe that capital truth which God spake from heaven, "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased," Matt. iii. 17. This truth—that Jesus is the Son of God, and our only Saviour, lies at the foundation of all their hope; and to get more and more acquainted with him, is the grand object of their pursuit. For this, the world hates them; and Satan, who is an enemy to this truth, stirs up the world against them. "For (says our Lord) they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world," John xvii. 16.

merchandisers, thus to abuse them, and to lett them in their journey, except it was for that, when one asked them what they would buy, they said they would buy the truth. But they that were appointed to examine them did not believe them to be any other than bedlams and mad, or else such as came to put all things into a confusion in the fair.* Therefore they took them, and beat them, and besmeared them with dirt, and then put them into the cage, that they might be made a spectacle to all the men of the fair. There therefore they lay for some time, and were made the objects of any man's sport, or malice, or revenge; the great one of the fair laughing still at all that befell them. But, the men being patient, and not rendering railing for railing, but contrariwise blessing, and giving good words for bad, and kindness for injuries done, some men in the fair, that were more observing and less prejudiced than the rest, began to check and blame the baser sort for their continual abuses done by them to the men; they therefore, in angry manner, let fly at them again, counting them as bad as the men in the cage, and telling them that they seemed confederates, and should be made partakers of their misfortunes. The others replied, that, for aught they could see, the men were quiet and sober, and intended nobody any harm; and that there were many that traded in their fair that were more worthy to

THEY ARE NOT BELIEVED.

THEY ARE PUT IN THE CAGE.

THEIR BEHAVIOUR IN THE CAGE.

* If we have nothing about us, to distinguish us from the rest of the world which lieth in wickedness, and for which they will hate and despise us, we have no reason to conclude that we are new creatures in Christ Jesus. If we are Christ's, we must become fools for Christ, and be counted as mad, by those who know not Christ; for, if alive to Christ, we shall be crucified to the world.—"Wo be unto you, if all men speak well of you," saith Christ, Luke vi. 26.

be put into the cage, yea, and pillory too, than were the men that they had abused. Thus, after divers words had passed on both sides, (the men behaving themselves all the while very wisely and soberly before them,) they fell to some blows among themselves, and did harm one to another.* Then were these two poor men brought before their examiners again, and were charged as being guilty of the late hubbub that had been in the fair. So they beat them pitifully, and hanged irons upon them, and led them in chains up and down the fair, for an example and terror to others, lest any should speak in their behalf, or join themselves unto them. But Christian and Faithful behaved themselves yet more wisely, and received the ignominy and shame that was cast upon them with so much meekness and patience, that it won to their side† (though but few in comparison of the rest) several of the men in the fair. This put the other party yet into a greater rage, insomuch that they concluded the death of these two men. Wherefore they threatened, that neither cage nor irons should serve their turn, but that they should die for the abuse they had done, and for deluding the men of the fair.

THEY ARE MADE THE AUTHORS OF THIS DISTURBANCE.

THEY ARE LED UP AND DOWN THE FAIR IN CHAINS, FOR A TERROR TO OTHERS.

SOME MEN OF THE FAIR WON OVER TO THEM.

THEIR ADVERSARIES RESOLVE TO KILL THEM.

* It is common for the world to be divided in their opinions about pilgrims. A christian conduct and behaviour will put to silence the gainsaying of some wicked men; and sometimes win others to become followers of Christ. O pilgrims, look well to your spirit, temper, and conduct, towards the men of this world, who keep Vanity Fair all the year.

† It is acting in the spirit and temper of Christ that will gain adversaries over to him; whereas a contrary spirit is a dishonour to Christ, a reproach to his cause, never did good to others, nor left the soul in the solid possession of the peace of Christ.

THEY ARE AGAIN PUT INTO THE CAGE, AND AFTERWARDS BROUGHT TO TRIAL.

Then were they remanded to the cage again, until further order should be taken with them. So they put them in, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

Here, also, they called again to mind what they had heard from their faithful friend Evangelist, and were the more confirmed in their way and sufferings by what he told them would happen to them. They also now comforted each other, that whose lot it was to suffer, even he should have the best on't; therefore each man secretly wished that he might have that preferment: but committing themselves to the all-wise disposal of Him that ruleth all things, with much content they abode in the condition in which they were, until they should be otherwise disposed of.

Then a convenient time being appointed, they brought them forth to their trial, in order to their condemnation. When the time was come, they were brought before their enemies and arraigned. The judge's name was Lord Hate-good: their indictment was one and the same in substance, though somewhat varying in form; the contents whereof were these:

THEIR INDICTMENT.

"That they were enemies to, and disturbers of, the trade: that they had made commotions and divisions in the town, and had won a party to their own most dangerous opinions, in contempt of the law of their prince."*

FAITHFUL ANSWERS FOR HIMSELF.

Then Faithful began to answer, that he had only set himself against that which

* You see your calling, brethren. Has no such indictment been ever brought against you? Then it is to be feared, what Pharaoh said to the Israelites may be said to you, "Ye are idle, ye are idle," in the ways of the Lord; ye want love to his name, fervency for his truth, and zeal for his glory and the good of precious souls.

had set itself against Him that is higher than the highest. And, said he, as for disturbance, I make none, being myself a man of peace: the parties that were won to us, were won by beholding our truth and innocence, and they are only turned from the worse to the better. And as to the king you talk of, since he is Beelzebub, the enemy of our Lord, I defy him and all his angels.

Then proclamation was made, that they that had aught to say for their lord the king, against the prisoner at the bar, should forthwith appear, and give in their evidence. So there came in three witnesses, to wit, Envy, Superstition, and Pickthank. They were then asked, if they knew the prisoner at the bar, and what they had to say for their lord the king against him?

Then stood forth Envy, and said to this effect: My lord, I have known this man a long time, and ENVY BEGINS. will attest upon my oath before this honourable bench, that he is—

JUDGE. Hold, give him his oath.

So they sware him. Then he said, My lord, this man, notwithstanding his plausible name, is one of the vilest men in our country; he neither regardeth prince nor people, law nor custom, but doth all that he can to possess all men with certain of his disloyal notions, which he in the general calls "principles of faith and holiness." And, in particular, I heard him once myself affirm, that Christianity and the customs of our town of Vanity were diametrically opposite, and could not be reconciled. By which saying, my lord, he doth at once not only condemn all our laudable doings, but us in the doing of them.

JUDGE. Then did the judge say to him, Hast thou any more to say?

ENVY. My lord, I could say much more, only I would not be tedious to the court. Yet, if need be, when the other gentlemen have given in their evidence, rather than any thing shall be wanting that will despatch him, I will enlarge my testimony against him. So he was bid stand by.*

Then they called Superstition, and bid him look upon the prisoner; they also asked, what he could say for their lord the king against him? Then they sware him; so he began:

SUPERSTITION FOLLOWS.

SUPER. My lord, I have no great acquaintance with this man, nor do I desire to have further knowledge of him; however, this I know, that he is a very pestilent fellow, from some discourse that the other day I had with him in this town; for then, talking with him, I heard him say that our religion was naught, and such by which a man could by no means please God. Which saying of his, my lord, your lordship very well knows what necessarily thence will follow, to wit, that we still do worship in vain, are yet in our sins, and finally shall be damned: and this is that which I have to say.†

Then was Pickthank sworn, and bid say what he knew in behalf of their lord the king, against the prisoner at the bar.

* The Spirit of wisdom asks, "Who is able to stand before envy?" Prov. xxvii. 4. Envy is the very temper of the devil. It is natural to us all. But why should the children of this world envy God's children? for they are strangers to the spiritual good things they enjoy. They neither seek them, nor care for them, but laugh at and deride them. Herein the very spirit of Satan is manifest. He envied Christ being the Son of God; he stirred up Judas to betray him; the Jews for envy delivered him, Matt. xxvii. 18; and the same spirit works in all the children of Satan against the children of God.

† Superstition, or false devotion, is a most bitter enemy to Christ's truths and his followers. This fellow's evidence is very true; for, as the lawyers said of Christ's doctrine, "Master, thus saying, thou

PICK. My lord, and you gentlemen all, this fellow I have known of a long time, and have heard him speak things that ought not to be spoken; for he hath railed on our noble prince Beelzebub, and hath spoken contemptibly of his honourable friends, whose names are the Lord Old Man, the Lord Carnal Delight, the Lord Luxurious, the Lord Desire of Vain Glory, my old Lord Lechery, Sir Having Greedy, with all the rest of our nobility: and he hath said, moreover, that if all men were of his mind, if possible, there is not one of these noble men should have any longer a being in this town. Besides, he hath not been afraid to rail on you, my lord, who are now appointed to be his judge, calling you an ungodly villain, with many other such-like vilifying terms, with which he hath bespattered most of the gentry of our town.*

PICKTHANK'S TESTIMONY.

SINS ARE ALL LORDS AND GREAT ONES.

When this Pickthank had told his tale, the judge directed his speech to the prisoner at the bar, saying, Thou runagate, heretic, and traitor, hast thou heard what these honest gentlemen have witnessed against thee?

reproachest us also," Luke xi. 45; so false worshippers, who rest in forms and rites and shadows, are stung to the quick at those who worship God in the spirit, rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. Such a conduct pours the utmost contempt upon all the will-worship and doctrines and superstitions of carnal men.

* As soon as the poor sinner says, "O Lord our God, other lords beside thee have had dominion over me, but by thee only will I make mention of thy name," Isa. xxvi. 13, your officious Pickthanks are always ready to bear testimony against him: and a blessed testimony this is; it is well worth living to gain, and dying in the cause of. If we are real disciples of Christ, we shall, as he did, testify of the world, that the works thereof are evil, and the world will hate us for his sake, John vii. 7.

FAITH. May I speak a few words in my own defence?

JUDGE. Sirrah, sirrah, thou deservest to live no longer, but to be slain immediately upon the place; yet, that all men may see our gentleness towards thee, let us hear what thou, vile runagate, hast to say.

FAITHFUL'S DEFENCE OF HIMSELF.

FAITH. 1. I say then, in answer to what Mr. Envy hath spoken, I never said aught but this, that what rule, or laws, or custom, or people, were flat against the word of God, are diametrically opposite to Christianity. If I have said amiss in this, convince me of my error, and I am ready here before you to make my recantation.

2. As to the second, to wit, Mr. Superstition, and his charge against me, I said only this, that in the worship of God there is required a divine faith; but there can be no divine faith without a divine revelation of the will of God. Therefore, whatever is thrust into the worship of God that is not agreeable to divine revelation, cannot be done but by a human faith, which faith will not be profitable to eternal life.

3. As to what Mr. Pickthank hath said, I say, (avoiding terms, as that I am said to rail, and the like,) that the prince of this town, with all the rabblement, his attendants, by this gentleman named, are more fit for being in hell than in this town and country; and so the Lord have mercy upon me.*

THE JUDGE'S SPEECH TO THE JURY.

Then the judge called to the jury, (who all this while stood by to hear and observe,) Gentlemen of the jury, you see this man

* This is the Christian's plea and his glory. While he knows the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel, Prov. xii. 10; yet he also knows that the merciful kindness of the Lord is great, and the truth of the Lord endureth for ever, Psalm cxvii. 2.

about whom so great an uproar hath been made in this town; you have also heard what these worthy gentlemen have witnessed against him; also you have heard his reply and confession: it lieth now in your breast to hang him, or save his life; but yet I think meet to instruct you in our law.

There was an act made in the days of Pharaoh the great, servant to our prince, that, lest those of a contrary religion should multiply and grow too strong for him, their males should be thrown into the river.[b] There was also an act made in the days of Nebuchadnezzar the great, another of his servants, that whoever would not fall down and worship his golden image, should be thrown into a fiery furnace.[c] There was also an act made in the days of Darius, that whoso for some time called upon any god but him, should be cast into the lions' den.[d] Now, the substance of these laws this rebel hath broken, not only in thought, (which is not to be borne,) but also in word and deed; which must therefore needs be intolerable.

For that of Pharaoh, his law was made upon a supposition, to prevent mischief, no crime being yet apparent; but here is a crime apparent. For the second and third, you see he disputeth against our religion; and for the treason that he hath already confessed he deserveth to die the death.

Then went the jury out, whose names were Mr. Blindman, Mr. No-good, Mr. Malice, Mr. Love-lust, Mr. Live-loose, Mr. Heady, Mr. High-mind, Mr. Enmity, Mr. Liar, Mr. Cruelty, Mr. Hate-light, and Mr. Implacable; who every one gave in his private verdict against him among themselves, and afterwards unanimously concluded to bring him in guilty before the judge. And first among

b Exod. i. c Dan. iii. d Dan. vi.

themselves, Mr. Blindman, the foreman, said, I see clearly that this man is an heretic. Then said Mr. No-good, Away with such a fellow from the earth. Ay, said Mr. Malice, for I hate the very looks of him. Then said Mr. Love-lust, I could never endure him. Nor I, said Mr. Live-loose, for he would always be condemning my way. Hang him, hang him, said Mr. Heady. A sorry scrub, said Mr. High-mind. My heart riseth against him, said Mr. Enmity. He is a rogue, said Mr. Liar. Hanging is too good for him, said Mr. Cruelty. Let us despatch him out of the way, said Mr. Hate-light. Then said Mr. Implacable, Might I have all the world given me, I could not be reconciled to him; therefore let us forthwith bring him in guilty of death.* And so they did; therefore he was presently condemned to be had from the place where he was, to the place from whence he came, and there to be put to the most cruel death that could be invented.

THEY CONCLUDE TO BRING HIM IN GUILTY OF DEATH.

They therefore brought him out, to do with him according to their law; and first they scourged him, then they buffeted him, then they lanced his flesh with knives; after that they stoned him with stones, then pricked him with their swords; and last of all, they burned him to ashes at the stake. Thus came Faithful to his end.

THE CRUEL DEATH OF FAITHFUL.

Now I saw that there stood behind the multitude a chariot and a couple of horses waiting for Faithful,

* A blessed verdict! well worthy of every pilgrim to obtain. Reader, do you profess to be one? See then that you study to act so as to gain *such* a verdict from *such* a jury; and then be sure Christ will soon pronounce upon thee his *Euge*, O brave! "Well done, thou good and faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord," Matt. xxv. 21.

who, so soon as his adversaries had despatched him, was taken up into it, and straightway was carried up through the clouds, with sound of trumpet, the nearest way to the Celestial Gate. But as for Christian, he had some respite, and was remanded back to prison; so he there remained for a space. But He that overrules all things, having the power of their rage in his own hand, so wrought it about, that Christian for that time escaped them, and went his way. And as he went he sang, saying—

CHRISTIAN IS STILL A PRISONER.

> Well, Faithful, thou hast faithfully profest,
> Unto thy Lord, with whom thou shalt be blest;
> When faithless ones, with all their vain delights
> Are crying out under their hellish plights:
> Sing, Faithful, sing, and let thy name survive:
> For though they kill'd thee, thou art yet alive.

Now I saw in my dream, that Christian went not forth alone; for there was one whose name was Hopeful, (being so made by the beholding of Christian and Faithful in their words and behaviour in their sufferings at the fair,) who joined himself unto him, and, entering into a brotherly covenant, told him that he would be his companion. Thus one died to bear testimony to the truth, and another rises out of his ashes to be a companion with Christian in his pilgrimage.* This Hopeful also told Christian, that there were many more of the men in the fair that would take their time, and follow after.

CHRISTIAN HAS ANOTHER COMPANION.

THERE ARE MORE OF THE MEN OF THE FAIR WILL FOLLOW.

* I have often recorded it with thankfulness, that though in the dreary day of my pilgrimage, the Lord hath taken away a dear and faithful christian friend, yet he has always raised up another. A very great blessing this, for which Christians can never be thankful enough.

So I saw, that quickly after they were got out of the fair, they overtook one that was going before them, whose name was By-ends: so they said to him, What countryman, sir? and how far go you this way? He told them that he came from the town of Fair-speech, and he was going to the Celestial City; but told them not his name.

THEY OVERTAKE BY-ENDS.

From Fair-speech! said Christian: is there any good that lives there?[e]

By. Yes, said By-ends, I hope.

Chr. Pray, sir, what may I call you? said Christian.

By. I am a stranger to you, and you to me: if you be going this way, I shall be glad of your company; if not, I must be content.

BY-ENDS LOTH TO TELL HIS NAME.

Chr. This town of Fair-speech, said Christian, I have heard of; and, as I remember, they say it is a wealthy place.

By. Yes, I will assure you that it is; and I have very many rich kindred there.

Chr. Pray, who are your kindred there, if a man may be so bold?

By. Almost the whole town: and, in particular, my Lord Turn-about, my Lord Time-server, my Lord Fair-speech, from whose ancestors that town first took its name: also Mr. Smooth-man, Mr. Facing-both-ways, Mr. Any-thing; and the parson of our parish, Mr. Two-tongues, was my mother's own brother by father's side: and, to tell you the truth, I am become a gentleman of good quality; yet my great-grandfather was but a waterman, looking one way and rowing another, and I got most of my estate by the same occupation.

Chr. Are you a married man?

By. Yes, and my wife is a very virtuous woman, the

e Prov. xxvi. 25

THE WIFE AND KINDRED OF BY-ENDS.

daughter of a virtuous woman; she was my Lady Feigning's daughter, therefore she came of a very honourable family, and is arrived to such a pitch of breeding, that she knows how to carry it to all, even to prince and peasant. It is true, we somewhat differ in religion from those of the strictest sort, yet but in two small points: First, we never strive against wind and tide. Secondly, we are always most zealous when Religion goes in his silver slippers; we love much to walk with him in the street, if the sun shines, and the people applaud him.*

WHERE BY-ENDS DIFFERS FROM OTHERS IN RELIGION.

Then Christian stepped a little aside to his fellow Hopeful, saying, It runs in my mind that this is one By-ends, of Fair-speech; and if it be he, we have as very a knave in our company as dwelleth in all these parts. Then said Hopeful, Ask him; methinks he should not be ashamed of his name. So Christian came up with him again, and said, Sir, you talk as if you knew something more than all the world doth; and, if I take not my mark amiss, I deem I have half a guess of you: is not your name Mr. By-ends, of Fair-speech?

By. This is not my name, but indeed it is a nick-name that is given me by some that cannot abide me, and I must be content to bear it as a reproach, as other good men have borne theirs before me.

* Is not this too much the case with professors of this day? The Spirit of truth says, "All who will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution," 2 Tim. iii. 12. But how many act as if they had found the art of making the Spirit of truth a liar! for they can so trim and shape their conduct, as they vainly think, to follow Christ, and yet to keep in with the world which is at enmity against him. A most fatal, soul-deceiving error!

CHR. But did you never give an occasion to men to call you by this name?

HOW BY-ENDS GOT HIS NAME.

BY. Never, never! The worst that ever I did to give them an occasion to give me this name was, that I had always the luck to jump in my judgment with the present way of the times, whatever it was, and my chance was to get thereby: but if things are thus cast upon me, let me count them a blessing; but let not the malicious load me, therefore, with reproach.*

CHR. I thought, indeed, that you were the man that I heard of; and, to tell you what I think, I fear this name belongs to you more properly than you are willing we should think it doth.

HE DESIRES TO KEEP COMPANY WITH CHRISTIAN.

BY. Well, if you will thus imagine, I cannot help it; you shall find me a fair company-keeper, if you will still admit me your associate.

CHR. If you will go with us, you must go against wind and tide; the which, I perceive, is against your opinion. You must also own Religion in his rags, as well as when in his silver slippers; and stand by him, too, when bound in irons, as well as when he walketh the streets with applause.

BY. You must not impose, nor lord it over my faith; leave me to my liberty, and let me go with you.

CHR. Not a step farther, unless you will do in what I propound as we.

Then said By-ends, I shall never desert my old principles, since they are harmless and profitable. If I may not go with you, I must do as I did before you overtook

* How artful, how delusive, are the reasonings of such men! O beware of this spirit! In opposition to this, watch and pray earnestly that ye may not be double-minded, but sincere until the day of Christ.

me, even go by myself, until some overtake me that will be glad of my company.*

BY-ENDS AND THEY PART.

Now I saw in my dream, that Christian and Hopeful forsook him, and kept their distance before him; but one of them, looking back, saw three men following Mr. By-ends; and behold, as they came up with him, he made them a very low congee; and they also gave him a compliment. The men's names were, Mr. Hold-the-world, Mr. Money-love, and Mr. Save-all, men that Mr. By-ends had formerly been acquainted with, for in their minority they were schoolfellows, and were taught by one Mr. Gripe-man, a schoolmaster in Love-gain, which is a market-town in the county of Coveting, in the north. This schoolmaster taught them the art of getting, either by violence, cozenage, flattery, lying, or by putting on a guise of religion; and these four gentlemen had attained much of the art of their master, so that they could each of them have kept such a school themselves.

HE HAS NEW COMPANIONS.

Well, when they had, as I said, thus saluted each other, Mr. Money-love said to Mr. By-ends, Who are they upon the road before us? for Christian and Hopeful were yet within view.

BY-ENDS' CHARACTER OF THE PILGRIMS.

BY. They are a couple of far country-men, that, after their mode, are going on pilgrimage.

MONEY. Alas! why did they not stay, that we might

* Mind how warily these pilgrims acted to this deceitful professor. They did not too rashly take up an ill opinion against him; but when they had full proof of what he was, they did not hesitate one moment, but dealt faithfully with him, and conscientiously withdrew from him. Love should always move slowly in receiving a report, but ever deal faithfully when it is made plain that men are not what they profess to be.

have had their good company? for they, and we, and you, sir, I hope, are all going on pilgrimage.

By. We are so indeed; but the men before us are so rigid, and love so much their own notions, and do also so lightly esteem the opinions of others, that, let a man be never so godly, yet if he jumps not with them in all things, they thrust him quite out of their company.

Save. That's bad: but we read of some that are righteous over-much; and such men's rigidness prevails with them to judge and condemn all but themselves. But I pray, what, and how many, were the things wherein you differed?

By. Why, they, after their headstrong manner, conclude, that it is duty to rush on their journey all weathers; and I am for waiting for wind and tide. They are for hazarding all for God at a clap, and I am for taking all advantages to secure my life and estate. They are for holding their notions, though all other men be against them; but I am for religion in what, and so far as, the times and my safety will bear it. They are for Religion when in rags and contempt; but I am for him when he walks in his silver slippers, in the sunshine, and with applause.*

Hold-the-world. Aye, and hold you there still, good Mr. By-ends: for, for my part, I can count him but a fool, that, having the liberty to keep what he has, shall be so unwise as to lose it. Let us be wise as serpents; it is best to make hay while the sun shines: you see how the bee lieth still in winter, and bestirs her

* Notwithstanding By-ends could be reserved and upon his guard with faithful pilgrims, yet he can speak out boldly to those of his own spirit and character. O the treacherous deceivings of the desperate wickedness of the human heart! Who can know it? No one, but the heart-searching God.

only when she can have profit with pleasure. God sends sometimes rain, and sometimes sunshine: if they be such fools to go through the first, yet let us be content to take fair weather along with us. For my part, I like that religion best that will stand with the security of God's good blessings unto us; for who can imagine, that is ruled by his reason, since God has bestowed upon us the good things of this life, but that he would have us keep them for his sake? Abraham and Solomon grew rich in religion; and Job says, that a good man "shall lay up gold as dust." But he must not be such as the men before us, if they be as you have described them.

SAVE. I think that we are all agreed in this matter, and therefore there needs no more words about it.

MONEY. No, there needs no more words about this matter indeed; for he that believes neither scripture nor reason, (and you see we have both on our side,) neither knows his own liberty, nor seeks his own safety.

BY. My brethren, we are, as you see, going all on pilgrimage; and, for our better diversion from things that are bad, give me leave to propound unto you this question:

Suppose a man, a minister, or a tradesman, &c. should have an advantage lie before him to get the good blessings of this life, yet so as that he can by no means come by them, except, in appearance at least, he becomes extraordinary zealous in some points of religion that he meddled not with before,—may he not use this means to attain his end, and yet be a right honest man?

MONEY. I see the bottom of your question; and, with these gentlemen's good leave, I will endeavour to shape you an answer. And, first, to speak to your

question, as it concerneth a *minister* himself. Suppose a minister, a worthy man, possessed but of a very small benefice, and has in his eye a greater, more fat and plump by far: he has also now an opportunity of getting it, yet so as by being more studious, by preaching more frequently and zealously, and, because the temper of the people requires it, by altering of some of his principles: for my part, I see no reason why a man may not do this, provided he has a call, ay, and more a great deal besides, and yet be an honest man. For why?

1. His desire of a greater benefice is lawful; this cannot be contradicted, since it is set before him by Providence: so then he may get it if he can, making no question for conscience sake.

2. Besides, his desire after that benefice makes him more studious, a more zealous preacher, &c., and so makes him a better man, yea, makes him better improve his parts; which is according to the mind of God.

3. Now, as for his complying with the temper of his people, by deserting, to serve them, some of his principles, this argueth, (1.) that he is of a self-denying temper, (2.) of a sweet and winning deportment; and (3.) so more fit for the ministerial function.

4. I conclude, then, that a minister that changes a small for a great, should not, for so doing, be judged as covetous; but rather, since he is improved in his parts and industry thereby, be counted as one that pursues his call, and the opportunity put into his hand to do good.

And now to the second part of the question, which concerns the tradesman you mentioned: suppose such an one to have but a poor employ in the world, but, by becoming religious, he may mend his market, perhaps get a rich wife, or more and far better customers to his

shop. For my part, I see no reason but this may be lawfully done. For why?

1. To become religious is a virtue, by what means soever a man becomes so.

2. Nor is it unlawful to get a rich wife, or more custom to my shop.

3. Besides, the man that gets these by becoming religious, gets that which is good, of them that are good, by becoming good himself; so then here is a good wife, and good customers, and good gain, and all these by becoming religious, which is good: therefore, to become religious to get all these, is a good and profitable design.*

This answer, thus made by Mr. Money-love to Mr. By-ends' question, was highly applauded by them all; wherefore they concluded, upon the whole, that it was most wholesome and advantageous. And because, as they thought, no man was able to contradict it, and because Christian and Hopeful were yet within call, they jointly agreed to assault them with the question as soon as they overtook them; and the rather, because they had opposed Mr. By-ends before. So they called after them, and they stopped and stood still till they came up to them: but they concluded, as they went, that not Mr. By-ends, but old Mr. Hold-the-world, should propound the question to them; because, as they

* Here is worldly wisdom, infernal logic, and the sophistry of Satan. We hear this language daily from money-loving professors, who are destitute of the power of faith, and the reasoning of godliness. But in opposition to all this, the Holy Ghost testifies, "the love of money is the root of all evil," 1 Tim. vi. 10, and a covetous man is an idolater, Col. iii. 5. Hear this, and tremble, ye avaricious professors. Remember, ye followers of the Lamb, ye are called to let your conversation be without covetousness, Heb. xiii. 5. Your Lord testifies, "Ye cannot serve God and mammon," Luke xvi. 13.

supposed, their answer to him would be without the remainder of that heat that was kindled betwixt Mr. By-ends and them, at their parting a little before.

So they came up to each other, and, after a short salutation, Mr. Hold-the-world propounded the question to Christian and his fellow, and bid them to answer it, if they could.

Then said Christian, Even a babe in religion may answer ten thousand such questions. For if it be unlawful to follow Christ for loaves, as it is, John vi. 26, how much more abominable is it to make of him and religion a stalking-horse to get and enjoy the world! Nor do we find any other than heathens, hypocrites, devils, and witches, that are of this opinion.

1. Heathens: for when Hamor and Shechem had a mind to the daughter and cattle of Jacob, and saw that there was no way for them to come at them, but by being circumcised; they say to their companions, "If every male of us be circumcised, as they are circumcised, shall not their cattle, and their substance, and every beast of theirs, be ours?" Their daughters and their cattle were that which they sought to obtain, and their religion the stalking-horse they made use of to come at them. Read the whole story, Genesis xxxiv. 20—24.

2. The hypocritical Pharisees were also of this religion: long prayers were their pretence; but to get widows' houses was their intent, and greater damnation was from God their judgment.[f]

3. Judas the devil was also of this religion: he was religious for the bag, that he might be possessed of what was put therein; but he was lost, cast away, and the very son of perdition.

f Luke xx. 46, 47.

4. Simon the wizard was of this religion too: for he would have had the Holy Ghost, that he might have got money therewith; and his sentence from Peter's mouth was according.[g]

5. Neither will it out of my mind, but that that man that takes up religion for the world, will throw away religion for the world; for so surely as Judas designed the world in becoming religious, so surely did he also sell religion and his Master for the same. To answer the question therefore affirmatively, as I perceive you have done, and to accept of, as authentic, such answer, is both heathenish, hypocritical, and devilish; and your reward will be according to your works.

Then they stood staring one upon another, but had not wherewith to answer Christian. Hopeful also approved of the soundness of Christian's answer; so there was a great silence among them. Mr. By-ends and his company also staggered and kept behind, that Christian and Hopeful might outgo them. Then said Christian to his fellow, If these men cannot stand before the sentence of men, what will they do with the sentence of God? And if they are mute when dealt with by vessels of clay, what will they do when they shall be rebuked by the flames of a devouring fire?*

THE EASE THAT PILGRIMS HAVE IS BUT LITTLE IN THIS LIFE.

Then Christian and Hopeful outwent them again, and went till they came at a

g Acts viii. 18—23.

* Here see the blessedness of being mighty in the scriptures, and the need of that exhortation, "Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly," Col. iii. 16. For the word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than a two-edged sword, it pierceth through all the subtle devices of Satan, and the cunning craftiness of carnal professors, and divideth asunder the carnal reasonings of the flesh, from the spiritual wisdom which cometh from above.

delicate plain, called Ease; where they went with much content: but that plain was but narrow, so they were quickly got over it.* Now, at the farther side of that plain was a little hill, called Lucre, and in that hill a silver mine, which some of them that had formerly gone that way, because of the rarity of it, had turned aside to see; but going too near the brim of the pit, the ground, being deceitful under them, broke, and they were slain: some also had been maimed there, and could not to their dying day be their own men again.

LUCRE-HILL, A DANGEROUS HILL.

* In this plain some fall asleep, and dream of sinless perfection, and talk, in their sleep, that they are free from sin, that it is destroyed root and branch, so that it has no being in them. But real pilgrims go through this plain of Ease, sensible that they are still sinners.

Then I saw in my dream, that a little off the road, over-against the silver mine, stood Demas (gentleman-like) to call passengers to come and see; who said to Christian and his fellow, Ho! turn aside hither, and I will show you a thing.

DEMAS AT THE HILL LUCRE.

HE CALLS TO CHRISTIAN AND HOPEFUL TO COME TO HIM.

CHR. What thing so deserving as to turn us out of the way to see it?

DEMAS. Here is a silver mine, and some digging in it for treasure; if you will come, with a little pains you may richly provide for yourselves.

HOPE. Then said Hopeful, Let us go see.

CHR. Not I, said Christian; I have heard of this place before now, and how many have there been slain; and, besides, that treasure is a snare to those that seek it, for it hindereth them in their pilgrimage.*

HOPEFUL TEMPTED TO GO, BUT CHRISTIAN HOLDS HIM BACK.

Then Christian called to Demas, saying, Is not the place dangerous? hath it not hindered many in their pilgrimage?

DEMAS. Not very dangerous, except to those that are careless. But withal he blushed as he spake.

CHR. Then said Christian to Hopeful, Let us not stir a step, but still keep on our way.

HOPE. I will warrant you, when By-ends comes up, if he hath the same invitation as we, he will turn in thither to see.

CHR. No doubt thereof, for his principles lead him that way, and a hundred to one but he dies there.

* See the value of a faithful friend. But how few act so faithfully! How few professors will bear it! What! hold a man back from getting money! O how few are aware, that covetousness is idolatry; and attend to our Lord's double caution, "Take heed, and beware of covetousness," Luke xii. 15.

DEMAS. Then Demas called again, saying, But will you not come over and see?

CHR. Then Christian roundly answered, saying, Demas, thou art an enemy to the right ways of the Lord of this way, and hast been already condemned for thine own turning aside, by one of his Majesty's judges;[h] and why seekest thou to bring us into the like condemnation? Besides, if we at all turn aside, our Lord the King will certainly hear thereof, and will there put us to shame, where we would stand with boldness before him.

CHRISTIAN ROUNDETH UP DEMAS.

Demas cried again, that he also was one of their fraternity; and that if they would tarry a little, he also himself would walk with them.

CHR. Then said Christian, What is thy name? Is it not the same by the which I have called thee?

DEMAS. Yes, my name is Demas; I am the son of Abraham.

CHR. I know you: Gehazi was your great-grandfather, and Judas your father, and you have trod in their steps. It is but a devilish prank that thou usest: thy father was hanged for a traitor, and thou deservest no better reward.[i] Assure thyself, that when we come to the King, we will tell him of this thy behaviour. Thus they went their way.

By this time By-ends and his companions were come again within sight, and they at the first beck went over to Demas. Now, whether they fell into the pit by looking over the brink thereof, or whether they went down to dig, or whether they were smothered in the bottom by the damps that commonly arise, of these things I am not certain; but this

BY-ENDS GOES OVER TO DEMAS.

h 2 Tim. iv. 10. i 2 Kings v. 20—27. Matt. xxvi. 14, 15. xxvii. 3—5.

I observed, that they never were seen again in the way.* Then sang Christian :—

By-ends and silver Demas both agree:
One calls, the other runs, that he may be
A sharer in his lucre; so these do
Take up in this world, and no further go.

THEY SEE A STRANGE MONUMENT.

Now I saw, that just on the other side of this plain, the pilgrims came to a place where stood an old monument hard by the highway-side; at the sight of which they were both concerned, because of the strangeness of the form thereof, for it seemed to them as if it had been a woman transformed into the shape of a pillar. Here, therefore, they stood looking and looking upon it, but could not for a time tell what they should make thereof. At last Hopeful espied, written above, upon the head thereof, a writing in an unusual hand; but he, being no scholar, called to Christian (for he was learned) to see if he could pick out the meaning: so he came, and after a little laying of the letters together, he found the same to be this, "Remember Lot's wife." So he read it to his fellow; after which they both concluded, that that was the pillar of salt into which Lot's wife was turned, for her looking back with a covetous heart, when she was going from Sodom for safety.[k] Which sudden and amazing sight gave them occasion for this discourse.

k Gen. xix. 26.

* Here you see the end of double-minded men, who vainly attempt to temper the love of money with the love of Christ. They go on with their art for a season, but the end makes it manifest what they were. Take David's advice, "Fret not thyself because of evil-doers," Psalm xxxvii. 1. "Be not thou afraid when one is made rich, when the glory of his house is increased," xlix. 16. But go thou into the sanctuary of thy God, read his word, and understand the end of these men.

CHR. Ah, my brother! this is a seasonable sight: it came opportunely to us after the invitation which Demas gave us to come over to view the hill Lucre; and had we gone over, as he desired us, and as thou wast inclined to do, my brother, we had, for aught I know, been made like this woman, a spectacle for those that shall come after to behold.

HOPE. I am sorry that I was so foolish, and am made to wonder that I am not now as Lot's wife; for wherein was the difference betwixt her sin and mine? She only looked back, and I had a desire to go see: let grace be adored, and let me be ashamed that ever such a thing should be in mine heart.*

CHR. Let us take notice of what we see here, for our help for time to come: this woman escaped one judgment, for she fell not by the destruction of Sodom, yet she was destroyed by another, as we see she is turned into a pillar of salt.

HOPE. True, and she may be to us both caution and example: caution, that we should shun her sin; or a sign of what judgment will overtake such as shall not be prevented by this caution: so Korah, Dathan, and Abiram, with the two hundred and fifty men that perished in their sin, did also become a sign or example to others to beware.[1] But, above all, I muse at one thing, to wit, how Demas and his fellows can stand so confidently yonder to look for that treasure, which this woman but

1 Num. xxvi. 9, 10.

* Such is the effect of the grace of God in the heart of a pilgrim while on one hand he sees the propensity of his evil nature to every sin which has been committed by others, and is humbled; he also confesses, that by no power of his own, he is preserved, but ever gives all the glory to the God of all grace, by whose power alone he is kept from falling: "Thou standest by faith; be not high-minded, but fear," Rom. xi. 20.

for looking behind her after, (for we read not that she stepped one foot out of the way,) was turned into a pillar of salt; especially since the judgment which overtook her, did make her an example within sight of where they are: for they cannot choose but see her, did they but lift up their eyes.

CHR. It is a thing to be wondered at, and it argueth that their hearts are grown desperate in the case; and I cannot tell who to compare them to so fitly, as to them that pick pockets in the presence of the judge, or that will cut purses under the gallows. It is said of the men of Sodom, that "they were sinners exceedingly," because they were sinners "before the Lord," that is, in his eye-sight, and notwithstanding the kindnesses that he had showed them; for the land of Sodom was now like the garden of Eden heretofore.[m] This, therefore, provoked him the more to jealousy, and made their plague as hot as the fire of the Lord out of heaven could make it. And it is most rationally to be concluded, that such, even such as these are, that shall sin in the sight, yea, and that too in despite of such examples that are set continually before them to caution them to the contrary, must be partakers of severest judgments.

HOPE. Doubtless thou hast said the truth; but what a mercy is it, that neither thou, but especially I, am not made myself this example! This ministereth occasion to us to thank God, to fear before him, and always to remember Lot's wife.

I saw then that they went on their way to a pleasant river, which David the king called "the river of God;" but John, "the river of the water of life."[n]* A RIVER.

m Gen. xiii. 10, 13. n Psalm xlvi. 4. Ezek. xlvii. Rev. xxii. 1.

* By this river, which is called "a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and the Lamb,"

Now, their way lay just upon the bank of this river: here, therefore, Christian and his companion walked with great delight; they drank also of the water of the river, which was pleasant and enlivening to their weary spirits. Besides, on the banks of this river, on either side, were green trees with all manner of fruit; and the leaves they ate to prevent surfeits, and other diseases that are incident to those that heat their blood by travels. On either side of the river was also a meadow, curiously beautified with lilies; and it was green all the year long. In this meadow they lay down and slept, for here they might lie down safely.[o] When they awoke, they gathered again of the fruit of the trees, and drank again of the water of the river, and then lay down again to sleep. Thus they did several days and nights. Then they sang—

TREES BY THE RIVER.

THE FRUIT AND LEAVES OF THE TREES.

A MEADOW, IN WHICH THEY LIE DOWN TO SLEEP.

o Psalm xxiii. Isa. xiv. 30.

Rev. xxii. 1, we may understand, the clear and comfortable views which they were favoured with, of God's everlasting love and electing grace. This river of God, this water of life, was clear as crystal. They could see in it God's glory shining in the face of Jesus Christ, and view their own faces in it to their inexpressible joy. This is the river, "the streams whereof make glad the city of God," Psalm xlvi. 4. The streams which flow from this river of electing love, are vocation to Christ, justification by Christ, sanctification in Christ, perseverance through Christ, glorification with Christ, and all joy and peace in believing on Christ, from the Spirit of Christ. All this these pilgrims now enjoyed, and all this every fellow-citizen of the saints are called to enjoy, in their pilgrimage to Zion. These are their precious privileges. This river of life proceedeth out of the throne of God and the Lamb: for God hath chosen us in Christ, and blessed us with all spiritual blessings in him; and they are all freely communicated from electing love to us, out of Christ's fulness. O how happy, peaceful, and joyful are pilgrims, when the Spirit takes of the things of Christ, shows them to us, and blesses us with a sense of interest in all the love of God, and finished salvation of Jesus!

Behold ye how these crystal streams do glide,
To comfort pilgrims by the highway-side.
The meadows green, besides their fragrant smell,
Yield dainties for them; and he who can tell
What pleasant fruit, yea, leaves, these trees do yield,
Will soon sell all, that he may buy this field.

So when they were disposed to go on, (for they were not as yet at their journey's end,) they ate, and drank, and departed.

Now, I beheld in my dream, that they had not journeyed far, but the river and the way for a time parted, at which they were not a little sorry; yet they durst not go out of the way. Now the way from the river was rough, and their feet tender by reason of their travels; so the souls of the pilgrims were much discouraged because of the way.[p] Wherefore, still as they went on, they wished for a better way.* Now, a little before them, there was on the left hand of the road a meadow, and a stile to go over into it, BY-PATH MEADOW. and that meadow is called By-path meadow.† Then said Christian to his fellow, If this meadow lieth along by our way-side, let us go over into it. Then he went to

p Num. xxi. 4.

* Pilgrims have their discouragements as well as their joys; they cannot help complaining as well as rejoicing, yet they take their way as they find it, sometimes rough, at others smooth; though they may at times be sorry to part with their comforts, and wish the way was smoother; so they did here. Lo! their wishes were answered; but mark the consequences. Lord, lead me in the way everlasting!

† Beware of this By-path meadow, it is on the left-hand. O how many are walking securely, confidently, and comfortably in it, while every step they take endangers their destruction. The transition into it is easy, for it lies close to the right way, only you must get over a style; that is, you must quit Christ's imputed righteousness, and trust in your own inherent righteousness, and then you are in By-path meadow directly.

ONE TEMPTATION MAKES WAY FOR ANOTHER.

the stile to see, and behold a path lay along by the way on the other side of the fence. 'Tis according to my wish, said Christian; here is the easiest going; come, good Hopeful, and let us go over.*

HOPE. But, how if this path should lead us out of the way?

STRONG CHRISTIANS MAY LEAD WEAK ONES OUT OF THE WAY.

CHR. That is not likely, said the other. Look, doth it not go along by the way-side? So Hopeful, being persuaded by his fellow, went after him over the stile. When they were gone over, and were got into the path, they found it very easy for their feet; and withal, they, looking before them, espied a man walking as they did, and his name was Vain-Confidence: so they called after him, and asked him whither that way led. He said, To the Celestial Gate. Look, said Christian, did not I tell you so? by this you may see we are right. So they followed, and he went before them. But behold the night came on, and it grew very dark; so that they that went behind lost the sight of him that went before.

SEE WHAT IT IS TOO SUDDENLY TO FALL IN WITH STRANGERS.

A PIT TO CATCH THE VAIN-GLORIOUS IN.

He therefore that went before, (Vain-Confidence by name,) not seeing the way before him, fell into a deep pit,[q] which was on purpose there made by the Prince of those grounds, to catch vain-glorious fools withal, and was dashed in pieces with his fall.†

q Isa. ix. 16.

* Ah! how easily are our eyes deceived, our hearts mistaken, and our feet perverted from the right way! Shepherd of Israel, thou knowest to err is human; keep us from erring—guide us continually—and when we do stray, Lord, reclaim us.

† "There is a way that seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death," Prov. xiv. 12. Vain confidence is this very way. O how easily do professors get into it; yea, real pilgrims

Now, Christian and his fellow heard him fall; so they called, to know the matter; but there was none to answer, only they heard a groaning. Then said Hopeful, Where are we now? Then was his fellow silent, as mistrusting that he had led him out of the way: and now it began to rain, and thunder, and lighten in a most dreadful manner, and the water rose amain.*

REASONING BETWEEN CHRISTIAN AND HOPEFUL.

Then Hopeful groaned in himself, saying, Oh, that I had kept on my way!

CHR. Who could have thought that this path should have led us out of the way?

HOPE. I was afraid on't at the very first, and therefore gave you that gentle caution. I would have spoke plainer, but that you are older than I.

CHRISTIAN'S REPENTANCE FOR LEADING HIS BROTHER OUT OF THE WAY.

CHR. Good brother, be not offended; I am sorry I have brought thee out of the way, and that I have put thee into such imminent danger: pray, my brother, forgive me; I did not do it of an evil intent.†

HOPE. Be comforted, my brother, for I forgive thee; and believe, too, that this shall be for our good.

are prone also to take up with it, owing to that legality, pride, and self-righteousness which work in their fallen nature. See the end of it, and tremble. For it leads to darkness, and ends in death. Lord, humble our proud hearts, and empty us of self-righteousness, pride, and vain confidence.

* Getting into By-path meadow, and walking in vain confidence, will surely bring on terrors—thunderings and lightnings from mount Sinai.

† Here see, that as Christians are made helpful, so also, through prevailing corruptions, they are liable to prove hurtful to each other. But observe, how grace works! it humbles, it makes the soul confess and be sorry for its misfortunes; here is no reviling one another, but a tender sympathy and feeling concern for each other. O the mighty power of that grace and truth which came by Jesus Christ! how does it cement souls in the fellowship of love!

CHR. I am glad I have with me a merciful brother: but we must not stand here; let us try to go back again.

HOPE. But, good brother, let me go before.

CHR. No, if you please, let me go first, that, if there be any danger, I may be first therein; because by my means we are both gone out of the way.

HOPE. No, said Hopeful, you shall not go first; for, your mind being troubled, may lead you out of the way again.—Then, for their encouragement, they heard the voice of one saying, "Let thine heart be towards the highway; even the way that thou wentest, turn again."[r]*

THEY ARE IN DANGER OF DROWNING AS THEY GO BACK.

But by this time the waters were greatly risen, by reason of which the way of going back was very dangerous. (Then I thought, that it is easier going out of the way when we are in, than going in when we are out.) Yet they adventured to go back; but it was so dark, and the flood was so high, that in their going back they had like to have been drowned, nine or ten times.

THEY SLEEP IN THE GROUNDS OF GIANT DESPAIR.

Neither could they, with all the skill they had, get again to the stile that night. Wherefore at last, lighting under a little shelter, they sat down there till the day-break: but being weary they fell asleep. Now, there was, not far from the place where they lay, a castle, called Doubting-castle, the owner whereof was Giant Despair;† and it was in his

r Jer. xxxi. 21.

* This is Christ: Christ's precious person, Christ's glorious work, Christ's finished salvation; he is the way, the only way, the high way of justification and holiness.

† Sooner or later, Doubting Castle will be the prison, and Giant Despair the keeper, of all those who turn aside from Christ and his righteousness, to trust in anywise in themselves, and to their own righteousness. "Our God is a jealous God:" ever jealous of his own glory, and of the honour of his beloved Son.

grounds they now were sleeping. Wherefore he getting up in the morning early, and walking up and down in his fields, caught Christian and Hopeful asleep in his grounds. Then with a grim and surly voice he bid them awake, and asked them whence they were, and what they did in his grounds. They told him they were pilgrims, and that they had lost their way. Then said

HE FINDS THEM IN HIS GROUNDS, AND CARRIES THEM TO DOUBTING CASTLE.

the giant, You have this night trespassed on me by trampling in, and lying on my grounds, and therefore you must go along with me. So they were forced to go, because he was stronger than they. They also had but little to say, for they knew themselves in a fault. The giant, therefore, drove them before him, and put them into his castle, into a very dark dungeon, nasty and stinking

THE GRIEVOUSNESS OF THEIR IMPRISONMENT.

to the spirits of these two men. Here then they lay from Wednesday morning till Saturday night, without one bit of bread, or drop of drink, or light, or any to ask how they did: they were, therefore, here in evil case, and were far from friends and acquaintance.[s] Now in this place Christian had double sorrow, because it was through his unadvised counsel that they were brought into this distress.*

Now Giant Despair had a wife, and her name was Diffidence: so, when he was gone to bed, he told his wife what he had done; to wit, that he had taken a couple of prisoners, and cast them into his dungeon for trespassing on his grounds. Then he asked her also what he had best do further to them? So she asked what they were, whence they came, and whither they were bound; and he told her. Then she counselled him, that when he arose in the morning he should beat them without mercy. So when he arose, he getteth him a grievous crab-tree cudgel, and goes down into the dungeon to them, and there first falls to rating of them as if they were dogs, although they gave him never a word of distaste: then he falls upon them, and beats them fearfully, in such sort that they were not able to help themselves, or turn to them upon the floor. This done, he withdraws, and leaves

ON THURSDAY GIANT DESPAIR BEATS HIS PRISONERS.

s Psalm lxxxviii. 8.

* What! these highly favoured Christians, in Doubting Castle? Is it possible, after having travelled so far in the way of salvation, seen so many glorious things in the way, experienced so much of the grace and love of their Lord, and having so often proved his faithfulness, yet after all this to get into Doubting Castle! Is not this strange? No, it is common! the strongest Christians are liable to err, and get out of the way, and then to be beset with very great and distressing doubts. But though in Doubting Castle, yet it is their peculiar mercy not to be shut up in the iron cage of despair.

them there to condole their misery, and to mourn under their distress: so all that day they spent their time in nothing but sighs and bitter lamentations. The next night she, talking with her husband further about them, and understanding that they were yet alive, did advise him to counsel them to make away with themselves. So, when morning was come, he goes to them in a surly manner as before, and perceiving them to be very sore with the stripes that he had given them the day before, he told them, that since they were never like to come out of that place, their only way would be forthwith to make an end of themselves, either with knife, halter, or poison: for why, said he, should you choose to live, seeing it is attended with so much bitterness? But they desired him to let them go. With that he looked ugly upon them, and, rushing to them, had doubtless made an end of them himself, but that he fell into one of his fits, (for he sometimes, in sunshiny weather, fell into fits,) and lost for a time the use of his hands. Wherefore he withdrew, and left them, as before, to consider what to do. Then did the prisoners consult between themselves whether it was best to take his counsel, or no; and thus they began to discourse:*

ON FRIDAY GIANT DESPAIR COUNSELS THEM TO KILL THEMSELVES.

THE GIANT SOMETIMES HAS FITS.

CHR. Brother, said Christian, what shall we do? The life that we now live is miserable. For my part,

* See the workings of despair. Where is now their faith in, love to, and dependence upon their Lord? Alas! all seems as at the last gasp. But observe, under their prevailing distress and black despondency, even when despair had almost made an end of them, they had a lucid interval when Giant Despair is seized with a fit, so that Christians are never left of God to total despair; for, says Paul, "we are perplexed, but not in despair," 2 Cor. iv. 8. For God never casts away his people whom he foreknew, Rom. xi. 2.

CHRISTIAN CRUSHED.

I know not whether it is best, to live thus, or to die out of hand; "my soul chooseth strangling rather than life,"[t] and the grave is more easy for me than this dungeon! Shall we be ruled by the giant?*

HOPE. Indeed our present condition is dreadful, and death would be far more welcome to me than thus for ever to abide: but yet let us consider; the Lord of the country to which we are going hath said, "Thou shalt do no murder;" no, not to another man's person; much more then are we forbidden to take his counsel to kill ourselves. Besides, he that kills another can but commit murder upon his body; but, for one to kill himself, is to kill body and soul at once. And, moreover, my brother, thou talkest of ease in the grave; but hast thou forgotten the hell whither for certain the murderers go? for "no murderer hath eternal life," &c. And let us consider again, that all the law is not in the hand of Giant Despair: others, so far as I can understand, have been taken by him as well as we, and yet have escaped out of his hands. Who knows but that God, who made the world, may cause that Giant Despair may die, or that, at some time or other, he may forget to lock us in; or that he may in a short time have another of his fits before us, and may lose the use of his limbs? And if ever that should come to pass again, for my part, I am resolved to pluck up the

HOPEFUL COMFORTS HIM.

t Job vii. 15.

* Poor Christian! what! tempted to destroy thyself? Lord, what is man! But see, despairing soul, mark the truth of that word—"There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to men;" but God is FAITHFUL, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will, with the temptation, also make a way to escape, that we may be able to hear it," 1 Cor. x. 13.

heart of a man, and to try my utmost to get from under his hand.* I was a fool that I did not try to do it before: but, however, my brother, let us be patient, and endure a while; the time may come that may give us a happy release; but let us not be our own murderers. With these words Hopeful at present did moderate the mind of his brother; so they continued together in the dark that day, in their sad and doleful condition.

Well, towards evening the giant goes down into the dungeon again, to see if his prisoners had taken his counsel: but when he came there, he found them alive; and, truly, alive was all, for now, what for want of bread and water, and by reason of the wounds they received when he beat them, they could do little but breathe. But, I say, he found them alive; at which he fell into a grievous rage, and told them that, seeing they had disobeyed his counsel, it should be worse with them than if they had never been born.

At this they trembled greatly, and I think that Christian fell into a swoon; but, coming a little to himself again, they renewed their discourse about the giant's counsel: and whether yet they had best take it, or no. Now, Christian again seemed for doing it, but Hopeful made his second reply as followeth:

HOPEFUL COMFORTS HIM AGAIN BY CALLING FORMER THINGS TO REMEMBRANCE.

HOPE. My brother, said he, rememberest thou not how valiant thou hast been heretofore? Apollyon could not crush thee, nor could all that thou didst hear, or see, or feel in the Valley of the Shadow of Death; what hardship,

* Mark how a fit of despair robs a Christian of his courage, reason, and graces. But one single thought of the love, power, and grace of a covenant God in Christ, elevates the Christian's mind with hope.

terror, and amazement, hast thou already gone through, and art thou now nothing but fears! Thou seest that I am in the dungeon with thee, a far weaker man by nature than thou art; also this giant hath wounded me as well thee, and hath also cut off the bread and water from my mouth, and with thee I mourn without the light. But let us exercise a little more patience; remember how thou playedst the man at Vanity Fair, and wast neither afraid of the chain nor cage, nor yet of bloody death: wherefore let us, (at least to avoid the shame that becomes not a Christian to be found in,) bear up with patience as well as we can.*

Now, night being come again, and the giant and his wife being in bed, she asked him concerning the prisoners, and if they had taken his counsel: to which he replied, They are sturdy rogues, they choose rather to bear all hardships than to make away with themselves. Then said she, Take them into the castle-yard tomorrow, and show them the bones and skulls of those thou hast already despatched, and make them believe, ere a week comes to an end, thou wilt tear them in pieces, as thou hast done their fellows before them.

So when the morning as come, the giant goes to them again, and takes them into the castle-yard, and

* Here is the blessing of a hopeful companion. Here is excellent counsel. Let vain professors say what they may against experience, and looking back to past experience. It is most certainly good and right so to do; though not to encourage present sloth and presumption, but to excite fresh confidence of hope in the Lord. We have David's example, and Paul's word, to encourage us to this: says David—" The Lord who delivered me out of the paw of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, he will deliver me out of the hand of this uncircumcised Philistine," 1 Sam. xvii. 37. And says Paul, we have the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God, who raiseth the dead. There mind the

shows them as his wife had bidden him. These, said he, were pilgrims, as you are, once, and they trespassed in my grounds, as you have done; and when I thought fit, I tore them in pieces; and so within ten days I will do you. Get you down to your den again: and with that he beat them all the way thither. They lay, therefore, all day on Saturday in a lamentable case, as before. Now, when night was come, and when Mrs. Diffidence and her husband the giant were got to bed, they began to renew their discourse of their prisoners; and, withal, the old giant wondered that he could neither by his blows nor counsel bring them to an end. And with that his wife replied, I fear, said she, that they live in hopes that some will come to relieve them, or that they have picklocks about them, by the means of which they hope to escape. And sayest thou so, my dear? said the giant; I will therefore search them in the morning.

ON SATURDAY THE GIANT THREATENED THAT SHORTLY HE WOULD PULL THEM IN PIECES.

Well, on Saturday, about midnight, they began to pray, and continued in prayer till almost break of day.*

Now, a little before it was day, good Christian, as one half amazed, brake out into this passionate speech: What a fool, quoth he, am I, thus to lie in a stinking

alone object of faith and hope, and see the reasoning on past experiences of God's mercy; for it is he, "who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver; in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us," 2 Cor. i. 10.

* What! pray in custody of Giant Despair, in the midst of Doubting Castle; and when their own folly brought them there, too! Yes. Mind this, ye pilgrims. Ye are exhorted, "I will that men pray every where, without doubting," 1 Tim. ii. 8. We can be in no place, but God can hear; nor in any circumstance, but God is able to deliver from. And be assured, when the spirit of prayer comes, deliverance is nigh at hand. So it was here.

dungeon, when I may as well walk at liberty! I have a key in my bosom, called Promise, that will, I am persuaded, open any lock in Doubting Castle. Then said Hopeful, That's good news, good brother, pluck it out of thy bosom, and try.*

A KEY IN CHRISTIAN'S BOSOM, CALLED PROMISE, OPENS ANY LOCK IN DOUBTING CASTLE.

Then Christian pulled it out of his bosom, and began to try at the dungeon door, whose bolt, as he turned the key, gave back, and the door flew open with ease, and Christian and Hopeful both came out. Then he went to the outward door that leads into the castle-yard, and with his key opened that door also. After, he went to the iron gate, for that must be opened too; but that lock went damnable hard; yet the key did open it. Then they thrust open the gate to make their escape with speed; but that gate as it opened made such a creaking, that it waked Giant Despair, who hastily rising to pursue his prisoners, felt his limbs to fail, for his fits took him again, so that he could by no means go after them. Then they went on, and came to the King's highway, and so were safe, because they were out of his jurisdiction.†

* Precious promise! The promises of God in Christ are the life of faith, and the quickeners of prayer. O how oft do we neglect God's great and precious promises in Christ Jesus, while doubts and despair keep us prisoners. So it was with these pilgrims: they were kept under hard bondage of soul for four days. Hence see what it is to grieve the Spirit of God, and dread it: for he, only, is the Comforter; and if he withdraws his influences, who or what can comfort us? Though precious promises are revealed in the word, yet we can get no comfort from them but by the grace of the Spirit.

† Mind, though the Spirit works deliverance and brings comfort, yet it is by means of the word of promise; for as we depart from and dishonour God by unbelief, so we come back to and honour him by believing his word of grace to us in his beloved Son. In this way the Spirit brings deliverance.

Drawn by H. Melville.

Engraved by J. Tingle.

Now, when they were gone over the stile, they began to contrive with themselves what they should do at that stile to prevent those that shall come after from falling into the hand of Giant Despair. So they consented to erect there a pillar, and to engrave upon the side thereof this sentence, "Over this stile is the way to Doubting Castle, which is kept by Giant Despair, who despiseth the King of the Celestial Country, and seeks to destroy his holy pilgrims." Many, therefore, that followed after, read what was written, and escaped the danger.* This done, they sang as follows—

A PILLAR ERECTED BY CHRISTIAN AND HIS FELLOW.

> Out of the way we went, and then we fond
> What 'twas to tread upon forbidden ground:
> And let them that come after have a care
> Lest heedlessness makes them as we to fare:
> Lest they, for trespassing, his pris'ners are,
> Whose castle's Doubting, and whose name's Despair."

They went then till they came to the Delectable Mountains, which mountains belong to the Lord of that hill of which we have spoken before; so they went up to the mountains, to behold the gardens and orchards, the vineyards and fountains of water; where also they drank, and washed themselves, and did freely eat of the vineyards. Now, there were on the the tops of these mountains Shepherds feeding their flocks, and

THE DELECTABLE MOUNTAINS.

THEY ARE REFRESHED IN THE MOUNTAINS.

* Recording our own observations, and the experience we have had of God's dealing with our souls, are made of special and peculiar use to our fellow-christians. But let us ever take heed of self-exalting, ever remembering that all christian experience is designed to humble the soul and exalt the Saviour. As here these two pilgrims by their own folly got into Doubting Castle, but it was by free promise that they escaped from it; so this pillar was a memento to their shame, while it was a monument of God's free favour in Christ to them.

they stood by the highway side. The pilgrims, therefore, went to them, and leaning upon their staves, (as is common with weary pilgrims when they stand to talk with any by the way,) they asked, "Whose Delectable Mountains are these? and whose be the sheep that feed upon them?*

TALK WITH THE SHEPHERDS.

SHEP. These mountains are Emmanuel's Land, and they are within sight of his city; and the sheep also are his, and he laid down his life for them.[u]

CHR. Is this the way to the Celestial City?

SHEP. You are just in your way.

CHR. How far is it thither?

SHEP. Too far for any but those that shall get thither indeed.†

CHR. Is the way safe or dangerous?

SHEP. Safe for those for whom it is to be safe; "but transgressors shall fall therein."[v]‡

CHR. Is there in this place any relief for pilgrims that are weary and faint in the way?

u John x. 11, 15. v Hos. xiv. 9.

* See the ups and downs, the sunshine and clouds, the prosperity and adversity, which Christians go through in their way to the Promised Land. Lately, these two pilgrims were bewailing their state in Doubting Castle, under Giant Despair; now they are come to Delectable Mountains, where all is clear prospect and joyful hope. So that God's word is now comfortably fulfilled upon them, see Isa. xlix. 9—11. "I will make all my mountains a way, and my high-ways shall be exalted," &c.

† O how many professors grow weary of the way, fall short, and fail of coming to the end! though the way be too far, too strait, and too narrow for many who set out, and never hold on to the end; yet all who are begotten by the word of grace, and born of the Spirit of truth, shall persevere unto the end, being kept by the mighty power of God through faith unto eternal salvation, 1 Pet. i. 5.

‡ The elect shall obtain; the rest shall be blinded by sin and self-righteousness, Rom. xi. 7. Look to yourselves, 2 John 8.

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by A. Le Petit.

SHEP. The Lord of these mountains hath given us a charge, "not to be forgetful to entertain strangers;"[w] therefore the good of the place is before you.

I saw also in my dream, that, when the Shepherds perceived that they were wayfaring men, they also put questions to them, (to which they made answer, as in other places,) as, Whence came you? and, How got you into the way? and, By what means have you so persevered therein? for but few of them that begin to come hither do show their face on these mountains. But when the Shepherds heard their answers, being pleased therewith, they looked very lovingly upon them, and said, Welcome to the Delectable Mountains.

THE SHEPHERDS WELCOME THEM.

The Shepherds, I say, whose names were Knowledge, Experience, Watchful, and Sincere,* took them by the hand, and had them to their tents, and made them partake of that which was ready at present. They said, moreover, We would that you should stay here a while, to be acquainted with us, and yet more to solace yourselves with the good of these Delectable Mountains. Then they told them, that they were content to stay. And so they went to their rest that night, because it was very late.

THE NAMES OF THE SHEPHERDS.

Then I saw in my dream, that in the morning the Shepherds called up Christian and Hopeful to walk with them upon the mountains. So they went forth with them, and walked a while, having a pleasant prospect on every side. Then said the Shepherds one to another,

w Heb. xiii. 2.

* Precious names! what is a pilgrim without knowledge? what is head-knowledge without heart-experience? And watchfulness and sincerity ought to attend us at every step. When these graces are in us and abound, they make delectable mountains indeed.

THEY ARE SHOWN WONDERS.

Shall we show these pilgrims some wonders? So, when they had concluded to do it, they had them first to the top of a hill, called Error, which was very steep on the farthest side, and bid them look down to the bottom. So Christian and Hopeful looked down, and saw at the bottom several men dashed all to pieces by a fall that they had from the top. Then said Christian, What meaneth this? The Shepherds answered, Have you not heard of them that were made to err, by hearkening to Hymeneus and Philetus,[x] as concerning the faith of the resurrection of the body? They answered, Yes. Then said the Shepherds, Those that you see lie dashed in pieces at the bottom of this mountain are they; and they have continued to this day unburied, as you see, for an example to others, to take heed how they clamber too high, or how they come too near the brink of this mountain.*

THE MOUNTAIN OF ERROR.

Then I saw that they had them to the top of another mountain, and the name of that is Caution, and bid them look afar off;† which when they did, they perceived, as they thought, several men walking up and down among the tombs that were there: and they perceived that the men were blind, because they stumbled sometimes upon the tombs, and because they could not

MOUNT CAUTION.

x 2 Tim. ii. 17, 18.

* Fine-spun speculations and curious reasonings lead men from simple truth and implicit faith, into many dangerous and destructive errors. The word records many instances of such, for our caution. Be warned to study simplicity and godly sincerity.

† It is well for us to be much on this mount. We have constant need of caution. Take heed and beware, says our Lord constantly, and by his Spirit. Paul takes the Corinthians up to this mount Caution, and shows them what awful things have happened to professors of old; and he leaves this solemn word for us—"Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall," 1 Cor. x. 12.

get out from among them. Then said Christian, What means this?

The Shepherds then answered, Did you not see, a little below these mountains, a stile that led into a meadow, on the left hand of this way? They answered, Yes. Then said the Shepherds, From that stile there goes a path that leads directly to Doubting Castle, which is kept by Giant Despair, and these men (pointing to them among the tombs) came once on pilgrimage, as you do now, even till they came to that same stile. And, because the right way was rough in that place, they chose to go out of it into that meadow, and there were taken by Giant Despair, and cast into Doubting Castle; where, after they had a while been kept in the dungeon, he at last did put out their eyes, and led them among those tombs, where he has left them to wander to this very day, that the saying of the wise man might be fulfilled, "He that wandereth out of the way of understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead."[y] Then Christian and Hopeful looked upon one another, with tears gushing out, but yet said nothing to the Shepherds.*

Then I saw in my dream, that the Shepherds had them to another place, in a bottom, where was a door in the side of a hill; and they opened the door, and bid them look in. They looked in, therefore, and saw that within it was very dark and smoky; they also thought

y Prov. xxi. 16.

* Do we see others fall into perdition by the very same sins and follies from which God has reclaimed us; what must we resolve this into, but his superabounding, discriminating grace? one shall be taken, and another left. And surely it is enough to make one's eyes gush out with tears, and to melt our hard hearts into fervent love, to look back upon the many singular instances of God's distinguishing favour to us! O call them to mind, and be thankful!

that they heard there a rumbling noise, as of fire, and a cry of some tormented; and that they smelt the scent of brimstone. Then said Christian, What means this?

A BY-WAY TO HELL.

The Shepherds told them, This is a by-way to hell, a way that hypocrites go in at; namely, such as sell their birthright, with Esau; such as sell their Master, with Judas; such as blaspheme the gospel, with Alexander; and that lie and dissemble, with Ananias, and Sapphira his wife

HOPE. Then said Hopeful to the Shepherds, I perceive that these had on them, even every one, a show of pilgrimage, as we have now; had they not?

SHEP. Yes, and held it a long time too.

HOPE. How far might they go on in pilgrimage in their days, since they, notwithstanding, were thus miserably cast away?

SHEP. Some further, and some not so far as these mountains.*

Then said the pilgrims one to the other, We had need to cry to the Strong for strength.

SHEP. Ay, and you will have need to use it when you have it too.

By this time the pilgrims had a desire to go forwards, and the Shepherds a desire they should; so they walked together towards the end of the mountains. Then said the Shepherds one to another, Let us here show the pilgrims the gates of the Celestial City, if they have skill to look through our per-

THE SHEPHERDS' PERSPECTIVE-GLASS.

* Thus we read of some who were once enlightened, and had tasted of the heavenly gift, and been made partakers of the Holy Ghost; who had tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, Heb. vi. 4. It is hard to say how far, or how long a person may carry on a profession, and yet fall away, and come short of the kingdom at last. This should excite to diligence, humility, and circumspection, ever looking to Jesus to keep us from falling.

und a
nt of
his?
way
uch
heir
rith
as,

r-
w

1

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by J. C. Bentley.

spective-glass. The pilgrims lovingly accepted the motion: so they had them to the top of a high hill, called Clear, and gave them the glass to look.

THE FRUITS OF SERVILE FEAR.

Then they tried to look, but the remembrance of that last thing that the Shepherds had shown them made their hands shake; by means of which impediment they could not look steadily through the glass;* yet they thought they saw something like the gate, and also some of the glory of the place. Then they went away, and sang this song:

Thus by the Shepherds secrets are reveal'd,
Which from all other men are kept conceal'd:
Come to the Shepherds then, if you would see
Things deep, things hid, and that mysterious be.

A TWO-FOLD CAUTION.

When they were about to depart, one of the Shepherds gave them a note of the way. Another of them bid them beware of the flatterer. The third bid them take heed that they slept not upon enchanted ground. And the fourth bid them God speed. So I awoke from my dream.

And I slept, and dreamed again, and saw the same two pilgrims going down the mountains along the highway towards the city. Now, a little below these mountains, on the left hand, lieth the country of Conceit,† from which country there comes into the way in which the pilgrims walked

THE COUNTRY OF CONCEIT, OUT OF WHICH CAME IGNORANCE.

* The glass of God's word of grace and truth held up by the hand of faith to the eye of the soul. So Paul speaks: "beholding as in a glass (the gospel) the glory of the Lord," &c. 2 Cor. iii. 18. But unbelieving doubts and fears will make the hand tremble and the sight grow dim.

† This country we are all born in, and are all ignoramuses by nature. Some live long in the country of Conceit, and many end their days in it. Are you come out of it? So was Ignorance; but

a little crooked lane. Here, therefore, they met with a very brisk lad that came out of that country, and his name was Ignorance. So Christian asked him from what parts he came, and whither he was going?

CHRISTIAN AND IGNORANCE HAVE SOME TALK.

IGNOR. Sir, I was born in the country that lieth off there a little on the left hand, and I am going to the Celestial City.

CHR. But how do you think to get in at the gate? for you may find some difficulties there.

IGNOR. As other good people do, said he.

CHR. But what have you to show at that gate, that the gate should be opened to you?

IGNOR. I know my Lord's will, and have been a good liver; I pay every man his own; I pray, fast, pay tithes, and give alms, and have left my country for whither I am going.*

THE GROUNDS OF IGNORANCE'S HOPE.

CHR. But thou camest not in at the Wicket-gate that is at the head of this way; thou camest in hither through that same crooked lane; and therefore I fear, however thou mayest think of thyself, when the reckoning-day shall come, thou wilt have laid to thy charge

he breathed his native air. So long as any sinner thinks he can do any thing towards making himself righteous before God, his name is Ignorance, he is full of self-conceit, and destitute of the faith of Christ.

* Now, is it not very common to hear professors talk at this rate? Yes, and many who make a very high profession too: their hopes are plainly grounded upon what they are in themselves, and how they differ from their former selves and other sinners, instead of what Christ is to us, and what we are in Christ. But the profession of such is begun with an ignorant, whole, self-righteous heart; it is continued in pride, self-seeking, and self-exalting; and will end in awful disappointment. For such are called by our Lord thieves and robbers: they rob him of the glory of his grace, and the gift of his imputed righteousness.

that thou art a thief and a robber, instead of getting admittance into the city.

IGNOR. Gentlemen, ye be utter strangers to me, I know you not; be content to follow the religion of your country, and I will follow the religion of mine. I hope all will be well. And, as for the gate that you talk of, all the world knows that it is a great way off of our country. I cannot think that any man in all our parts doth so much as know the way to it; nor need they matter whether they do or no, since we have, as you see, a fine pleasant green lane that comes down from our country, the next way into the way.

HE TELLETH EVERY ONE HE IS BUT A FOOL.

When Christian saw that the man was wise in his own conceit, he said to Hopeful, whisperingly, "There is more hope of a fool than of him;"[z] and said, moreover, "When he that is a fool walketh by the way, his wisdom faileth him, and he saith to every one that he is a fool."[a] What! shall we talk further with him, or outgo him at present, and so leave him to think of what he hath heard already, and then stop again for him afterwards, and see if by degrees we can do any good to him? Then said Hopeful—

HOW TO CARRY IT TO A FOOL.

Let Ignorance a little while now muse
On what is said, and let him not refuse
Good counsel to embrace, lest he remain
Still ignorant of what's the chiefest gain.
God saith, those that no understanding have,
Although he made them, them he will not save.

HOPE. He further added, It is not good, I think, to say so to him all at once; let us pass him by, if you will, and talk to him anon, even as he is "able to bear it."

z Prov. xxvi. 12. a Eccl. x. 3.

So they both went on, and Ignorance he came after. Now, when they had passed him a little way, they entered into a very dark lane, where they met a man whom seven devils had bound with seven strong cords, and were a-carrying him back to the door that they saw on the side of the hill.[b] Now, good Christian began to tremble, and so did Hopeful his companion; yet as the devils led away the man, Christian looked to see if he knew him; and he thought it might be one Turn-away, that dwelt in the town of Apostacy. But he did not perfectly see his face, for he did hang his head like a thief that is found. But being gone past, Hopeful looked after him, and spied on his back a paper with this inscription, "Wanton professor, and damnable apostate."*

THE DESTRUCTION OF ONE TURN-AWAY.

Then said Christian to his fellow, Now I call to remembrance that which was told me, of a thing that happened to a good man hereabout. The name of the man was Little-Faith; but a good man, and he dwelt in the town of Sincere. The thing was this:—at the entering in at this passage, there comes down from Broadway-gate a lane called Deadman's-lane; so called because of the murders that are commonly done there; and this Little-Faith going on pilgrimage, as we do now, chanced to sit down there, and sleep: now there happened at that time to come

CHRISTIAN TELLETH HIS COMPANION A STORY OF LITTLE-FAITH.

BROADWAY-GATE

DEAD-MAN'S-LANE.

b Matt. xii. 45. Prov. v. 22

* O beware of a light, trifling spirit, and a wanton behaviour. It is often the forerunner of apostacy from God. It makes one tremble to hear those who profess to follow Christ in the regeneration, crying, What harm is there in this game, or in the other diversion? They plainly discover what spirit they are got into. The warmth of love is gone, and they are become cold, dead, and carnal. O how many instances of these abound!

down the lane from Broadway-gate, three sturdy rogues, and their names were Faint-heart, Mistrust, and Guilt, three brothers; and they spying Little-Faith where he was, came galloping up with speed. Now, the good man was just awakened from his sleep, and was getting up to go on his journey. So they came up all to him, and with threatening language bid him stand. At this, Little-Faith looked as white as a clout, and had neither power to fight nor fly. Then said Faint-heart, Deliver thy purse; but he making no haste to do it (for he was loath to lose his money,) Mistrust ran up to him, and thrusting his hand into his pocket, pulled out thence a bag of silver. Then he cried out, "Thieves, thieves!" With that, Guilt, with a great club that was in his hand, struck Little-Faith on the head, and with that blow felled him flat to the ground; where he lay bleeding as one that would bleed to death. All this while the thieves stood by. But at last, they hearing that some were upon the road, and fearing lest it should be one Great Grace, that dwells in the town of Good Confidence, they betook themselves to their heels, and left this good man to shift for himself. Now, after a while, Little-Faith came to himself, and, getting up, made shift to scramble on his way. This was the story.*

LITTE-FAITH ROBBED BY FAINT-HEART, MISTRUST, AND GUILT.

THEY GET AWAY HIS SILVER, AND KNOCK HIM DOWN

HOPE. But did they take from him all that ever he had?

* Where there is a faint heart in God's cause, and mistrust of God's truths, there will be guilt in the conscience, and but little faith in the heart; and these rogues will prevail over and rob such souls of the comforts of God's love, and of Christ's salvation. O how many are overtaken by these, in sleepy fits and careless frames, and plundered! Learn to be wise from others' harms.

LITTLE-FAITH LOST NOT HIS BEST THINGS.

CHR. No; the place where his jewels were, they never ransacked; so those he kept still. But, as I was told, the good man was much afflicted for his loss, for the thieves got most of his spending-money. That which they got not (as I said) were jewels; also he had a little odd money left, but scarce enough to bring him to his journey's end.[c] Nay, (if I was not misinformed,) he was forced to beg as he went, to keep himself alive, for his jewels he might not sell; but, beg and do what he could, he went, as we say, with many a hungry belly the most part of the rest of the way.*

LITTLE-FAITH FORCED TO BEG TO HIS JOURNEY'S END.

HOPE. But is it not a wonder they got not from him his certificate, by which he was to receive his admittance at the Celestial Gate?

HE KEPT NOT HIS BEST THINGS BY HIS OWN CUNNING.

CHR. It is a wonder: but they got not that, though they missed it not through any good cunning of his; for he, being dismayed with their coming upon him, had neither power nor skill to hide any thing: so it was more by good providence than by his endeavour that they missed of that good thing.[d]†

c 1 Pet. iv. 18. d 2 Tim. i. 14. 2 Pet. ii. 9.

* By his jewels, we may understand those radical graces of the Spirit—faith, hope, and love. By his spending-money, understand the sealing and earnest of the Spirit in his heart, 2 Cor. i. 22. Of this divine assurance, and the sense of peace and joy in the Holy Ghost, he was robbed; so that though he still went on in the ways of the Lord, yet he dragged on but heavily and uncomfortably; for though safe in Jesus, yet he was not happy in himself. O how much evil and distress are brought upon us by neglecting to watch and pray!

† What was this good thing? His precious faith, whose author, finisher, and object is precious Jesus. And where he gives this precious gift of faith, though it be but little, even as a grain of mustard-seed, not all the powers of earth and hell can rob the heart of it.—Christ prayed for his disciple, that his faith should not fail, or be

HOPE. But it must needs be a comfort to him, that they got not this jewel from him.

CHR. It might have been great comfort to him, had he used it as he should; but they that told me the story said, that he made but little use of it all the rest of the way, and that because of the dismay that he had in their taking away his money. Indeed, he forgot it a great part of the rest of his journey; and besides, when at any time it came into his mind, and he began to be comforted therewith, then would fresh thoughts of his loss come again upon him, and these thoughts would swallow up all.

HE IS PITIED BY BOTH.

HOPE. Alas, poor man! this could not but be a great grief to him.

CHR. Grief! ay, a grief indeed. Would it not have been so to any of us, had we been used as he, to be robbed and wounded too, and that in a strange place, as he was? It is a wonder he did not die with grief, poor heart! I was told that he scattered almost all the rest of the way with nothing but doleful and bitter complaints: telling also to all that overtook him, or that he overtook in the way as he went, where he was robbed, and how; who they were that did it, and what he had lost; how he was wounded, and that he hardly escaped with life.*

HOPE. But it is a wonder that his necessity did not put him upon selling or pawning some of his jewels,

totally lost; therefore, though Peter lost his comforts for a season, yet not his faith totally, nor his soul eternally: for, says Jesus of all his dear flock, yea of those of little faith too, "none shall pluck them out of my hand:" there is our blessed security—not in ourselves, but in our Lord.

* Here is a discovery of true, though it be but little faith. It mourns its loss of God's presence, and comforts of his Spirit, and laments its folly for sleeping when it should have been watching and

that he might have wherewith to relieve himself in his journey.

CHRISTIAN SNIBBETH HIS FELLOW FOR UNADVISEDLY SPEAKING.

CHR. Thou talkest like one upon whose head is the shell to this very day: for what should he pawn them? or to whom should he sell them? In all that country where he was robbed, his jewels were not accounted of; nor did he want that relief which could from thence be administered to him. Besides, had his jewels been missing at the gate of the Celestial City, he had (and that he knew well enough) been excluded from an inheritance there; and that would have been worse to him than the appearance and villany of ten thousand thieves.

HOPE. Why art thou so tart, my brother? Esau sold his birthright, and that for a mess of pottage;[e] and that birthright was his greatest jewel: and if he, why might not Little-Faith do so too?

A DISCOURSE ABOUT ESAU AND LITTLE-FAITH.

CHR. Esau did sell his birthright indeed, and so do many besides, and by so doing exclude themselves from the chief blessing, as also that caitiff did: but you must put a difference betwixt Esau and Little-Faith, as also betwixt their estates. Esau's birthright was typical, but Little-Faith's jewels were not so. Esau's belly was his god, but Little-Faith's belly was not so. Esau's want lay in his fleshly appetite, Little-Faith's did not so. Besides, Esau could see no further than to the fulfilling of his lusts: "For I am at the point to die, (said he,)

ESAU WAS RULED BY HIS LUSTS.

e Heb. xii. 16.

praying. He that pines under the sense of the loss of Christ's love, has faith in his heart, and a measure of love to Christ in his soul: though he goes on his way weeping, yet he shall find joy in the end. Hold on, Little-Faith: O remember thou hast a strong Lord, the very same as Much-Faith has, and the same precious faithful promises to hang upon, and the same glory to hope for.

and what good will this birthright do me?"[f] But Little-Faith, though it was his lot to have but a little faith, was by his little faith kept from such extravagances,* and made to see and prize his jewels more, than to sell them as Esau did his birthright. You read not any where that Esau had faith, no, not so much as a little; therefore no marvel, if, where the flesh only bears sway, (as it will in that man where no faith is to resist,) if he sells his birthright, and his soul and all, and that to the devil of hell; for it is with such as it is with the ass, "who in her occasions cannot be turned away:"[g] when their minds are set upon their lusts, they will have them, whatever they cost. But Little-Faith was of another temper; his mind was on things divine; his livelihood was upon things that were spiritual and from above: therefore, to what end should he that is of such a temper sell his jewels, (had there been any that would have bought them,) to fill his mind with empty things? Will a man give a penny to fill his belly with hay? or can you persuade the turtle-dove to live upon carrion, like the crow? Though faithless ones can, for carnal lusts, pawn, or mortgage, or sell what they have, and themselves outright to boot, yet they that have faith, saving faith, though but a little of it, cannot do so. Here, therefore, my brother, is thy mistake.

ESAU NEVER HAD FAITH.

LITTLE-FAITH COULD NOT LIVE ON ESAU'S POTTAGE.

A COMPARISON BETWEEN THE TURTLE-DOVE AND THE CROW.

HOPE. I acknowledge it; but yet your severe reflection had almost made me angry.

f Gen. xxv. 32. g Jer. ii. 24.

* Faith is said to be obtained by lot, 2 Pet. i. 1. O ye of little faith, wherefore do ye doubt? Remember, it is your unspeakable mercy, not to be left shut up in unbelief. What you have, is by lot of free grace, by free gift. Bless the Giver, and glory in the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

CHR. Why, I did but compare thee to some of the birds that are of the brisker sort, who will run to and fro in untrodden paths with the shell upon their heads. But pass by that, and consider the matter under debate, and all shall be well betwixt thee and me.

HOPEFUL SWAGGERS.

HOPE. But, Christian, these three fellows, I am persuaded in my heart, are but a company of cowards: would they have run else, think you, as they did, at the noise of one that was coming on the road? Why did not Little-Faith pluck up a greater heart? He might, methinks, have stood one brush with them, and have yielded when there had been no remedy?

NO GREAT HEART FOR GOD WHERE THERE IS BUT LITTLE FAITH.

WE HAVE MORE COURAGE WHEN WE ARE OUT, THAN WHEN WE ARE IN.

CHR. That they are cowards, many have said, but few have found it so in the time of trial. As for a great heart, Little-Faith had none; and I perceive by thee, my brother, hadst thou been the man concerned, thou art but for a brush and then to yield. And verily, since this is the height of thy stomach now they are at a distance from us, should they appear to thee as they did to him, they might put thee to second thoughts.*

But consider again, they are but journeymen thieves; they serve under the king of the bottomless pit, who, if need be, will come to their aid himself, and his voice is as the roaring of a lion.[h] I myself have been engaged

h 1 Pet. v. 8.

* Ah! how easy is it to talk when enemies are out of sight! We too often wax valiant in our own esteem, when we have constant need to humble ourselves under the mighty hand of God, knowing what mere nothings we are in ourselves. It makes a Christian speak tartly, when one sees self-exaltings in another. Paul frequently speaks thus, from warm zeal for Christ's glory, and strong love to the truth as it is in Jesus Christ.

as this Little-Faith was; and I found it a terrible thing. These three villains set upon me, and I beginning like a Christian to resist, they gave but a call, and in came their master: I would, as the saying is, have given my life for a penny; but that, as God would have it, I was clothed with armour of proof. Ay, and yet, though I was so harnessed, I found it hard work to quit myself like a man: no man can tell what in that combat attends us, but he that hath been in the battle himself.*

CHRISTIAN TELLS HIS OWN EXPERIENCE IN THIS CASE.

HOPE. Well, but they ran, you see, when they did but suppose that one Great-Grace was in the way.

CHR. True, they have often fled, both they and their master, when Great-Grace hath but appeared: and no marvel, for he is the King's champion; but, I trow, you will put some difference between Little-Faith and the King's champion. All the King's subjects are not his champions; nor can they, when tried, do such feats of war as he. Is it meet to think that a little child should handle Goliath as David did; or that there should be the strength of an ox in a wren? Some are strong, some are weak; some have great faith, some have little; this man was one of the weak, and therefore he went to the wall.†

THE KING'S CHAMPION.

* Who can stand in the evil day of temptation, when beset with Faint-heart, Mistrust, and Guilt, backed by the power of their master Satan? No one, unless armed with the whole armour of God: and even then the power of such infernal foes makes it a hard fight to the Christian. But this is our glory—"the Lord shall fight for us, and we shall hold our peace:" we shall be silent as to ascribing any glory to ourselves, knowing our very enemies are part of ourselves, and that we are more than conquerors over all these (only) through HIM who loved us, Rom. viii. 37.

† Pray mind this, ye lambs of the flock, whose knowledge is small, and whose faith is weak: O never think the God ye believe in, the Saviour you follow, is an austere master, who expects more from you

HOPE. I would it had been Great-Grace, for their sakes.

CHR. If it had been he, he might have had his hands full: for I must tell you, that though Great-Grace is excellent good at his weapons, and has, and can, so long as he keeps them at sword's point, do well enough with them, yet if they get within him, even Faint-heart, Mistrust, or the other, it shall go hard but they will throw up his heels: and when a man is down, you know, what can he do?

Whoso looks well upon Great-Grace's face, will see those scars and cuts there, that shall easily give demonstration of what I say. Yea, once I heard that he should say, (and that when he was in the combat,) "We despaired even of life."* How did these sturdy rogues and their fellows make David groan, mourn, and roar! Yea, Heman, and Hezekiah too, though champions in their days, were forced to bestir them when by these assaulted; and yet, notwithstanding, they had their coats soundly brushed by them. Peter, upon a time, would go try what he could do; but though some do say of him that he is the prince of the apostles, they handled him so, that they made him at last afraid of a sorry girl.

than ye are able. When he calls for your service, look to him for strength: expect all power and strength for every good work out of the fulness of Christ; the more you receive from him, the more you will grow up in him, and be devoted to him.

* Now, here you may see what is meant by Great Grace, who is so often mentioned in this book, and by whom so many valiant things were done. We read, "With great power the apostles witnessed of the resurrection of Jesus." Why was it? Because—"great grace was upon them all," Acts iv. 33. So you see all is of grace, from first to last, in salvation. If we do great things for Christ, yet, not unto us, but unto the great grace of our Lord, be all the glory.

Besides, their king is at their whistle; he is never out of hearing; and if at any time they be put to the worst, he, if possible, comes in to help them: and of him it is said, "the sword of him that layeth at him cannot hold; the spear, the dart, nor the habergeon: he esteemeth iron as straw, and brass as rotten wood: the arrow cannot make him fly, sling-stones are turned with him into stubble; darts are counted as stubble: he laugheth at the shaking of a spear."[i] What can a man do in this case? It is true, if a man could at every turn have Job's horse, and had skill and courage to ride him, he might do notable things: for "his neck is clothed with thunder; he will not be afraid as a grasshopper; the glory of his nostrils is terrible; he paweth in the valley, and rejoiceth in his strength; he goeth on to meet the armed men: he mocketh at fear, and is not affrighted, neither turneth he back from the sword: the quiver rattleth against him, the glittering spear and the shield: he swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage, neither believeth he that it is the sound of the trumpet. He saith among the trumpets, Ha, ha! and he smelleth the battle afar off, the thunder of the captains, and the shoutings."[k]

LEVIATHAN'S STURDINESS.

THE EXCELLENT METTLE THAT IS IN JOB'S HORSE.

But, for such footmen as thee and I are, let us never desire to meet with an enemy, nor vaunt as if we could do better, when we hear of others that have been foiled; nor be tickled at the thoughts of our own manhood, for such commonly come by the worst when tried. Witness Peter, of whom I made mention before: he would swagger, ay, he would; he would, as his vain mind prompted him to say, do better and stand more for his

i Job xli. 26—29. k Job xxxix. 19—25.

Master than all men: but who so foiled and run down by those villains as he?*

When, therefore, we hear that such robberies are done on the King's highway, two things become us to do: First, to go out harnessed, and to be sure to take a shield with us: for it was for want of that, that he who laid so lustily at Leviathan could not make him yield; for, indeed, if that be wanting, he fears us not at all. Therefore he that had skill hath said, "Above all, take the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked."[l]

IT IS GOOD TO HAVE A CONVOY.

It is good also that we desire of the King a convoy, yea, that he will go with us himself. This made David rejoice when in the Valley of the Shadow of Death; and Moses was rather for dying where he stood, than to go one step without his God.[m] O my brother, if he will but go along with us, what need we be afraid of ten thousand that shall set themselves against us? But without him, the proud helpers fall under the slain.[n]†

l Eph. vi. 16. m Exod. xxxiii. 15. n Psalm iii. 6. xxvii. 1—3. Isa. x. 4.

* From this sweet and edifying conversation, learn not to think more highly of yourself than you ought to think; but to think soberly, according to the measure of faith which God hath dealt to you, Rom. xii. 3. Now, it is of the very essence of faith to lead us out of all self-confidence and vain vaunting. For we know not how soon Faint-heart, Mistrust, and Guilt may spring up in us, set upon us, and rob us of our comforts, and spoil our joys.

† But how contrary to this, is the walk and conduct of some who profess to be pilgrims, and yet can wilfully and deliberately go upon the devil's ground, and indulge themselves in carnal pleasures and sinful diversions? Such evidently declare in plain language, that they desire not the presence of God, but that he should depart from them: but a day will come, which will bring on terrible reflections of mind for such things.

I, for my part, have been in the fray before now; and though, through the goodness of Him that is best, I am, as you see, alive, yet I cannot boast of any manhood. Glad shall I be, if I meet with no more such brunts; though I fear we are not got beyond all danger. However, since the lion and the bear have not as yet devoured me, I hope God will also deliver us from the next uncircumcised Philistine. Then sang Christian—

> Poor Little-Faith! hast been among the thieves?
> Wast robb'd? Remember this, whoso believes,
> And get more faith; then shall you victors be
> Over ten thousand—else scarce over three."

So they went on, and Ignorance followed. They went then till they came at a place where they say a way put itself into their way,* and seemed withal to lie as straight as the way which they should go; and here they knew not which of the two to take, for both seemed straight before them: therefore here they stood still to consider. And as they were thinking about the way, behold a man black of flesh, but covered with a very light robe, came to them, and asked them why they stood there? They answered, they were going to the Celestial City, but knew not which of these ways to take. "Follow me," said the man, "it is thither that I am going." So they followed him in the way that but now came into the road, which by degrees turned, and turned them so far from the city, that they desired to go

A WAY AND A WAY.

CHRISTIAN AND HIS FELLOW DELUDED.

* By this way and a way, it is plain the author means the way of self-righteousness and the way of the imputed righteousness of Christ. The former sticks fast and cleaves close to pilgrims all their days. Whenever we turn aside to it, we get out of the way to the city, yea, we see by degrees their faces were turned away from it, and they were entangled in the net of pride and folly.

to, that in a little time their faces were turned away from it: yet they followed him. But by and by, before they were aware, he led them both within the compass of a net, in which they were both so entangled that they knew not what to do; and with that the white robe fell off the black man's back: then they saw where they were. Wherefore there they lay crying some time, for they could not get themselves out.*

THEY ARE TAKEN IN A NET.

CHR. Then said Christian to his fellow, Now do I see myself in an error. Did not the Shepherds bid us beware of the Flatterer? As is the saying of the wise man, so we have found it this day, "A man that flattereth his neighbour, spreadeth a net for his feet."[o]

THEY BEWAIL THEIR CONDITION.

HOPE. They also gave us a note of directions about the way, for our more sure finding thereof; but therein we have also forgotten to read, and have not kept ourselves from the "paths of the destroyer." Here David was wiser than we; for, saith he, "Concerning the works of men, by the word of thy lips I have kept me from the paths of the destroyer."[p]

Thus they lay bewailing themselves in the net. At last they espied a shining one coming towards them with a whip of small cords

A SHINING ONE COMES TO THEM WITH A WHIP IN HIS HAND.

o Prov. xxix. 5. p Psalm xvii. 4.

* Luther was wont to caution against the white devil, as much as the black one; for Satan transforms himself into an angel of light, and his ministers as ministers of righteousness, 2 Cor. xi. 14, 15. And how do they deceive souls? By flattery: leading poor sinners into a fine notion of some righteous character they have in themselves, what great advances they have made, and what high attainments they have arrived to, even to be perfect in themselves, to be free from sin, and full of nothing but love, &c. Oh! such flatterers and deceivers awfully abound in this day, deceiving the ignorant, and beguiling the unstable. These are black men clothed in white.

in his hand. When he was come to the place where they were, he asked them whence they came, and what they did there? They told him, that they were poor pilgrims going to Zion, but were led out of their way by a black man clothed in white, who bid us, said they, follow him, for he was going thither too. Then said he with the whip, It is Flatterer, "a false apostle, that hath transformed himself into an angel of light."[q] So he rent the net, and let the men out. Then said he to them, Follow me, that I may set you in your way again: so he led them back to the way which they had left to follow the Flatterer. Then he asked them, saying, Where did you lie the last night? They said, With the Shepherds upon the Delectable Mountains. He asked them then, if they had not of the Shepherds a note of direction for the way? They answered, Yes. But did you not, said he, when you were at a stand, pluck out and read your note? They answered, No. He asked them, Why? They said they forgot. He asked, moreover, if the Shepherds did not bid them beware of the Flatterer? They answered, Yes; but we did not imagine, said they, that this fine-spoken man had been he.[r]*

THEY ARE EXAMINED AND CONVICTED OF FORGETFULNESS.

DECEIVERS FINE SPOKEN.

q 2 Cor. xi. 14—15. Dan. xi. 32. r Rom. xvi. 17, 18.

* By this shining one, understand the loving Lord the Holy Ghost, the leader and guide of Christ's people. When they err and stray from Jesus the way, and are drawn from him as the truth, the Spirit comes with his rod of conviction and chastisement, to whip souls, for their self-righteous pride and folly, back to Christ, to trust wholly in him, to rely only on him, and to walk in sweet fellowship with him. So he acted by the Galatian church, which was flattered into a notion of self-righteousness and self-justification. So David, when he found himself nearly lost, cries out—"He restoreth my soul; he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake," Ps. xxiii. 3.

THEY ARE WHIPPED, AND SENT ON THEIR WAY.

Then I saw in my dream, that he commanded them to lie down; which when they did, he chastised them sore, to teach them the good way wherein they should walk:[s] and as he chastised them, he said, "As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten; be zealous, therefore, and repent."[t] This done, he bids them go on their way, and take good heed to the other directions of the Shepherds. So they thanked him for all his kindness, and went softly along the right way, singing—

Come hither, you that walk along the way,
See how the pilgrims fare that go astray:
They catched are in an entangled net,
'Cause they good counsel lightly did forget:
'Tis true, they rescued were; but yet, you see,
They're scourg'd to boot: let this your caution be.

Now, after a while they perceived, afar off, one coming softly, and alone, all along the highway, to meet them. Then said Christian to his fellow, Yonder is a man with his back towards Zion, and he is coming to meet us.

THE ATHEIST MEETS THEM.

HOPE. I see him; let us take heed to ourselves now, lest he should prove a Flatterer also. So he drew nearer and nearer, and at last came up to them. His name was Atheist; and he asked them whither they were going?

CHR. We are going to Mount Zion.

HE LAUGHS AT THEM.

Then Atheist fell into a very great laughter.

CHR. What is the meaning of your laughter?

ATH. I laugh to see what ignorant persons you are, to take upon you so tedious a journey; and yet are like to have nothing but your travel for your pains.

s 2 Chron. vi. 27. t Rev. iii. 19.

THEY REASON TOGETHER.

CHR. Why, man, do you think we shall not be received?

ATH. Received! there is not such a place as you dream of in all this world.

CHR. But there is in the world to come.

ATH. When I was at home, in mine own country, I heard as you now affirm, and from that hearing went out to see, and have been seeking this city these twenty years, but find no more of it than I did the first day I set out.[u]

CHR. We have both heard, and believe that there is such a place to be found.

THE ATHEIST TAKES UP HIS CONTENT IN THIS WORLD.

ATH. Had not I, when at home, believed, I had not come thus far to seek; but finding none (and yet I should, had there been such a place to be found, for I have gone to seek it farther than you,) I am going back again, and will seek to refresh myself with the things that I then cast away for hopes of that which I now see is not.

CHRISTIAN PROVETH HIS BROTHER.

CHR. Then said Christian to Hopeful his companion, Is it true which this man hath said?

HOPEFUL'S GRACIOUS ANSWER.

HOPE. Take heed, he is one of the Flatterers: remember what it cost us once already for our hearkening to such kind of fellows. What! no Mount Zion? Did we not see from the Delectable Mountains the gate of the City? Also, are we not now to walk by faith?[v] Let us go on, lest the man with the whip overtake us again.* You should have taught me

REMEMBRANCE OF FORMER CHASTISEMENT IS A HELP AGAINST PRESENT TEMPTATION.

u Eccl. x. 15. Jer. xvii. 15. v 2 Cor v. 7.

* See how we are surrounded with different enemies. No sooner have they escaped the self-righteous flatterer, but they meet with the openly profane and licentious mocker. Ay, and he set out, and went far too, yea, farther than they; but, behold, he has turned his back

that lesson, which I will round you in the ears withal: "Cease, my son, to hear the instruction that causeth to err from the words of knowledge;"[w] I say, my brother, cease to hear him, and let us believe to the saving of the soul.

CHR. My brother, I did not put the question to thee for that I doubted of the truth of our belief myself, but to prove thee, and to fetch from thee a fruit of the honesty of thy heart. As for this man, I know that he is blinded by the god of this world. Let thee and me go on, knowing that we have belief of the truth; and "no lie is of the truth."[x]

A FRUIT OF AN HONEST HEART.

HOPE. Now do I rejoice in hope of the glory of God. So they turned away from the man; and he, laughing at them, went his way.

I then saw in my dream, that they went on until they came into a certain country whose air naturally tended to make one drowsy, if he came a stranger into it. And here Hopeful began to be very dull and heavy to sleep: wherefore he said unto Christian, I do now begin to grow so drowsy, that I can scarcely hold open mine eyes: let us lie down here, and take one nap.

THEY COME TO THE ENCHANTED GROUND.

HOPEFUL BEGINS TO BE DROWSY.

By no means, said the other; lest, sleeping, we never wake more.

CHRISTIAN KEEPS HIM AWAKE.

HOPE. Why, my brother? sleep is sweet to the labouring man; we may be refreshed, if we take a nap.

CHR. Do you not remember, that one of the Shepherds bid us beware of the Enchanted Ground? He

w Prov. xix. 27. Heb. x. 39. x 1 John ii. 21.

upon all; and though he had been twenty years a seeker, yet now he proves he has neither faith nor hope, but ridicules all as delusion. Awful to think of! Oh, what a special mercy to be kept believing and persevering, and not regarding the ridicule of apostates.

meant by that, that we should beware of sleeping;—"wherefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch, and be sober."[y]*

HOPE. I acknowledge myself in a fault; and, had I been here alone, I had by sleeping run the danger of death. I see it is true that the wise man saith, "Two are better than one."[z] Hitherto hath thy company been my mercy; and thou shalt have a good reward for thy labour.

HE IS THANKFUL.

CHR. Now then, said Christian, to prevent drowsiness in this place, let us fall into good discourse.

GOOD DISCOURSE PREVENTETH DROWSINESS.

HOPE. With all my heart, said the other.

CHR. Where shall we begin?

HOPE. Where God began with us: but do you begin, if you please.

CHR. I will sing you first this song—

THE DREAMER'S NOTE.

When saints do sleepy grow, let them come hither,
And hear how these two pilgrims talk together;
Yea, let them learn of them in any wise
Thus to keep ope their drowsy slumb'ring eyes.
Saints' fellowship, if it be managed well,
Keeps them awake, and that in spite of hell.†

y 1 Thess. v. 6. z Eccl. iv. 9.

* O Christian, beware of sleeping on this enchanted ground! When all things go easy, smooth, and well, we are prone to grow drowsy in soul. How many are the calls, in the word, against spiritual slumber! and yet how many professors, through the enchanting air of this world, are fallen into the deep sleep of formality! Be warned by them to cry to thy Lord to keep thee awake to righteousness, and vigorous in the ways of thy Lord.

† Observation fully evinces this truth, that when the soul slumbers, the tongue is mute to spiritual converse, and the truths of Jesus freeze on the lips; while the man is all ear to hear, and all tongue to talk of vain, worldly, and trifling things. Beware of such sleepy professors. You are in danger of catching the infection: you are sure to get no

THEY BEGIN AT THE BEGINNING OF THEIR CONVERSION.

Then Christian began, and said, I will ask you a question: How came you to think at first of doing what you do now?

HOPE. Do you mean, how I came at first to look after the good of my soul?

CHR. Yes, that is my meaning.

HOPE. I continued a great while in the delight of those things which were seen and sold at our fair; things which I believe now would have, had I continued in them still, drowned me in perdition and destruction.

CHR. What things were they?

HOPEFUL'S LIFE BEFORE CONVERSION.

HOPE. All the treasures and riches of the world. Also I delighted much in rioting, revelling, drinking, swearing, lying, uncleanness, sabbath-breaking, and what not, that tended to destroy the soul. But I found, at last, by hearing and considering of things that are divine, which indeed I heard of you, as also of beloved Faithful, that was put to death for his faith and good living in Vanity Fair, that "the end of these things is death;" and that "for these things' sake, the wrath of God cometh upon the children of disobedience."[a]

CHR. And did you presently fall under the power of this conviction?

HOPEFUL AT FIRST SHUTS HIS EYES AGAINST THE LIGHT.

HOPE. No; I was not willing presently to know the evil of sin, nor the damnation that follows upon the commission of it; but endeavoured, when my mind at first began to be shaken with the word, to shut mine eyes against the light thereof.

CHR. But what was the cause of your carrying of it

a Rom. vi. 21—23. Eph. v. 6.

spiritual edification from them; and there is little hope of being profitable to them: but be sure to be faithful to them, and prize the company of lively Christians.

thus to the first workings of God's blessed Spirit upon you?

HOPE. The causes were—1. I was ignorant that this was the work of God upon me. I never thought that by awakenings for sin, God at first begins the conversion of a sinner. 2. Sin was yet very sweet to my flesh, and I was loath to leave it. 3. I could not tell how to part with mine old companions, their presence and actions were so desirable unto me. 4. The hours in which convictions were upon me, were such troublesome and such heart-affrighting hours, that I could not bear, no, not so much as the remembrance of them upon my heart.*

REASONS OF HIS RESISTING THE LIGHT.

CHR. Then, as it seems, sometimes you got rid of your trouble?

HOPE. Yes, verily; but it would come into my mind again, and then I should be as bad, nay, worse than I was before.

CHR. Why, what was it that brought your sins to mind again?

HOPE. Many things; as,

* Here you see, as our Lord says, "It is the Spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing," John vi. 63. The flesh, or our carnal nature, is so far from profiting in the work of conversion to Christ, that it is an enmity against him, and counteracts and opposes the Spirit's work in showing us our want of him, and bringing us to him. Man's nature and God's grace are two direct opposites. Nature opposes, but grace subdues nature, and brings it to submission and subjection. Are we truly convinced of sin, and converted to Christ? This is a certain and sure evidence of it,—we shall say from our hearts, Not unto us, not unto any yieldings and compliances of our nature, free-will, and power, but unto thy name, O Lord, be all the glory; for it is by the free, sovereign, efficacious grace we are what we are. Hence, see the ignorance, folly, and pride of those who exalt free-will and nature's power, &c. Verily they do not know themselves even as they are known.

WHEN HE HAD LOST HIS SENSE OF SIN, WHAT BROUGHT IT AGAIN.

1. If I did but meet a good man in the streets; or,

2. If I have heard any read in the Bible; or,

3. If mine head did begin to ache; or,

4. If I were told that some of my neighbours were sick; or,

5. If I heard the bell toll for some that were dead; or,

6. If I thought of dying myself; or,

7. If I heard that sudden death happened to others;

8. But especially when I thought of myself, that I must quickly come to judgment.

CHR. And could you at any time, with ease, get off the guilt of sin, when by any of these ways it came upon you?

HOPE. No, not I; for then they got faster hold of my conscience: and then, if I did but think of going back to sin, (though my mind was turned against it,) it would be double torment to me.

CHR. And how did you do then?

WHEN HE COULD NO LONGER SHAKE OFF HIS GUILT BY SINFUL COURSES, THEN HE ENDEAVOURS TO MEND.

HOPE. I thought I must endeavour to mend my life; or else, thought I, I am sure to be damned.

CHR. And did you endeavour to mend?

HOPE. Yes; and fled from not only my sins, but sinful company too, and betook me to religious duties, as praying, reading, weeping for sin, speaking truth to my neighbours, &c. These things did I, with many others, too much here to relate.

CHR. And did you think yourself well then?

HOPE. Yes, for a while; but at the last my trouble came tumbling upon me again, and that over the neck of all my reformations.

THEN HE THOUGHT HIMSELF WELL.

CHR. How came that about, since you were now reformed?

HOPE. There were several things brought it upon me, especially such sayings as these: "All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags;"— "By the works of the law no man shall be justified;"— "When ye have done all these things, say, We are unprofitable:"[b] with many more such like. From whence I began to reason with myself thus: If all my righteousnesses are as filthy rags; if by the deeds of the law no man can be justified; and if, when we have done all, we are yet unprofitable, then 'tis but a folly to think of heaven by the law. I farther thought thus: If a man runs a hundred pounds into the shopkeeper's debt, and after that shall pay for all that he shall fetch; yet, if his old debt stands still in the book uncrossed, the shopkeeper may sue him for it, and cast him into prison till he shall pay the debt.

REFORMATION AT LAST COULD NOT HELP, AND WHY.

HIS BEING A DEBTOR TO THE LAW TROUBLED HIM.

CHR. Well, and how did you apply this to yourself?

HOPE. Why, I thought thus with myself: I have by my sins run a great way into God's book, and that my now reforming will not pay off that score; therefore I should think still, under all my present amendments, But how shall I be freed from that damnation that I brought myself in danger of by my former transgressions?

CHR. A very good application: but pray go on.

HOPE. Another thing that hath troubled me ever since my late amendments, is, that if I look narrowly into the best of what I do now, I still see sin, new sin, mixing itself with the best of that I do: so that now I am forced to conclude, that, notwithstanding my former fond conceits of myself and

HIS ESPYING BAD THINGS IN HIS BEST, TROUBLED HIM.

b Isa. lxiv. 6. Gal. ii. 16. Luke xvii. 10

duties, I have committed sin enough in one day to send me to hell, though my former life had been faultless.*

CHR. And what did you do then?

HOPE. Do! I could not tell what to do, until I broke my mind to Faithful; for he and I were well acquainted: and he told me, that unless I could obtain the righteousness of a man that never had sinned, neither mine own, nor all the righteousness of the world, could save me.†

THIS MADE HIM BREAK HIS MIND TO FAITHFUL, WHO TOLD HIM THE WAY TO BE SAVED.

CHR. And did you think he spake true?

HOPE. Had he told me so when I was pleased and satisfied with mine own amendments, I had called him fool for his pains; but now, since I see mine own infirmity, and the sin which cleaves to my best performance, I have been forced to be of his opinion.

CHR. But did you think, when at first he suggested it to you, that there was such a man to be found, of

* Thus you see, in conversion, the Lord does not act upon us by force and compulsion, as though we were inanimate stocks or stones, or irrational animals, or mere machines. No. We have understanding: He enlightens it. Then we come to a sound mind; we think right, and reason justly. We have wills: what the understanding judges best, the will approves, and then the affections follow after; and thus we chuse Christ for our Saviour, and glory only in his righteousness and salvation. When the heavenly light of truth makes manifest what we are, and the danger we are in, then we rationally fly from the wrath to come, to Christ the refuge set before us.

† Here is the touchstone to try whether conviction and conversion are from the Spirit of truth, or not. Many talk of conviction and conversion-work, who are yet whole in heart, and strong in confidence of a righteousness of their own, or of being made righteous in themselves, instead of looking solely to, and trusting wholly in, the infinitely perfect and everlastingly glorious righteousness of the God-man Christ Jesus, and desiring to be clothed with that, and found in him. All conviction and conversion, short of this, leaves the soul short of Christ's righteousness, of hope, and of heaven.

whom it might justly be said, that he never committed sin?

HOPE. I must confess the words at first sounded strangely; but, after a little more talk and company with him, I had full conviction about it.

AT WHICH HE STARTED AT PRESENT.

CHR. And did you ask him what man this was, and how you must be justified by him?[c]

HOPE. Yes, and he told me it was the Lord Jesus, that dwelleth on the right hand of the Most High: and thus, said he, you must be justified by him, even by trusting to what he hath done by himself in the days of his flesh, and suffered when he did hang on the tree. I asked him, further, how that man's righteousness could be of that efficacy, to justify another before God? And he told me he was the mighty God, and did what he did, and died the death also, not for himself, but for me, to whom his doings, and the worthiness of them, should be imputed, if I believed on him.

A MORE PARTICULAR DISCOURSE OF THE WAY TO BE SAVED.

CHR. And what did you do then?

HOPE. I made my objections against my believing, for that I thought he was not willing to save me.

HE DOUBTS OF ACCEPTATION.

CHR. And what said Faithful to you then?

HOPE. He bid me go to him, and see. Then I said, it was presumption. He said, No, for I was invited to come.[d] Then he gave me a book of Jesus's inditing, to encourage me the more freely to come: and he said, concerning that book, that every jot and tittle thereof stood firmer than heaven and earth.[e] Then I asked him, what I must do when I came? And he told me, I must entreat upon my

HE IS BETTER INSTRUCTED.

c Rom. iv. Col. i. Heb. x. 2 Pet. i. d Matt. xi. 28. e Matt. xxiv. 35.

knees,[f] with all my heart and soul, the Father to reveal him to me. Then I asked him further, how I must make my supplications to him? And he said, Go, and thou shalt find him upon a mercy-seat,[g] where he sits all the year long, to give pardon and forgiveness to them that come. I told him, that I knew not what to say when I came. And he bid me say to this effect—"God be merciful to me a sinner," and "make me to know and believe in Jesus Christ; for I see, that if his righteousness had not been, or I have not faith in that righteousness, I am utterly cast away.* Lord, I have heard that thou art a merciful God, and hast ordained that thy Son Jesus Christ should be the Saviour of the world: and, moreover, that thou art willing to bestow him upon such a poor sinner as I am, (and I am a sinner indeed: Lord, take therefore this opportunity, and magnify thy grace in the salvation of my soul, through thy Son Jesus Christ. Amen."

HE IS BID TO PRAY.

CHR. And did you do as you were bidden?

HE PRAYS. HOPE. Yes, over, and over, and over.

CHR. And did the Father reveal the Son to you?

HOPE. Not at the first, nor second, nor third, nor fourth, nor fifth, no, nor at the sixth time neither.†

CHR. What did you do then?

f Psalm xcv. 6. Jer. xxix. 12, 13. Dan. xi. 10. g Exod. xxv. 22. Lev. xv. 2. Heb. iv. 16.

* Pray mind this. The grand object of a sensible sinner, is righteousness. He has it not in himself: this he knows. Where is it to be found? In Christ only. This is a revealed truth; and without faith in this, every sinner must be lost. Consider, it is at the peril of your souls that you reject the righteousness of Christ, and do not believe that God imputes it without works for the justification of the ungodly. O ye stout-hearted, self-righteous sinners, ye are far from righteousness! Know this, and tremble.

† There may be, and often are, very great discouragements found in the sinner's heart, when he first begins to seek the Lord. But he has Christ's faithful word of promise, "Seek, and ye shall find," &c.

HOPE. What! why, I could not tell what to do.

CHR. Had you not thoughts of leaving off praying?

HE THOUGHT TO LEAVE OFF PRAYING.

HOPE. Yes, and a hundred times twice told.

CHR. And what was the reason you did not?

HOPE. I believed that it was true which had been told me, to wit, that without the righteousness of this Christ, all the world could not save me: and therefore, thought I with myself, If I leave off, I die, and I can but die at the throne of grace. And withal this came into my mind, "If it tarry, wait for it, because it will surely come, and will not tarry."[h] So I continued praying, until the Father showed me his Son.*

HE DURST NOT LEAVE OFF PRAYING, AND WHY.

CHR. And how was he revealed unto you?

HOPE. I did not see him with my bodily eyes, but with the eyes of mine understanding;[i] and thus it was: One day I was very sad, I think sadder than at any one time in my life; and this sadness was through a fresh sight of the greatness and vileness of my sins. And as I was then looking for nothing but hell, and the everlasting damnation of my soul, suddenly, as I thought, I saw the Lord Jesus look down from heaven upon me, and saying, "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved."[k]

CHRIST IS REVEALED TO HIM, AND HOW.

h Hab. ii. 3. i Eph. i. 18, 19. k Acts xvi. 30, 31.

Luke xi. 9. "The vision is for an appointed time; it shall come: though it tarry, wait for it, because it will surely come, and will not tarry," Hab. ii. 3.

* The true nature of faith is, to believe and rest upon the word of truth, and wait for the promised comfort. That faith which is the gift of God, leads the soul to wait upon and cry to God, and not to rest till it has some blessed testimony, from God, of interest in the love and favour of God in Christ Jesus. But oh how many professors rest short of this!

But I replied, Lord, I am a great, a very great sinner: and he answered, "My grace is sufficient for thee." Then I said, But, Lord, what is believing? And then I saw from that saying, "He that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst;"[l] that believing and coming was all one; and that he that came, that is, ran out in his heart and affections after salvation by Christ, he indeed believed in Christ. Then the water stood in mine eyes, and I asked further, But, Lord, may such a great sinner as I am be indeed accepted of thee, and be saved by thee? And I heard him say, "And him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out."[m] Then I said, But how, Lord, must I consider of thee in my coming to thee, that my faith may be placed aright upon thee? Then he said, "Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners: he is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believes: he died for our sins, and rose again for our justification: he loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood: he is Mediator betwixt God and us: he ever liveth to make intercession for us."[n] From all which I gathered, that I must look for righteousness in his person, and for satisfaction for my sins by his blood;* that what he did in obedience to his Father's law, and in submitting to the penalty thereof, was not for himself, but for him that will accept it for his salvation, and be thankful. And now was my heart

l John vi. 35. m John vi. 37. n 1 Tim. i. 15. Rom. x. 4. Heb. vii. 24, 25.

* Reader, never think that you are fully convinced of the whole truth, nor believe fully on Christ according to the Scriptures, unless you have seen as mush need of Christ's glorious righteousness to justify, as of his precious blood to pardon you. Both are revealed in the gospel; both are the objects of faith; by both is the conscience pacified, the heart purified, the soul justified, and Jesus glorified in the heart, lip, and life.

full of joy, mine eyes full of tears, and mine affections running over with love to the name, people, and ways of Jesus Christ.

CHR. This was a revelation of Christ to your soul indeed: but tell me particularly what effect this had upon your spirit.

HOPE. It made me see that all the world, notwithstanding all the righteousness thereof, is in a state of condemnation: it made me see that God the Father, though he be just, can justly justify the coming sinner: it made me greatly ashamed of the vileness of my former life, and confounded me with the sense of mine own ignorance; for there never came a thought into my heart, before now, that showed me so the beauty of Jesus Christ: it made me love a holy life, and long to do something for the honour and glory of the name of the Lord Jesus; yea, I thought that, had I now a thousand gallons of blood in my body, I could spill it all for the sake of the Lord Jesus.

I saw then in my dream, that Hopeful looked back, and saw Ignorance, whom they had left behind, coming after. Look, said he to Christian, how far yonder youngster loitereth behind.

CHR. Ay, ay, I see him: he careth not for our company.

HOPE. But I trow it would not have hurt him, had he kept pace with us hitherto.

CHR. That is true; but I'll warrant you he thinketh otherwise.

HOPE. That I think he doth: but, however, let us tarry for him. (So they did.)

YOUNG IGNORANCE COMES UP AGAIN.

Then Christian said to him, Come away, man; why do you stay so behind?

IGNOR. I take my pleasure in walking alone; even more a great deal than in company, unless I like it the better.

THEIR TALK.

Then said Christian to Hopeful, (but softly,) Did I not tell you he cared not for our company? But, however, said he, come up, and let us talk away the time in this solitary place. Then, directing his speech to Ignorance, he said, Come, how do you do? How stands it between God and your soul now?

IGNOR. I hope well, for I am always full of good motions, that come into my mind to comfort me as I walk.*

IGNORANCE'S HOPE, AND THE GROUND OF IT.

CHR. What good motions? Pray tell us.

IGNOR. Why, I think of God and heaven.

CHR. So do the devils and damned souls.

IGNOR. But I think of them, and desire them.

CHR. So do many that are never like to come there. "The soul of the sluggard desireth, and hath nothing."[o]

IGNOR. But I think of them, and leave all for them.

CHR. That I doubt: for to leave *all* is a very hard matter: yea, a harder matter than many are aware of.

o Prov. xiii. 4.

* Real Christians are often put to a stand, when they find and feel the working of all corruptions and sins in their own nature, while they hear others talk so highly of themselves, how full their heart is of love to God, good motions, &c. and without any complainings of the plague of their heart. But all this proceeds from ignorance of its true state: for pride and self-righteousness harden them against feeling its desperate wickedness. But divine teaching causes a Christian to see, know, and feel the worst of himself, that he may glory of nothing in or of himself, but that all his glorying should be of what precious Christ is to him, and what he is in Christ. See the contrary of all this exemplified in Ignorance, in whom we see, as in a mirror, many professors who are strangers to their own hearts, and hence are deceived into vain self-confidence.

But why, or for what, art thou persuaded that thou hast left all for God and heaven?

IGNOR. My heart tells me so.

CHR. The wise man says, "He that trusteth in his own heart is a fool."[p]

IGNOR. That is spoken of an evil heart; but mine is a good one.

CHR. But how dost thou prove that?

IGNOR. It comforts me in hopes of heaven.

CHR. That may be through its deceitfulness; for a man's heart may minister comfort to him in the hopes of that thing, for which he has yet no ground to hope.

IGNOR. But my heart and life agree together; and therefore my hope is well grounded.

CHR. Who told thee that thy heart and life agree together?

IGNOR. My heart tells me so.

CHR. "Ask my fellow if I be a thief." Thy heart tells thee so! Except the word of God beareth witness in this matter, other testimony is of no value.

IGNOR. But is it not a good heart that hath good thoughts? and is not that a good life that is according to God's commandments?

CHR. Yes, that is a good heart that hath good thoughts, and that is a good life that is according to God's commandments; but it is one thing indeed to have these, and another thing only to think so.

IGNOR. Pray, what count you good thoughts, and a life according to God's commandments?

CHR. There are good thoughts of divers kinds;—some respecting ourselves, some God, some Christ, and some other things.

IGNOR. What be good thoughts respecting ourselves?

p Prov. xxviii. 26.

WHAT ARE GOOD THOUGHTS.

CHR. Such as agree with the word of God.

IGNOR. When do our thoughts of ourselves agree with the word of God?

CHR. When we pass the same judgment upon ourselves, which the word passes. To explain myself: the word of God saith of persons in a natural condition, "There is none righteous, there is none that doeth good." It saith also, that "every imagination of the heart of man is only evil, and that continually."[q] And again, "The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth." Now then, when we think thus of ourselves, having sense thereof, then are our thoughts good ones, because according to the word of God.

IGNOR. I will never believe that my heart is thus bad.*

CHR. Therefore thou never hadst one good thought concerning thyself in thy life.—But let me go on. As the word passeth a judgment upon our hearts, so it passeth a judgment upon our ways; and when the thoughts of our hearts and ways agree with the judgment which the word giveth of both, then are both good, because agreeing thereto.

IGNOR. Make out your meaning.

CHR. Why, the word of God saith, that man's ways are crooked ways,[r] not good, but perverse: it saith, they are naturally out of the good way, that they have not

q Gen. vi. 5. r Psalm cxxv. 5.

* No; no man naturally can. But this is a sure sign that the light from heaven hath not shined into the heart, and made it manifest how superlatively wicked the heart is; and consequently how it deceives ignorant professors with a notion of being good in themselves, and keeps them from wholly relying upon Christ's atonement for pardon, and trusting only to his righteousness for justification unto life.

known it.[r] Now, when a man thus thinketh of his ways, I say, when he doth sensibly, and with heart-humiliation, thus think, then hath he good thoughts of his own ways, because his thoughts now agree with the judgment of the word of God.

IGNOR. What are good thoughts concerning God?

CHR. Even, as I have said concerning ourselves, when our thoughts of God do agree with what the word saith of him; and that is, when we think of his being and attributes as the word hath taught; of which I cannot now discourse at large. But to speak of him with reference to us: then have we right thoughts of God when we think that he knows us better than we know ourselves, and can see sin in us when and where we can see none in ourselves: when we think he knows our inmost thoughts, and that our heart, with all its depths, is always open unto his eyes: also when we think that all our righteousness stinks in his nostrils, and that therefore he cannot abide to see us stand before him in any confidence, even in all our best performances.

IGNOR. Do you think that I am such a fool as to think that God can see no farther than I? or that I would come to God in the best of my performances?

CHR. Why, how dost thou think in this matter?

IGNOR. Why, to be short, I think I must believe in Christ for justification.

CHR. How! think thou must believe in Christ, when thou seest not thy need of him! Thou neither seest thy original nor actual infirmities; but hast such an opinion of thyself, and of what thou dost, as plainly renders thee to be one that did never see the necessity

[r] Prov. ii. 15. Rom. iii. 17

of Christ's personal righteousness to justify thee before God.* How then dost thou say, I believe in Christ?

IGNOR. I believe well enough for all that.

CHR. How dost thou believe?

THE FAITH OF IGNORANCE.

IGNOR. I believe that Christ died for sinners; and that I shall be justified before God from the curse through his gracious acceptance of my obedience to his laws. Or thus, Christ makes my duties, that are religious, acceptable to his Father by virtue of his merits; and so shall I be justified.†

CHR. Let me give an answer to this confession of thy faith:

1. Thou believest with a fantastical faith; for this faith is no where described in the word.

2. Thou believest with a false faith; because it takes justification from the personal righteousness of Christ, and appliest it to thy own.

3. This faith maketh not Christ a justifier of thy person, but of thy actions; and of thy person for thy actions' sake, which is false.

4. Therefore this faith is deceitful, even such as will leave thee under wrath in the day of God Almighty: for true justifying faith puts the soul, as sensible of its

* Here we see how naturally the notion of man's righteousness blinds his eyes to, and keeps his heart from, believing that Christ's personal righteousness alone justifies a sinner in the sight of God; and yet such talk bravely of believing, but their faith is only fancy. They do not believe unto righteousness, but imagine they have now, or shall get, a righteousness of their own, somehow or other. Awful delusion!

† Here is the very essence of that delusion which works by a lie, and so much prevails, and keeps up an unscriptural hope in the hearts of so many professors. Do, reader, study this point well; for here seems to be a show of scriptural truth, while the rankest poison lies concealed in it: for it is utterly subversive of, and contrary to, the faith and hope of the gospel.

lost condition by the law, upon flying for refuge unto Christ's righteousness; (which righteousness of his is not an act of grace by which he maketh, for justification, thy obedience accepted with God, but his personal obedience to the law, in doing and suffering for us what that required at our hands:) this righteousness, I say, true faith accepteth; under the skirt of which the soul being shrouded, and by it presented as spotless before God, it is accepted, and acquitted from condemnation.*

IGNOR. What! would you have us trust to what Christ in his own person hath done without us. This conceit would loosen the reins of our lusts, and tolerate us to live as we list: for what matter how we live, if we may be justified by Christ's personal righteousness from all, when we believe it?†

CHR. Ignorance is thy name, and as thy name is, so art thou: even this thy answer demonstrateth what I say. Ignorant thou art of what justifying righteousness

* Under these four heads, we have a most excellent detection of a presumptive and most dangerous error which now greatly prevails; as well as a scriptural view of the nature of true faith, and the object it fixes on wholly and solely for justification before God, and acceptance with God. Reader, for thy soul's sake look to thy foundation. See that you build upon nothing in self, but all upon that sure foundation which God hath laid, even his beloved Son, and his perfect righteousness.

† No sooner can you propose to an ignorant professor, Christ's righteousness alone for justification, but he instantly displays his ignorance of the power of the truth, and the influence of faith, by crying out, "Antinominianism! Oh, you are for destroying holiness at the root, and for bringing in licentiousness like a flood." Thus pride works by a lie, and is supported by self-righteousness, in opposition to God's grace, and submission to Christ's righteousness. Under this plausible pretence for holiness, Christ's righteousness is rejected, and men are hardened in sinful pride; and they grow stout-hearted against the imputed righteousness of Christ, by establishing their own. This is a spreading heresy of the flesh, which most dreadfully prevails at this day. Be not deceived.

is, and as ignorant how to secure thy soul, through the faith of it, from the heavy wrath of God. Yea, thou also art ignorant of the true effects of saving faith in this righteousness of Christ, which is to bow and win over the heart to God in Christ, to love his name, his word, ways, and people, and not as thou ignorantly imaginest.

HOPE. Ask him if ever he had Christ revealed to him from heaven.*

IGNORANCE JANGLES WITH THEM.

IGNOR. What! you are a man for revelations! I do believe, that what both you and all the rest of you say about that matter, is but the fruit of distracted brains.

HOPE. Why, man! Christ is so hid in God from the natural apprehensions of the flesh, that he cannot by any man be savingly known, unless God the Father reveals him to him.

HE SPEAKS REPROACHFULLY OF WHAT HE KNOWS NOT.

IGNOR. This is your faith, but not mine: yet mine, I doubt not, is as good as yours,

* This, by all natural men, is deemed the very height of enthusiasm; but a spiritual man knows the blessedness, and rejoices in the comfort, of this. It is a close question: what may we understand by it? Doubtless, what Paul means, when he says, "It pleased God to reveal his Son in me," Gal. i. 16; that is, he had such an internal, spiritual, experimental sight and knowledge of Christ, and of salvation by him, that his heart embraced him, his soul cleaved to him, his spirit rejoiced in him, his whole man was swallowed up with the love of him; so that he cried out in the joy of his soul, This is my beloved and my friend—my Saviour, my God, and my salvation! He is the chief of ten thousand, and altogether lovely. We know nothing of Christ savingly, comfortably, and experimentally, till he is pleased thus to reveal himself to us, Matt. xi. 27. This spiritual revelation of Christ to the heart, is a blessing and comfort agreeable to, and consequent upon, believing on Christ as revealed outwardly in the word. Therefore every believer should wait, and look, and long, and pray for it. Beware you do not despise it; if you do, you will betray your ignorance of spiritual things, as Ignorance did.

though I have not in my head so many whimsies as you.

CHR. Give me leave to put in a word. You ought not so slightly to speak of this matter: for this I will boldly affirm, even as my good companion hath done, that no man can know Jesus Christ but by the revelation of the Father; yea, and faith too, by which the soul layeth hold upon Christ, (if it be right,) must be wrought by the exceeding greatness of his mighty power;[t] the working of which faith, I perceive, poor Ignorance, thou art ignorant of. Be awakened then, see thine own wretchedness, and fly to the Lord Jesus; and by his righteousness, which is the righteousness of God, (for he himself is God,) thou shalt be delivered from condemnation.*

IGNOR. You go so fast I cannot keep pace with you; do you go on before: I must stay a while behind.† Then they said: THE TALK BROKE UP.

Well, Ignorance, wilt thou yet foolish be
To slight good counsel, ten times given thee?
And if thou yet refuse it, thou shalt know,
Ere long, the evil of thy doing so.
Remember, man, in time; stoop, do not fear:
Good counsel taken well, saves; therefore hear:
But if thou yet shalt slight it, thou wilt be
The loser, Ignorance, I'll warrant thee.

t Matt. xi. 27. 1 Cor. xii. 3. Eph. i. 17—19.

* That sinner is not thoroughly awakened, who does not see his need of Christ's righteousness to be imputed to him. Nor is he quickened, who has not fled to Christ as the end of the law for righteousness to every one who believes, Rom. x. 4.

† Ignorant professors cannot keep pace with spiritual pilgrims, nor can they relish the doctrine of making Christ all in all, in the matter of justification and salvation; and making the sinner nothing at all, as having no hand in the work, nor getting any glory to himself by what

Then Christian addressed himself thus to his fellow:

CHR. Well, come, my good Hopeful, I perceive that thou and I must walk by ourselves again.

So I saw in my dream, that they went on apace before, and Ignorance he came hobbling after. Then said Christian to his companion, It pities me much for this poor man: it will certainly go ill with him at last.

HOPE. Alas! there are abundance in our town in this condition, whole families, yea, whole streets, and that of pilgrims too; and if there be so many in our parts, how many, think you, must there be in the place where he was born?*

CHR. Indeed, the word saith, "He hath blinded their eyes, lest they should see," &c.

But, now we are by ourselves, what do you think of such men? Have they at no time, think you, convictions of sin; and so, consequently, fears that their state is dangerous?

HOPE. Nay, do you answer that question yourself, for you are the elder man.

CHR. Then I say, sometimes (as I think) they may; but they, being naturally ignorant, understand not that such convictions tend to their good; and therefore they do desperately seek to stifle them, and presumptuously continue to flatter themselves in the way of their own hearts.

he is able to do for himself. Free grace and free will, Christ's imputed righteousness and the notion of man's personal righteousness, cannot accord.

* Ignorance had just the same natural notions of salvation which he was born with; only he had been taught to dress them up by the art of sophistry. Hence it is they so much abound among professors in every age. Oh, what a mercy to be delivered from them, to be spiritually enlightened, and taught the truth as it is in Jesus!

HOPE. I do believe, as you say, that fear tends much to men's good, and to make them right at their beginning to go on pilgrimage.

THE GOOD USE OF FEAR.

CHR. Without all doubt it doth, if it be right: for so says the word, "The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom."[u]

HOPE. How will you describe right fear?

CHR. True or right fear is discovered by three things:

RIGHT FEAR.

1. By its rise: it is caused by saving convictions for sin.

2. It driveth the soul to lay fast hold of Christ for salvation.

3. It begetteth and continueth in the soul a great reverence of God, his word, and ways; keeping it tender, and making it afraid to turn from them, to the right hand or to the left, to any thing that may dishonour God, break its peace, grieve the Spirit, or cause the enemy to speak reproachfully.

HOPE. Well said; I believe you have said the truth. Are we now almost got past the Enchanted Ground?

CHR. Why? are you weary of this discourse?

HOPE. No, verily, but that I would know where we are.

CHR. We have not now above two miles farther to go thereon.—But let us return to our matter—Now, the ignorant know not that such convictions as tend to put them in fear, are for their good, and therefore they seek to stifle them.

WHY IGNORANT PERSONS STIFLE CONVICTION.

HOPE. How do they seek to stifle them?

CHR. 1. They think that those fears are wrought by the devil, (though indeed they are wrought of God;) and thinking so, they resist them, as things that directly

u Job xxviii. 28. Psalm cxi. 10. Prov. i. 7. ix. 10.

tend to their overthrow. 2. They also think that these fears tend to the spoiling of their faith; when, alas for them, poor men that they are, they have none at all! and therefore they harden their hearts against them. 3. They presume they ought not to fear, and therefore in despite of them wax presumptuously confident. 4. They see that those fears tend to take away from them their pitiful old self-holiness,* and therefore they resist them with all their might.

HOPE. I know something of this myself; for before I knew myself, it was so with me.†

CHR. Well, we will leave, at this time, our neighbour Ignorance by himself, and fall upon another profitable question.

HOPE. With all my heart: but you shall still begin.

TALK ABOUT ONE TEMPORARY.

CHR. Well then, did you know, about ten years ago, one Temporary in your parts, who was a forward man in religion then?

WHERE HE DWELT.

HOPE. Know him! yes; he dwelt in Graceless, a town about two miles off of Honesty, and he dwelt next door to one Turnback.

HE WAS TOWARDLY ONCE.

CHR. Right; he dwelt under the same roof with him. Well, that man was much awakened once: I believe that then he had some

* Pitiful old self-holiness. Mind this phrase. Far was it from the heart of good Mr. Bunyan to decry real personal holiness. I suppose he was never charged with it. If he was, it must be by such who strive to exalt their own holiness, more than Christ's righteousness; if so, it is pitiful indeed. It is nothing but self-holiness, or the holiness of the old man of sin; for true holiness springs from the belief of the truth, and love to the truth. All beside this only tends to self-confidence and self-applause.

† It is good to call to mind one's own ignorance, when in our natural estate, to excite humility of heart, and thankfulness to God, who made us to differ; and to incite pity towards those who are walking in nature's pride, self-righteousness, and self-confidence.

sight of his sins, and of the wages that were due thereto.

HOPE. I am of your mind, for, my house not being above three miles from him, he would ofttimes come to me, and that with many tears. Truly I pitied the man, and was not altogether without hope of him: but one may see, it is not every one that cries, "Lord, Lord."

CHR. He told me once that he was resolved to go on pilgrimage, as we go now; but all of a sudden he grew acquainted with one Save-self,* and then he became a stranger to me.

HOPE. Now, since we are talking about him, let us a little inquire into the reason of the sudden backsliding of him and such others.

CHR. It may be very profitable; but do you begin.

HOPE. Well, then, there are in my judgment four reasons for it:—

REASONS WHY TOWARDLY ONES GO BACK.

1. Though the consciences of such men are awakened, yet their minds are not changed: therefore, when the power of guilt weareth away, that which provoked them to be religious ceaseth; wherefore they naturally turn to their old course again: even as we see the dog that is sick of what he hath eaten, so long as his sickness prevails, he vomits and casts up all; not that he doth this of a free mind, (if we may say a dog has a mind,) but because it troubleth

* Saveself. This generation greatly abounds among us. Those who are under this spirit, are strangers to themselves, to the truths of God's law, and the promises of his gospel, and so consequently are strangers to those who know themselves to be totally lost, are dead to every hope of saving themselves, and look only to, and glory only in, the finished salvation of Jesus. "Two cannot walk together except they be agreed," Amos iii. 3.

his stomach. But now, when his sickness is over, and so his stomach eased, his desires being not at all alienated from his vomit, he turns him about, and licks up all; and so it is true which is written, "The dog is turned to his own vomit again."[v] Thus, I say, being hot for heaven, by virtue only of the sense and fear of the torments of hell; as their sense of hell, and fear of damnation, chills and cools, so their desires for heaven and salvation cool also. So then it comes to pass, that when their guilt and fear is gone, their desires for heaven and happiness die, and they return to their course again.*

2. Another reason is, they have slavish fears that do overmaster them: I speak now of the fears that they have of men; "for the fear of man bringeth a snare."[w] So then, though they seem to be hot for heaven so long as the flames of hell are about their ears, yet, when that terror is a little over, they betake themselves to second thoughts, namely, that it is good to be wise, and not to run (for they know not what) the hazard of losing all, or at least of bringing themselves into unavoidable and unnecessary troubles; and so they fall in with the world again.

3. The shame that attends religion lies also as a block in their way: they are proud and haughty, and religion in their eye is low and contemptible; therefore

v 2 Pet. ii. 22. w Prov. xxix. 25.

* A true description of the state of some professors. Here see the reason why so many saints, as they are called, fall away. From hence, some take occasion to deny the scriptural, soul-comforting doctrine of the certain perseverance of God's saints unto eternal glory. So they display the pride of their own hearts, their ignorance of God's word, while they make God's promises of no effect, and the gospel of his grace, only—much ado about nothing.

when they have lost their sense of hell and the wrath to come, they return again to their former course.

4. Guilt, and to meditate terror, are grievous to them; they like not to see their misery before they come into it; though perhaps the sight of it at first, if they loved that sight, might make them fly whither the righteous fly, and are safe; but because they do, as I hinted before, even shun the thoughts of guilt and terror, therefore, when once they are rid of their awakenings about the terrors and wrath of God, they harden their hearts gladly, and choose such ways as will harden them more and more.

CHR. You are pretty near the business, for the bottom of all is, for want of a change in their mind and will.* And therefore they are but like the felon that standeth before the judge; he quakes and trembles, and seems to repent most heartily: but the bottom of all is, the fear of the halter: not that he hath any detestation of the offence, as it is evident; because, let but this man have his liberty, and he will be a thief, and so a rogue still; whereas, if his mind was changed, he would be otherwise.

HOPE. Now I have showed you the reason of their going back, do you show me the manner thereof.

* Now, when we read of the dog turning to his own vomit, and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire, 2 Pet. ii. 22. it gives us an idea, that persons may receive somewhat of the doctrines of the gospel, so as to set their stomachs against, and cause them to loathe their former filthy ways, and, like the dog, to cast them off; and, like the swine, to be washed from their former filthy courses. But what then? There is only an outward change in conduct, without an internal change of heart; they are the same old creatures, unclean creatures, dogs and swine still, therefore they manifest it by acting as such. They are like the ass in the lion's skin, in the fable, and soon display what they naturally are.

CHR. So I will willingly:—

HOW THE APOSTATE GOES BACK.

1. They draw off their thoughts, all that they may, from the remembrance of God, death, and judgment to come.

2. Then they cast off by degrees private duties, as closet prayer, curbing their lusts, watching, sorrow for sin, and the like.

3. Then they shun the company of lively and warm Christians.

4. After that they grow cold to public duty; as hearing, reading, godly conference, and the like.

5. Then they begin to pick holes, as we say, in the coats of some of the godly, and that devilishly, that they may have a seeming colour to throw religion (for the sake of some infirmities they have espied in them) behind their backs.

6. Then they begin to adhere to, and associate themselves with, carnal, loose, and wanton men.

7. Then they give way to carnal and wanton discourses in secret; and glad are they if they can see such things in any that are counted honest, that they may the more boldly do it through their example.

8. After this they begin to play with little sins openly.

9. And then, being hardened, they show themselves as they are. Thus, being launched again into the gulf of misery, unless a miracle of grace prevent it, they everlastingly perish in their own deceivings.*

* See how gradually, step by step, apostates go back. It begins in the unbelief of the heart, and ends in open sins in the life. Why is the love of this world so forbidden? why is covetousness called idolatry? Because, whatever draws away the heart from God, and prevents enjoying close fellowship with him, naturally tends to apostasy from him. Look well to your hearts and affections. Daily learn to

Now I saw in my dream, that by this time the pilgrims were got over the Enchanted Ground, and entering into the country of Beulah,[x] whose air was very sweet and pleasant; the way lying directly through it, they solaced themselves there for a season. Yea, here they heard continually the singing of birds, and saw every day the flowers appear in the earth, and heard the voice of the turtle in the land. In this country the sun shineth night and day: wherefore this was beyond the Valley of the Shadow of Death, and also out of the reach of Giant Despair; neither could they from this place so much as see Doubting Castle.* Here they were within sight of the City they were going to: also here met them some of the inhabitants thereof; for in this land the shining ones commonly walked, ANGELS. because it was upon the borders of heaven. In this land also the contract between the Bride and the Bridegroom was renewed: yea, here, "as the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so doth their God rejoice over them." Here they had no want of corn and wine; for in this place they met with abundance of what they had sought for in all their pilgrimage. Here they heard voices from out of the city, loud voices, saying, "Say

x Isa. lxii. 4—12. Song ii. 10—12.

obey that command, "Keep thy heart with all diligence, for out of it are the issues of life," Prov. iv. 23. If you neglect to watch, you will be sure to smart—under the sense of sin on earth, or its curse in hell. "See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, redeeming the time, because the days are evil," Eph. v. 15, 16.

* O what a blessed state, what a glorious frame of soul, is this! Job speaks of it, as the candle of the Lord shining upon his head, ch. xxix. 3. The church in a rapture, cries out, "Sing, O heavens, and be joyful, O earth, break forth into singing, O mountains, for the Lord hath comforted his people," Isa. xxix. 13. Paul calls this, "the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of peace" Rom. xv. 29. O rest not short of enjoying the full blaze of gospel peace and spiritual joy.

ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy salvation cometh! Behold, his reward is with him!" Here all the inhabitants of the country called them, "the holy people, the redeemed of the Lord, sought out," &c.

Now, as they walked in this land, they had more rejoicing than in parts more remote from the kingdom to which they were bound; and, drawing near to the City, they had yet a more perfect view thereof. It was builded of pearls and precious stones, also the streets thereof were paved with gold; so that, by reason of the natural glory of the City, and the reflection of the sunbeams upon it, Christian with desire fell sick. Hopeful also had a fit or two of the same disease. Wherefore here they lay by it a while, crying out because of their pangs, "If you see my beloved, tell him that I am sick of love."*

But, being a little strengthened, and better able to bear their sickness, they walked on their way, and came yet nearer and nearer, where were orchards, vineyards, and gardens, and their gates opened into the highway. Now, as they came up to these places, behold the gardener stood in the way; to whom the pilgrims said, Whose goodly vineyards and gardens are these? He answered, They are the King's, and are planted here for his own delight, and also for the solace of pilgrims. So the gardener had them into the vineyards, and bid them refresh themselves with the dainties;[y] he also

y Deut. xxiii. 24.

* See what it is to long for the full fruition of Jesus in glory. Some have been so overpowered hereby, that their earthen vessels were ready to burst: their frail bodies have been so overcome, that they have cried, Lord, hold thine hand, I faint, I sink, I die, with a full sense of thy precious, precious love. Covet earnestly this best gift, love. Lord, shed it more abundantly abroad in these cold hearts of ours!

showed them there the King's walks and arbours where he delighted to be: and here they tarried and slept.

Now I beheld in my dream, that they talked more in their sleep at this time than ever they did in all their journey; and, being in a muse thereabout, the gardener said even to me, Wherefore musest thou at the matter? it is the nature of the fruit of the grapes of these vineyards, "to go down so sweetly as to cause the lips of them that are asleep to speak."

So I saw that when they awoke, they addressed themselves to go up to the City. But, as I said, the reflection of the sun upon the City (for the City was pure gold[z]) was so extremely glorious, that they could not as yet with open face behold it, but through an instrument made for that purpose. So I saw that, as they went on, there met them two men in raiment that shone like gold, also their faces shone as the light.

These men asked the pilgrims whence they came; and they told them. They also asked them where they had lodged, what difficulties and dangers, what comforts and pleasures, they had met with in the way; and they told them. Then said the men that met them, You have but two difficulties more to meet with, and then you are in the City.*

Christian then and his companion asked the men to go along with them: so they told them that they would. But, said they, you must obtain it by your own faith.

z Rev. xxi. 18. 2 Cor. iii. 18.

* What are these two difficulties? are they not death without, and unbelief within? It is through the latter, that the former is at all distressing to us. O for a strong, world-conquering, sin-subduing, death-overcoming faith, in life and in death! Jesus, Master, speak the word—unbelief shall flee, our faith shall not fail, and our hope shall be steady.

So I saw in my dream, that they went on together till they came in sight of the gate.

Now I further saw, that betwixt them and the gate was a river; but there was no bridge to go over: the river was very deep. At the sight, therefore, of this river the pilgrims were much stunned; but the men that went with them said, You must go through, or you cannot come at the gate.*

DEATH.

The pilgrims then began to inquire, if there was no other way to the gate? To which they answered, Yes; but there hath not any, save two, to wit, Enoch and Elijah, been permitted to tread that path since the foundation of the world, nor shall until the last trumpet shall sound. The pilgrims then, especially Christian, began to despond in his mind, and looked this way and that; but no way could be found by them, by which they might escape the river. Then they asked the men if the waters were all of a depth? They said, No; yet they could not help them in that case; for, said they, you shall find it deeper or shallower, as you believe in the King of the place.†

DEATH NOT WELCOME TO NATURE, THOUGH BY IT WE PASS OUT OF THIS WORLD INTO GLORY.

ANGELS HELP US NOT COMFORTABLY THROUGH DEATH.

* Well, now the pilgrims must meet with and encounter their last enemy, death. When he stares them in the face, their fears arise. Through the river they must go. What have they to look at? What they are in themselves, or what they have done and been? No. Only the same Jesus who conquered death for us, and can overcome the fear of death in us.

† Faith builds a bridge across the gulf of death.
Death's terror is the mountain faith removes.
'Tis faith disarms destruction; and absolves
From ev'ry clam'rous charge the guiltless tomb.

For, faith views, trusts in, and relies upon the work of Christ for salvation, and the victory of Christ over sin, death, and hell. Therefore in every thing, we shall always prove the truth of our Lord's words, "According to your faith, be it unto you," Matt. ix. 29. O what sup-

They then addressed themselves to the water, and, entering, Christian began to sink, and, crying out to his good friend Hopeful, he said, I sink in deep waters; the billows go over my head; all his waves go over me. Selah.

Then said the other, Be of good cheer, my brother; I feel the bottom, and it is good. Then said Christian, Ah! my friend, the sorrows of death have compassed me about, I shall not see the land that flows with milk and honey. And with that a great darkness and horror fell upon Christian, so that he could not see before him.* Also here he in a great measure lost his senses, so that he could neither remember nor orderly talk of any of those sweet refreshments that he had met with in the way of his pilgrimage. But all the words that he spoke still tended to discover that he had horror of mind, and heart-fears that he should die in that river, and never obtain entrance in at the gate. Here also, as they that stood by perceived, he was much in the troublesome thoughts of the sins that he had committed, both since and before he began to be a pilgrim. It was also observed, that he was troubled with apparitions of hobgoblins and evil spirits;

CHRISTIAN'S CONFLICT AT THE HOUR OF DEATH.

port in death, to have Jesus our triumphant conqueror to look unto, who has disarmed death of its sting, and swallowed up death in his victory!

* What! after all the past, blessed experience that Christian had enjoyed, of his Lord's peace, love, joy, and presence with him, his holy transports and heavenly consolations, is all come to this at the last? You know, "the last enemy that shall be destroyed is death," 1 Cor. xv. 26. In some sort he is an enemy, even to saints themselves, as he puts an end to their present existence, and destroys their body. But their souls fall asleep in Jesus, are delivered from the burden of the flesh, and enter into Christ's presence, to be for ever with him. Thus he is a blessed messenger of joy, and a sweet friend to the regenerate soul.

for ever and anon he would intimate so much by words.*

Hopeful therefore here had much ado to keep his brother's head above water; yea, sometimes he would be quite gone down, and then, ere a while, he would rise up again half dead. Hopeful did also endeavour to comfort him, saying, Brother, I see the gate, and men standing by to receive us; but Christian would answer, 'Tis you, 'tis you they wait for; for you have been hopeful ever since I knew you. And so have you, said he to Christian. Ah, brother, (said he,) surely if I was right, he would now arise to help me; but for my sins he hath brought me into the snare, and hath left me. Then said Hopeful, My brother, you have quite forgot the text, where it is said of the wicked, "There are no bands in their death, but their strength is firm; they are not troubled as other men, neither are they plagued like other men." These troubles and distresses that you go through in these waters, are no sign that God hath forsaken you; but are sent to try you, whether you will call to mind that which heretofore you have received of his goodness, and live upon him in your distresses.†

Then I saw in my dream, that Christian was in a muse a while. To whom also Hopeful added these

* Satan is suffered to be very busy with God's people in their last moments: but he too, like death, is a conquered enemy by our Jesus; therefore, amidst all his attacks, they are safe. He cannot destroy them whom Jesus hath redeemed; for he is faithful to them, and almighty to save them.

† When you visit a sick or death-bed, be sure that you take God's word with you, in your heart and in your mouth; it is from that only that you may expect a blessing upon and to the soul of the sick or the dying; for it is by the word of God, faith came at the first; it is by that, faith is strengthened at the last; and Jesus is the sum and substance of the scriptures.

words, Be of good cheer, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole.* And with that Christian brake out with a loud voice, Oh, I see him again! and he tells me, "When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee."[a] Then they both took courage, and the enemy was after that as still as a stone, until they were gone over. Christian therefore presently found ground to stand upon, and so it followed that the rest of the river was but shallow: thus they got over.

CHRISTIAN DELIVERED FROM HIS FEARS IN DEATH.

Now, upon the bank of the river, on the other side, they saw the two shining men again, who there waited for them. Wherefore being come out of the river, they saluted them, saying, We are ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for those that shall be heirs of salvation. Thus they went along towards the gate.

THE ANGELS DO WAIT FOR THEM SO SOON AS THEY ARE PASSED OUT OF THIS WORLD.

Now, you must note, that the City stood upon a mighty hill: but the pilgrims went up that hill with ease, because they had these two men to lead them up by the arms: they had likewise left their mortal garments behind them in the river; for though they went in with them, they came out without them. They therefore went up here with much agility and speed, though the foundation upon which the City was framed was higher than the clouds: they therefore went up through the region of the air, sweetly talking as they went, being comforted, because they

THEY HAVE PUT OFF MORTALITY.

a Isa. xliii. 2.

* Jesus Christ; he is indeed the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last—the beginning of our hope, and the end of our confidence. We begin and end the Christian pilgrimage with him; and all our temptations and trials speak loudly, and fully confirm to us that truth of our Lord, "Without me ye can do nothing," John xv. 5.

safely got over the river, and had such glorious companions to attend them.*

The talk that they had with the shining ones was about the glory of the place; who told them, that the beauty and glory of it was inexpressible. There, said they, is "Mount Zion, the heavenly Jerusalem, the innumerable company of angels, and the spirits of just men made perfect."[b] You are going now, said they, to the paradise of God, wherein you shall see the tree of life, and eat of the never-fading fruits thereof: and when you come there, you shall have white robes given you, and your walk and talk shall be every day with the King, even all the days of eternity.[c] There you shall not see again such things as you saw when you were in the lower region upon the earth; to wit, sorrow, sickness, affliction, and death; "for the former things are passed away."[d] You are going now to Abraham, to Isaac, and Jacob, and to the prophets, men that God hath taken away from the evil to come, and that are now "resting upon their beds, each one walking in his righteousness." The men then asked, What must we do in the holy place? To whom it was answered, You must there receive the comfort of all your toil, and have joy for all your sorrow; you must reap what you have sown, even the fruit of all your prayers, and tears, and sufferings for the King by the way.[e] In that

b Heb. xii. 22—24. c Rev. ii. 7. iii. 4. 5. xxii. 5. d Isa. lxv. 16, 17.
e Gal. vi. 7, 8.

* Ah, Christian, none can conceive or describe what it is to live in a state separate from a body of sin and death. Surely, in some happy, highly-favoured moments, we have had a glimpse, a foretaste of this, and could realize it by faith. O for more and more of this, till we possess and enjoy it in all its fulness. If Jesus be so sweet to faith below, who can tell what he is in full fruition above? This we must die to know.

place you must wear crowns of gold, and enjoy the perpetual sight and vision of the Holy One; for "there you shall see him as he is."[f] There also you shall serve him continually with praise, with shouting, and thanksgiving, whom you desired to serve in the world, though with much difficulty, because of the infirmity of your flesh. There your eyes shall be delighted with seeing, and your ears with hearing the pleasant voice of the Mighty One. There you shall enjoy your friends again that are gone thither before you; and there you shall with joy receive even every one that follows into the holy place after you. There also you shall be clothed with glory and majesty, and put into an equipage fit to ride out with the King of Glory. When he shall come with sound of trumpet in the clouds, as upon the wings of the wind, you shall come with him; and, when he shall sit upon the throne of judgment, you shall sit by him; yea, and when he shall pass sentence upon all the workers of iniquity, let them be angels or men, you also shall have a voice in that judgment, because they were his and your enemies. Also, when he shall again return to the City, you shall go too, with sound of trumpet, and be ever with him.[g]

Now, while they were thus drawing towards the gate, behold a company of the heavenly host came out to meet them: to whom it was said by the other two shining ones, These are the men that have loved our Lord, when they were in the world, and that have left all for his holy name; and he hath sent us to fetch them, and we have brought them thus far on their desired journey, that they may go in and look their Redeemer in the face with joy. Then the heavenly host gave a great shout, saying, "Blessed are they

f 1 John iii. 2. g 1 Thess. iv. 13—17 Jude 14, 15. Dan. vii. 9, 10. 1 Cor. vi. 2, 3.

that are called to the marriage-supper of the Lamb."[h] There came out also at this time to meet them several of the King's trumpeters, clothed in white and shining raiment, who, with melodious noises and loud, made even the heavens to echo with their sound. These trumpeters saluted Christian and his fellow with ten thousand welcomes from the world; and this they did with shouting and sound of trumpet.

This done, they compassed them round on every side: some went before, some behind, and some on the right hand, some on the left, (as it were to guard them through the upper regions,) continually sounding as they went, with melodious noise, in notes on high; so that the very sight was to them that could behold it as if heaven itself was come down to meet them. Thus, therefore, they walked on together; and, as they walked, ever and anon these trumpeters, even with joyful sound, would, by mixing their music with looks and gestures, still signify to Christian and his brother how welcome they were into their company, and with what gladness they came to meet them. And now were these two men, as it were, in heaven, before they came at it, being swallowed up with the sight of angels, and with hearing their melodious notes. Here also they had the City itself in view; and they thought they heard all the bells therein to ring, to welcome them thereto. But, above all, the warm and joyful thoughts that they had about their own dwelling there, with such company, and that for ever and ever; oh! by what tongue or pen can their glorious joy be expressed!* Thus they came up to the gate.

h Rev. xix. 9.

* Though Mr. Bunyan has been very happy in this spirited description, yet, were he alive, I am sure he would not be offended, though I were to say, it is short and faint, infinitely so, of the reality; and were

Now, when they were come up to the gate, there was written over it, in letters of gold,

> "BLESSED ARE THEY THAT DO HIS COMMANDMENTS,* THAT THEY MAY HAVE RIGHT TO THE TREE OF LIFE, AND MAY ENTER IN THROUGH THE GATES INTO THE CITY."[i]

Then I saw in my dream, that the shining men bid them call at the gate: the which when they did, some from above looked over the gate, to wit, Enoch, Moses, and Elijah, &c.; to whom it was said, These pilgrims are come from the city of Destruction, for the love that they bear to the King of this place: and then the pilgrims gave in unto them each man his certificate, which they had received in the beginning: those, therefore, were carried in unto the King, who, when he had read them, said, Where are the men? To whom it was answered, They are standing without the gate. The

i Rev. xxii. 14.

he permitted to come in person, and give another description, he could only say, what the prophet and apostle tells us, "Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him," Isa. lxiv. 4. 1 Cor. ii. 9. O for the increase of faith, to behold more clearly the heavenly vision! and for love to Jesus, the God of our salvation, that we may have more of heaven in our souls, even while we are pilgrims here on the earth! for none but those who love him on earth, can enjoy him in heaven.

* Let us not imagine from hence, that our keeping the commandments entitles us, by way of right or claim, to God's favour and kingdom; for, this is subversive of faith in Jesus, hope in the gracious promises which are in him, and reliance in his atonement and righteousness, through which alone our right and title comes freely, and is secured eternally, according to free grace, gift, and grant. But, right here signifies power or privilege, as in John i. 12. "To as many as received Christ, to them gave he power (right or privilege) to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name."

King then commanded to open the gate, "that the righteous nation (said he) that keepeth the truth may enter in."[k]*

Now I saw in my dream, that these two men went in at the gate; and, lo! as they entered, they were transfigured; and they had raiment put on, that shone like gold. There were also that met them with harps and crowns, and gave them to them; the harps to praise withal, and the crowns in token of honour. Then I heard in my dream, that all the bells in the City rang again for joy, and that it was said unto them,

"ENTER YE INTO THE JOY OF OUR LORD."

I also heard the men themselves, that they sang with a loud voice, saying,

"BLESSING, AND HONOUR, AND GLORY, AND POWER BE UNTO HIM THAT SITTETH UPON THE THRONE, AND UNTO THE LAMB, FOR EVER AND EVER."[l]

k Isa. xxvi. 2. l Rev. v. 13.

* The righteous nation—who are they? Oh, say the self-righteous pharisees of the day, they are those who, by their good works and righteous actions, have made themselves to differ from others, and are thus become righteous before God. To whom should the Lord command the gate of glory to be opened, but to these good, righteous people? But Peter tells us, "The righteous nation is a chosen generation," elected out from among the rest of the world, and of a different seed and generation to them. They see no righteousness in themselves, and therefore are little, low, and mean in their own eyes; being begotten by the Word of truth, and born again of the Spirit of truth, they receive and love the truth as it is in Jesus. In him they glory, and of his righteousness they make all their boast; for they are made the righteousness of God in him: his righteousness is their robe of salvation, and their title to the kingdom. This truth keeps them; by this truth they

Now, just as the gates were opened to let in the men, I looked in after them, and behold the City shone like the sun; the streets also were paved with gold; and in them walked many men with crowns on their heads, palms in their hands, and golden harps, to sing praises withal.

There were also of them that had wings, and they answered one another without intermission, saying, "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord." And after that they shut up the gates; which when I had seen, I wished myself among them.

IGNORANCE COMES UP THE RIVER.

Now, while I was gazing upon all these things, I turned my head to look back, and saw Ignorance come up to the river-side: but he soon got over, and that without half the difficulty which the other two men met with. For it happened that there was then in that place one Vain-hope,* a ferry-man, that with his boat helped him over: so he, as the others I saw, did ascend the hill, to come up to the gate; only he came

VAIN-HOPE DOES FERRY HIM OVER.

regulate their life and walk; and this truth they hold fast in life, and keep unto death; and thus living and dying in the belief of the truth, they can say with Paul, I have kept the faith, and henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which Jesus hath painfully obtained for me, and will freely bestow upon me. O that faith may bring near the view, and hope long for the hour, when the Lord shall say, Enter in!

* Vain-hope ever dwells in the bosom of fools, and is ever ready to assist Ignorance. He wanted him at the last, and he found him. He had been his companion through life, and will not forsake him in the hour of death. You see Ignorance had no bands in his death, no fears, doubts, and sorrows, no terror from the enemy, but all was serene and happy. Vain-hope was his ferryman, and he, as the good folks say, died like a lamb. Ah! but did such lambs see what was to follow when Vain-hope had wafted them over the river, they would roar like lions.

alone, neither did any man meet him with the least encouragement. When he was come up to the gate, he looked up to the writing that was above, and then began to knock, supposing that entrance should have been quickly administered to him: but he was asked by the men that looked over the top of the gate, Whence come you? and what would you have? He answered, I have eat and drank in the presence of the King, and he has taught in our streets. Then they asked him for his certificate, that they might go in and show it to the King: so he fumbled in his bosom for one, and found none. Then said they, Have you none? but the man answered never a word.* So they told the King, but he would not come down to see him, but commanded the two shining ones, that conducted Christian and Hopeful to the City, to go out, and take Ignorance, and bind him hand and foot, and have him away. Then they took him up, and carried him through the air to the door that I saw in the side of the hill, and put him in

* Hence see that ignorant, vain confident professors may keep up a profession, even unto the end; yea, and keep a self-righteous hope to the very last, without any internal operation of the Spirit upon their hearts, slaying their natural self-confidence, and quickening them to a life of faith on the Son of God. Such, when they are called upon for their certificate, find themselves destitute of one. They set out in nature, and have nothing more about them than what their natural notions furnish them with. Spiritual revelations of Christ to the heart, through faith in the word, they despised; and therefore, when searched to the bottom, behold they are speechless. They could talk of their own free-will, moral powers, faithfulness to grace, &c. in life, but they have not one word to say of precious Christ and his finished salvation—what he hath done for sinners, what he is to them, and what the Spirit has wrought in them, whereby Christ becomes altogether lovely in their eyes; and his truths, promises, and commands, the choice, the delight, and the glory of their hearts. Oh! without this, the profession of being a pilgrim will end in awful delusion!

there. Then I saw that there was a way to hell, even from the gates of heaven, as well as from the city of Destruction.* So I awoke, and behold, it was a dream.

* This is a most awful conclusion. Consider it deeply. Weigh it attentively, so as to get good satisfaction from the word, to these important questions: Am I in Christ the way, the only way to the kingdom, or not? Do I see that all other ways, whether of sin or self-righteousness, lead to hell? Does Christ dwell in my heart by faith? Am I a new creature in him? Do I renounce my own righteousness, as well as abhor my sins? Do I look to Christ alone for righteousness, and depend only on him for holiness? Is he the only hope of my soul, and the only confidence of my heart? and, Do I desire to be found in him, knowing by the word, and feeling by the teaching of his Spirit, that I am totally lost in myself? Thus, Is Christ formed in me, the only hope of glory? Do I study to please him, as well as hope to enjoy him? Is fellowship with God the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ, so prized by me, as to seek it, and to esteem it above all things? If so, though I may find all things in nature, in the world, and from Satan continually opposing this, yet I am in Christ the way; and he is in me, the truth and the life. I am one with him, and he is one with me. There is an inseparable, an everlasting, and an indissoluble union, which neither sin nor hell shall ever be able to destroy; for, this union is effected by no less than the almighty power of God the Holy Ghost. It is his work, and his alone, to take of the things of Christ, to show them to the sinner, and to glorify Christ in his eyes, and to make him the glory of his heart, so as that he can say, in the power of faith, Christ is my righteousness, life, hope, and salvation: He is the Lord, by whom we escape death, through whom we obtain eternal glory. To whom, with the Father and Holy Ghost, the One Jehovah, be endless praise and glory. Amen.

CONCLUSION.

Now, Reader, I have told my Dream to thee,
See if thou can'st interpret it to me,
Or to thyself, or neighbour: but take heed
Of misinterpreting; for that, instead
Of doing good, will but thyself abuse:
By misinterpreting, evil ensues.

Take heed also that thou be not extreme
In playing with the outside of my Dream;
Nor let my figure or similitude
Put thee into a laughter or a feud.
Leave this for boys and fools; but as for thee,
Do thou the substance of my matter see.

Put by the curtains, look within my veil,
Turn up my metaphors, and do not fail.
There, if thou seekest them, such things thoul't find
As will be helpful to an honest mind.

What of my dross thou findest there, be bold
To throw away, but yet preserve the gold.
What if my gold be wrapped up in ore?
None throws away the apple for the core;
But if thou shalt cast all away as vain,
I know not but 'twill make me dream again.

THE

PILGRIM'S PROGRESS,

FROM

THIS WORLD TO THAT WHICH IS TO COME.

DELIVERED UNDER THE SIMILITUDE OF A DREAM.

PART II.

WHEREIN IS SET FORTH THE MANNER OF THE SETTING OUT OF CHRISTIAN'S WIFE AND CHILDREN; THEIR DANGEROUS JOURNEY, AND SAFE ARRIVAL AT THE DESIRED COUNTRY.

" I have used similitudes," Hos. xii. 10.

THE

AUTHOR'S WAY OF SENDING FORTH

HIS

SECOND PART OF THE PILGRIM.

Go now, my little Book, to every place,
Where my *First Pilgrim* has but shown his face:
Call at their door: if any say, *Who's there?*
Then answer thou, CHRISTIANA *is here.*
If they bid thee *come in*, then enter thou,
With all thy boys; and then, as thou know'st how,
Tell who they are, also from whence they came;
Perhaps they'll know them by their looks, or name:
But if they should not, ask them yet again,
If formerly they did not entertain
One CHRISTIAN, *a Pilgrim?* If they say,
They did, and were delighted in his way;
Then let them know that these related were
Unto him; yea, his Wife and Children are.
  Tell them, that they have left their house and home;
Are turned Pilgrims; seek a World to come;
That they *have* met with hardships in the way;
That they *do* meet with troubles night and day;
That they have trod on serpents; fought with devils;
Have also overcome a many evils.
Yea, tell them also of the next who have,
Of love to *Pilgrimage*, been stout and brave

Defenders of that Way; and how they still
Refuse this World to do their Father's will.
  Go tell them also of those dainty things
That Pilgrimage unto the Pilgrim brings.
Let them acquainted be, too, how they are
Beloved of their King, under his care;
What goodly mansions he for them provides;
Though they meet with rough winds and swelling tides,
How brave a calm they will enjoy at last,
Who to their Lord, and by his ways old fast.
  Perhaps with heart and hand they will embrace
Thee, as they did my firstling; and will grace
Thee and thy fellows with such cheer and fare,
As show well, they of Pilgrims lovers are.

OBJECTION I.

  But how, if they will not believe of me
That I am truly thine? 'cause some there be
That counterfeit the Pilgrim and his name,
Seek, by disguise, to seem the very same;
And by that means have wrought themselves into
The hands and houses of I know not who.

ANSWER.

  'Tis true, some have, of late, to counterfeit
My Pilgrim, to their own my title set;
Yea, others half my name, and title too,
Have stitched to their books, to make them do.
But yet they, by their features do declare
Themselves not mine to be, whose e'er they are.
  If such thou meet'st with, then thine only way,
Before them all, is to *say out thy say*
In thine own native language, which no man
Now useth, nor with ease dissemble can.
  If, after all, they still of you shall doubt,
Thinking that you, like gipsies, go about

In naughty-wise the country to defile;
Or that you seek good people to beguile
With things unwarrantable; send for me,
And I will testify you Pilgrims be;
Yea, I will testify that only you
My Pilgrims are; and that alone will do.

OBJECTION II.

But yet, perhaps I may inquire for him
Of those who wish him damned life and limb.
What shall I do, when I at such a door
For Pilgrims ask, and they shall rage the more?

ANSWER.

Fright not thyself, my Book, for such bugbears
Are nothing else but ground for groundless fears.
My Pilgrim's book has travell'd sea and land,
Yet could I never come to understand
That it was slighted or turn'd out of door,
By any kingdom, were they rich or poor.
In France and Flanders, where men kill each other,
My Pilgrim is esteem'd a friend, a brother.
In Holland too, 'tis said, as I am told,
My Pilgrim is, with some, worth more than gold.
Highlanders, and wild Irish can agree,
My Pilgrim should familiar with them be.
'Tis in New England under such advance,
Receives there so much loving countenance,
As to be trimm'd, new cloth'd, and deck'd with gems
That it might show its features, and its limbs.
Yet more; so comely doth my Pilgrim walk,
That of him thousands daily sing and talk.
If you draw nearer home, it will appear,
My Pilgrim knows no ground of shame or fear:
City and country will him entertain,
With *Welcome, Pilgrim;* yea, they can't refrain

From smiling, if my Pilgrim be but by,
Or shows his head in any company.
  Brave gallants do my Pilgrim hug and love,
Esteem it much, yea, value it above
Things of a greater bulk; yea, with delight
Say, my lark's leg is better than a kite.
  Young ladies, and young gentlewomen too,
Do no small kindness to my Pilgrim show:
Their cabinets, their bosoms, and their hearts,
My Pilgrim has; cause he to them imparts
His pretty riddles in such wholesome strains,
As yield them profit double to their pains
Of reading; yea, I think I may be bold
To say some prize him far above their gold.
  The very children that do walk the street,
If they do but my holy Pilgrim meet,
Salute him will; will wish him well, and say,
He is the only stripling of the day.
  They that have never seen him, yet admire
What they have heard of him, and much desire
To have his company, and hear him tell
Those *pilgrim* stories which he knows so well.
  Yea, some that did not love him at the first,
But call'd him *fool* and *noddy*, say they must,
Now they have seen and heard him, him commend,
And to those whom they love they do him send.
  Wherefore, my Second Part, thou needst not be
Afraid to show thy head: none can hurt thee,
That wish but well to him that went before:
'Cause thou com'st after with a second store
Of things as good, as rich, as profitable,
For young, for old, for staggering, and for stable.

OBJECTION III.

  But some there be that say, He laughs too loud;
And some do say, His head is in a cloud.
Some say, His words and stories are so dark,
They know not how, by them, to find his mark.

ANSWER.

One may, I think, say, both his laughs and cries
May well be guess'd at by his watery eyes.
Some things are of that nature, as to make
One's fancy chuckle, while his heart doth ache:
When Jacob saw his Rachel with the sheep,
He did at the same time both kiss and weep.
Whereas some say, *A cloud is in his head;*
That doth but show his wisdom's covered
With his own mantle. And do stir the mind
To search well after what it fain would find,
Things that seem to be hid in words obscure
Do but the godly mind the more allure
To study what those sayings should contain,
That speak to us in such a cloudy strain.
I also know a dark similitude
Will on the curious fancy more intrude,
And will stick faster in the heart and head,
Than things from similes not borrowed.
Wherefore, my Book, let no discouragement
Hinder thy travels. Behold! thou art sent
To friends, not foes; to friends that will give place
To thee, thy Pilgrims, and thy words embrace.
Besides, what my First Pilgrim left conceal'd,
Thou, my brave Second Pilgrim, hast reveal'd;
What Christian left lock'd up, and went his way,
Sweet Christiana opens with her key.

OBJECTION IV.

But some love not the method of your first:
Romance they count it; throw't away as dust.
If I should meet with such, what should I say?
Must I slight them as they slight me, or nay?

ANSWER.

My Christiana, if with such thou meet,
By all means, in all loving wise them greet;

Render them not reviling for revile;
But, if they frown, I pr'ythee on them smile:
Perhaps 'tis nature, or some ill report,
Has made them thus despise; or thus retort.
Some love no fish, some love no cheese, and some
Love not their friends, nor their own house or home;
Some start at pig, slight chicken, love not fowl,
More than they love a cuckoo or an owl.
Leave such, my Christiana, to their choice,
And seek those who to find thee will rejoice:
By no means strive, but, in most humble wise,
Present thee to them in thy Pilgrim's guise.
Go then, my little Book, and show to all
That entertain, and bid thee welcome shall,
What thou shalt keep close shut up from the rest;
And wish what thou shalt show them may be blest
To them for good, and make them choose to be
Pilgrims by better far than thee or me.
Go then, I say, tell all men who thou art;
Say, I am Christiana; and my part
Is now, with my four sons, to tell you what
It is for men to take a Pilgrim's lot.
Go, also, tell them who and what they be
That now do go on pilgrimage with thee;
Say, Here's my neighbour Mercy; she is one
That has long time with me a Pilgrim gone;
Come, see her in her virgin face, and learn
'Twixt idle ones and Pilgrims to discern.
Yea, let young damsels learn of her to prize
The World which is to come, in any wise.
When little tripping maidens follow God,
And leave old doting sinners to his rod,
'Tis like those days wherein the young ones cried,
Hosanna! when the old ones did deride.
Next tell them of old Honest, whom you found,
With his white hairs treading the Pilgrim's ground;
Yea, tell them how plain-hearted this man was,
How after his good Lord he bare the cross.

Perhaps with some gray head this may prevail
With Christ to fall in love, and sin bewail.
  Tell them also, how Master Fearing went
On pilgrimage, and how the time he spent
In solitariness, with fears and cries;
And how, at last, he won the joyful prize.
He *was* a good man, though much down in spirit;
He *is* a good man, and doth life inherit.
  Tell them of Master Feeble-mind also,
Who not before, but still behind would go.
Show them also, how he had like been slain,
And how one Great-heart did his life regain.
This man was true of heart, though weak in grace;
One might true godliness read in his face.
  Then tell them of Master Ready-to-halt,
A man with crutches, but much without fault.
Tell them how Master Feeble-mind and he
Did love, and in opinion much agree.
And let all know, though weakness was their chance,
Yet sometimes one could sing, the other dance.
  Forget not Master Valiant-for-the-truth,
That man of courage, though a very youth:
Tell every one his spirit was so stout,
No man could ever make him face about;
And how Great-heart and he could not forbear,
But pull down Doubting Castle, slay Despair!
  Overlook not Master Despondency,
Nor Much-afraid his daughter, though they lie
Under such mantles, as may make them look
(With some) as if their God had them forsook.
They softly went, but sure; and, at the end,
Found that the Lord of Pilgrims was their friend.
  When thou hast told the world of all these things,
Then turn about, my Book, and touch these strings;
Which, if but touched, will such music make,
They'll make a cripple dance, a giant quake.
  Those riddles that lie couch'd within thy breast,
Freely propound, expound; and for the rest

Of thy mysterious lines, let them remain
For those whose nimble fancies shall them gain
  Now may this little Book a blessing be
To those who love this little Book and me:
And may its buyer have no cause to say,
His money is but lost or thrown away.
Yea, may this Second Pilgrim yield that fruit
As may with each good Pilgrim's fancy suit;
And may it some persuade, that go astray,
To turn their feet and heart to the right way,

Is the hearty prayer of

The Author,

JOHN BUNYAN.

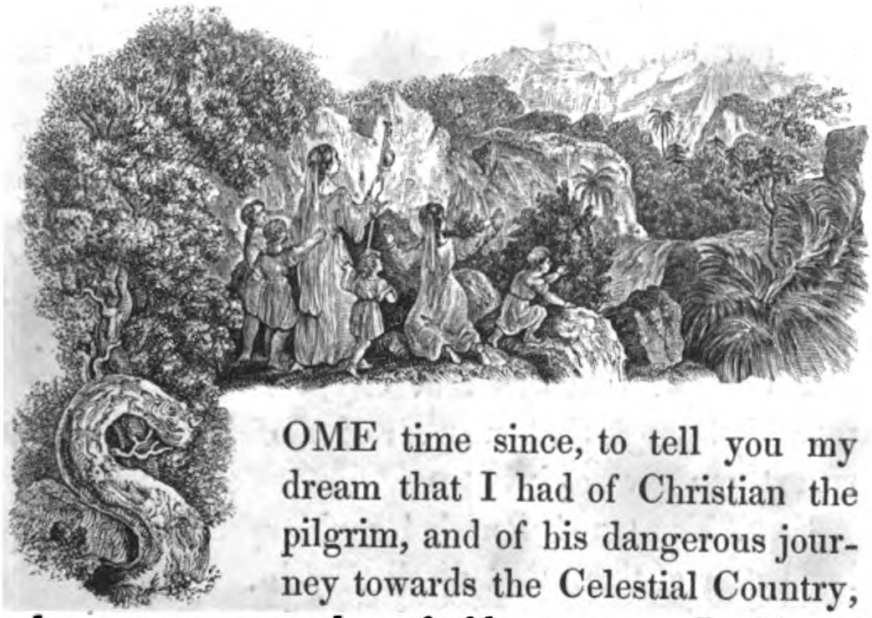
Drawn by H. Melville

Engraved by G. Freebury

THE

PILGRIM'S PROGRESS.

PART II.



SOME time since, to tell you my dream that I had of Christian the pilgrim, and of his dangerous journey towards the Celestial Country, was pleasant to me and profitable to you. I told you then also what I saw concerning his wife and children, and how unwilling they were to go with him on pilgrimage: insomuch that he was forced to go on his progress without them; for he durst not run the danger of that destruction, which he feared would come by staying with them in the city of Destruction: wherefore, as I then showed you, he left them and departed.

Now, it hath so happened, through the multiplicity of business, that I have been much hindered and kept back from my wonted travels into those parts whence he went, and so could not, till now, obtain an opportunity to make further inquiry after whom he left behind, that I might give you an account of them. But, having had some concerns that way of late, I went down again thitherward. Now, having taken up my lodging in a wood, about a mile off the place, as I slept, I dreamed again.

And, as I was in my dream, behold, an aged gentleman came by where I lay; and because he was to go some part of the way that I was travelling, methought I got up, and went with him. So, as we walked, and as travellers usually do, I was as if we fell into a discourse, and our talk happened to be about Christian and his travels; for thus I began with the old man.

Sir, said I, what town is that there below, that lieth on the left-hand of our way?

Then said Mr. Sagacity, (for that was his name,) It is the city of Destruction, a populous place, but possessed with a very ill-conditioned and idle sort of people.

I thought that was that city, quoth I; I went once myself through that town; and therefore know that this report you give of it is true.

Sag. Too true! I wish I could speak truth in speaking better of them that dwell therein.

Well, sir, quoth I, then I perceive you to be a well-meaning man, and so one that takes pleasure to hear and tell of that which is good: pray did you never hear what happened to a man some time ago, of this town, (whose name was Christian,) that went on a pilgrimage up towards the higher regions?

Sag. Hear of him! Ay, and I also heard of the molestations, troubles, wars, captivities, cries, groans,

frights, and fears, that he met with and had on his journey. Besides, I must tell you, all our country rings of him: there are but few houses, that have heard of him and his doings, but have sought after and got the records of his pilgrimage: yea, I think I may say, that his hazardous journey has got many well-wishers to his ways; for, though when he was here he was fool in every man's mouth, yet now he is gone he is highly commended of all. For it is said he lives bravely where he is: yea, many of them that are resolved never to run his hazards, yet have their mouths water at his gains.*

CHRISTIANS ARE WELL SPOKEN OF WHEN GONE, THOUGH CALLED FOOLS WHILE THEY ARE HERE.

They may, quoth I, well think, if they think any thing that is true, that he liveth well where he is; for he now lives at and in the Fountain of life, and has what he has without labour and sorrow, for there is no grief mixed therewith. But pray what talk have the people about him?

SAG. Talk! the people talk strangely about him: some say, that he now walks in white;[a] that he has a chain of gold about his neck; that he has a crown of gold, beset with pearls, upon his head. Others say, that the shining ones, that sometimes showed themselves to him in his journey, are become his companions, and that he is as familiar with them in the place where he is,

a Rev. iii. 4. vi. 11.

* This is quite natural, and very common. The men of this world will canonize those for saints when dead, whom they stigmatized with the vilest names when living. Besides many others I could mention, this I have peculiarly remarked in respect to that man of God, that faithful minister of Christ, the late Rev. Mr. Whitefield. Scarce any one went through more public reproach than he did; yet how often have I been amazed to hear persons who held him, his character, and conduct, in the vilest contempt when living, who, now he is dead, speak in the most respectful manner of him! O let us leave our characters to Him who died for our sins, and to whom we can commit our souls.

as here one neighbour is with another.[b] Besides, it is confidently affirmed concerning him, that the King of the place where he is has bestowed upon him already a very rich and pleasant dwelling at court, and that he every day eateth and drinketh, and walketh and talketh, with him, and receiveth of the smiles and favours of him that is Judge of all there. Moreover, it is expected of some, that his Prince, the Lord of that country, will shortly come into these parts, and will know the reason, if they can give any, why his neighbours set so little by him, and had him so much in derision, when they perceived that he would be a pilgrim.[c]

CHRISTIAN'S KING WILL TAKE CHRISTIAN'S PART.

For they say, that now he is so in the affections of his Prince,* and that his Sovereign is so much concerned with the indignities that were cast upon Christian, when he became a pilgrim, that he will look upon all as if done unto himself: and no marvel, for it was for the love that he had to his Prince that he ventured as he did.[d]†

I dare say, quoth I; I am glad on't; I am glad for the poor man's sake, for that now he has rest from his labour,[e] and for that he now reapeth the benefit of his tears with joy;[f] and for that he has got beyond the gunshot of his enemies, and is out of the reach of them that

b Zech. iii. 7. c Jude 14, 15. d Luke x. 16. e Rev. xiv. 13.
f Psalm cxxvi. 5, 6.

* Christian's King will take Christian's part. O pilgrim, write this upon the table of thine heart, and read it every step of thy journey.

† Mark this well. No matter what profession we make, if the love of Christ be not its foundation. All is nothing without this love: it is this love in the heart, that, like oil in the lamp, keeps the profession of Christ burning bright. The more this love is felt, the more ardent the fire of zeal burns, and the more steady we shall follow on to know the Lord; and never leave off, nor give over, till we see and enjoy the Lord in his kingdom. The Lord inflame our love to himself, his truth, and his ways.

hate him. I also am glad, for that a rumour of these things is noised abroad in this country; who can tell but that it may work some good effect on some that are left behind? But pray, sir, while it is fresh in my mind, do you hear any thing of his wife and children? Poor hearts! I wonder in my mind what they do.

GOOD TIDINGS OF CHRISTIAN'S WIFE AND CHILDREN.

SAG. Who? Christiana and her sons? They are like to do as well as Christian did himself; for, though they all played the fool at first, and would by no means be persuaded by either the tears or entreaties of Christian, yet second thoughts have wrought wonderfully with them: so they have packed up, and are also gone after him.*

Better and better, quoth I: but, what! wife and children and all?

SAG. It is true: I can give you an account of the matter, for I was upon the spot at the instant, and was thoroughly acquainted with the whole affair.

Then said I, A man, it seems, may report it for a truth.

SAG. You need not fear to affirm it; I mean, that they are all gone on pilgrimage, both the good woman and her four boys. And being we are, as I perceive, going some considerable way together, I will give you an account of the whole of the matter.

This Christiana, (for that was her name from the day that she with her children betook themselves to a pilgrim's life,) after her husband was gone over the river, and she could hear of him no more, her thoughts began

* Though moral suasion, and all the affectionate arguments from a tender husband, or an affectionate parent, may prove ineffectual for the present; yet, when the Lord works by his mighty power, then only they prove effectual to saving purposes. Yet, let us not neglect our duty, but be earnest in it, and leave the event to sovereign grace.

to work in her mind. First, for that she had lost her husband, and for that the loving bond of that relation was utterly broken betwixt them. For you know, said he to me, nature can do no less but entertain the living with many a heavy cogitation, in the remembrance of the loss of loving relations. This, therefore, of her husband did cost her many a tear. But this was not all; for Christiana did also begin to consider with herself, whether her unbecoming behaviour towards her husband was not one cause that she saw him no more; and that in such sort he was taken away from her. And upon this came into her mind, by swarms, all her unkind, unnatural, and ungodly carriage, to her dear friend; which also clogged her conscience, and did load her with guilt. She was, moreover, much broken with recalling to remembrance the restless groans, brinish tears, and self-bemoanings, of her husband, and how she did harden her heart against all his entreaties, and loving persuasions, of her and her sons, to go with him; yea, there was not any thing that Christian either said to her, or did before her, all the while that his burden did hang on his back, but it returned upon her like a flash of lightning, and rent the caul of her heart in sunder, especially that bitter outcry of his, "What shall I do to be saved?" did ring in her ears most dolefully.*

MARK THIS, YOU THAT ARE CHURLS TO YOUR GODLY RELATIONS.

Then said she to her children, Sons, we are all undone. I have sinned away your father, and he is gone: he would have had us with him, but I would not go myself: I also have hindered you of life. With that

* Here see what those who cruelly and unkindly treat their godly relations and friends on account of their religion, must come to, feel in the bitterness of their spirit, and groan under in the sorrow of their soul, if ever the Lord grant them repentance unto life.

the boys fell into tears, and cried out to go after their father. O! (said Christiana) that it had been but our lot to go with him! then had it fared well with us, beyond what it is like to do now. For, though I formerly foolishly imagined, concerning the troubles of your father, that they proceeded of a foolish fancy that he had, or for that he was overrun with melancholy humours; yet now it will not out of my mind, but that they sprang from another cause; to wit, for that the light of life was given him;[g] by the help of which, as I perceive, he has escaped the snares of death.* Then they all wept again, and cried out, Oh! wo worth the day!

CHRISTIANA'S DREAM.

The next night Christiana had a dream; and, behold, she saw as if a broad parchment was opened before her, in which were recorded the sum of her ways; and the crimes, as she thought, looked very black upon her. Then she cried out aloud in her sleep, "Lord, have mercy upon me, a sinner!"[h]† and the little children heard her.

g John viii. 12. h Luke xviii. 13.

* Is it any marvel, that a quickened, enlightened sinner should be judged by those around him, who are yet dead in their sins, to be full of whims and melancholy? No: it is very natural for them to think us fools and mad; but we know that they really are so. For when it pleases the Lord to take the veil of unbelief off the heart, and to remove the scales of ignorance from the eyes, then they will confess, with Christiana, that the light of life is given to us.

† This is the very first cry of an awakened sinner—mercy for the lost and miserable: and no sooner are the sinner's eyes opened to see his ruined, desperate state, and to cry for mercy, but the god of this world, who hitherto had blinded the eyes, and kept the heart secure by presumption, now opposes the sinner's progress to a throne of grace, to a God of mercy, and to the Saviour of the lost. Satan does not easily part with his prey. But Jesus, the strong man armed with almighty power and everlasting love, will conquer and cast him out. This is the sinner's mercy, or none could ever be saved.

After this, she thought she saw two very ill-favoured ones standing by her bed-side, and saying, What shall we do with this woman? for she cries out for mercy, waking and sleeping. If she be suffered to go on as she begins, we shall lose her as we have lost her husband. Wherefore we must, by one way or other, seek to take her off from the thoughts of what shall be hereafter, else all the world cannot help but she will become a pilgrim.

MARK THIS; THIS IS THE QUINTESSENCE OF HELL.

Now she awoke in a great sweat, also a trembling was upon her; but after a while she fell to sleeping again. And then she thought she saw Christian, her husband, in a place of bliss among many immortals, with a harp in his hand, standing and playing upon it before One that sat on a throne, with a rainbow about his head. She saw also, as if he bowed his head with his face to the paved work that was under his Prince's feet, saying, I heartily thank my Lord and King for bringing me into this place. Then shouted a company of them that stood round about, and harped with their harps: but no man living could tell what they said, but Christian and his companions.

HELP AGAINST DISCOURAGEMENT.

Next morning, when she was up, had prayed to God, and talked with her children a while, one knocked hard at the door; to whom she spake out, saying, If thou comest in God's name, come in. So he said, Amen; and opened the door, and saluted her with, Peace be to this house. The which when he had done, he said, Christiana, knowest thou wherefore I am come? Then she blushed and trembled; also her heart began to wax warm with desires to know from whence he came, and what was his errand to her. So he said unto her, My name is Secret;* I dwell with those that are on high.

* "The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom," Psa. cxi. 10. and "the secret of the Lord is with them who fear him," Psa. xxv. 14.

It is talked of where I dwell, as if thou hadst a desire to go thither: also there is a report that thou art aware of the evil thou hast formerly done to thy husband, in hardening of thy heart against his way, and in keeping of these babes in their ignorance. Christiana, the merciful One has sent me to tell thee, that he is a God ready to forgive, and that he taketh delight to multiply the pardon of offences.* He also would have thee to know, that he inviteth thee to come into his presence, to his table, and that he will feed thee with the fat of his house, and with the heritage of Jacob thy father.

CONVICTIONS SECONDED BY TIDINGS OF GOD'S READINESS TO PARDON.

There is Christian, thy husband that was, with legions more, his companions, ever beholding that face that doth minister life to beholders; and they will all be glad when they shall hear the sound of thy feet step over thy Father's threshold.

Christiana at this was greatly abashed in herself, and bowed her head to the ground. This visitor proceeded, and said, Christiana, here is also a letter for thee, which I have brought from thy husband's King. So she took it, and opened it, but it smelt after the manner of the best perfume;[i] also it was written in letters of gold. The contents of the letter were these: That the King would have her to do as did Christian her husband, for that was the way to come to his city, and to dwell in his presence with joy for ever. At this the good woman was quite overcome; so she cried out to her visitor, Sir, will you carry me and my children with you, that we also may go and worship the King?

CHRISTIANA QUITE OVERCOME.

i Song i. 3.

* The Spirit, the Comforter, never convinces the soul of sin, but he also revives and comforts the heart with glad tidings of free and full pardon of sin, through the blood of the Lamb.

FURTHER INSTRUCTIONS TO CHRISTIANA.

Then said the visitor, Christiana, the bitter is before the sweet. Thou must through troubles, as did he that went before thee, enter this Celestial City. Wherefore, I advise thee to do as did Christian thy husband; go to the Wicket-gate yonder over the plain, for that stands at the head of the way up which thou must go, and I wish thee all good speed. Also I advise, that thou put this letter in thy bosom; that thou read therein to thyself, and to thy children, until you have got it by root of heart; for it is one of the songs that thou must sing while thou art in this house of thy pilgrimage:[k] also this thou must deliver in at the farther gate.*

CHRISTIANA PRAYS HER SONS TO TAKE THEIR JOURNEY.

Now I saw in my dream, that this old gentleman, as he told me the story, did himself seem to be greatly affected therewith. He moreover proceeded, and said, So Christiana called her sons together, and began thus to address herself unto them: My sons, I have, as you may perceive, been of late under much exercise in my soul about the death of your father; not for that I doubt at all of his happiness, for I am satisfied now that he is well. I have also been much affected with the thoughts of mine own estate and yours, which I verily believe is by nature miserable. My carriage also to your father in his distress is a great load to my conscience, for I hardened both mine own heart and yours against him, and refused to go with him on pilgrimage.

k Psalm cxix. 54.

* Says our Lord, "When the Spirit is come, he shall testify of me —he shall lead you into all truth—he shall show you things to come." All this the convinced sinner finds true in experience. As the Spirit testifies of Christ, so he leads the soul to Christ, that he may be the sinner's only hope, righteousness, and strength. Thus he glorifies Christ.

The thoughts of these things would now kill me outright, but that for a dream which I had last night, and but that for the encouragement this stranger has given me this morning. Come, my children, let us pack up, and be gone to the gate that leads to the Celestial country, that we may see your father, and be with him and his companions in peace, according to the laws of that land.

Then did her children burst out into tears, for joy that the heart of their mother was so inclined. So their visitor bid them farewell; and they began to prepare to set out for their journey.

TIMOROUS AND MERCY COME TO VISIT CHRISTIANA.

But, while they were thus about to be gone, two of the women, that were Christiana's neighbours, came up to her house, and knocked at her door. To whom she said as before, If you come in God's name, come in. At this the women were stunned, for this kind of language they used not to hear, or to perceive to drop from the lips of Christiana.* Yet they came in: but behold, they found the good woman preparing to be gone from her house.

CHRISTIANA'S NEW LANGUAGE STUNS HER OLD NEIGHBOURS.

So they began, and said, Neighbour, pray what is your meaning by this?

Christiana answered and said to the eldest of them, whose name was Mrs. Timorous, I am preparing for a

* Reader, stop and examine: did never any of your former friends and carnal acquaintance take knowledge of a difference in your language and conduct? Do they still like and approve of you as well as ever? What reason, then, have you to think yourself a pilgrim? for no sooner does any one commence a pilgrim, but that word is fulfilled, "For then I will turn to the people a pure language," Zeph. iii.9. If the heart be ever so little acquainted with the Lord, the tongue will discover it, and the carnal and profane will ridicule and despise you for it. This will ever be found true.

journey. (This Timorous was daughter to him that met Christian upon the hill of Difficulty, and would have had him go back for fear of the lions.)

TIM. For what journey, I pray you?

CHR. Even to go after my good husband. And with that she fell a weeping.

TIM. I hope not so, good neighbour; pray, for your poor children's sake, do not so unwomanly cast away yourself.

CHR. Nay, my children shall go with me; not one of them is willing to stay behind.

TIM. I wonder in my very heart, what or who has brought you into this mind?

CHR. O neighbour! knew you but as much as I do, I doubt not but that you would go along with me.

TIM. Pr'ythee, what new knowledge hast thou got, that so worketh off thy mind from thy friends, and that tempteth thee to go nobody knows where?

CHR. Then Christiana replied, I have been sorely afflicted since my husband's departure from me; but DEATH. especially since he went over the river. But that which troubleth me most, is my churlish carriage to him, when he was under his distress. Besides, I am now as he was then; nothing will serve me but going on pilgrimage. I was dreaming last night that I saw him. O that my soul was with him! He dwelleth in the presence of the King of the country; he sits and eats with him at his table; he is become a companion of immortals; and has a house now given him to dwell in, to which the best palace on earth, if compared, seems to me but as a dunghill.[1] The Prince of the place has also sent for me, with promise of entertainment, if I shall come to him: his messenger was here even now,

[1] 2 Cor. v. 1—4.

and has brought me a letter, which invites me to come. And with that she plucked out her letter,* and read it, and said to them, What now will you say to this?

TIM. Oh, the madness that has possessed thee and thy husband, to run yourselves upon such difficulties! You have heard, I am sure, what your husband did meet with, even in a manner at the first step that he took his way, as our neighbour Obstinate can yet testify, for he went along with him; yea, and Pliable too, until they, like wise men, were afraid to go any further. We also heard, over and above, how he met with the lions, Apollyon, the Shadow of Death, and many other things. Nor is the danger that he met with at Vanity Fair to be forgotten by thee. For if he, though a man, was so hard put to it, what canst thou, being but a poor woman, do? Consider also, that these four sweet babes are thy children, thy flesh, and thy bones. Wherefore, though thou shouldest be so rash as to cast away thyself; yet for the sake of the fruit of thy body, keep thou at home.†

THE REASONINGS OF THE FLESH.

But Christiana said unto her, Tempt me not, my neighbour: I have now a price put into my hand to get

* This was a love-letter, full of the love of Jesus, and the precious invitation of his loving heart to sinners to come unto him, as recorded in his blessed word. Happy sinners, whose eyes are opened to read them! But this the world calls madness.

† The Lord, who quickens us by his Spirit, and calls us by his word, well knows the carnal enemies who will oppose our progress in the divine life: therefore he tells us, "If thy brother, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee secretly from the Lord, thou shalt not hearken unto him," &c. Deut. xiii. 6. Let the word of God be the rule, and Christiana's conduct an example to all who are setting their faces Zion-ward. O beware of the reasoning of the flesh. Dread to look back. Tremble at the thought of going back; for the Lord hath no pleasure in such. Heb. x. 38.

gain, and I should be a fool of the greatest size if I should have no heart to strike in with the opportunity. And for that you tell me of all these troubles that I am like to meet with in the way, they are so far from being to me a discouragement, that they show I am in the right. "The bitter must come before the sweet," and that also will make the sweet the sweeter. Wherefore since you came not to my house in God's name, as I said, I pray you to be gone, and not to disquiet me further.*

A PERTINENT REPLY TO FLESHLY REASONING.

Then Timorous reviled her, and said to her fellow, Come, neighbour Mercy, let us leave her in her own hands, since she scorns our counsel and company. But Mercy was at a stand, and could not so readily comply with her neighbour; and that for a twofold reason. 1. Her bowels yearned over Christiana. So she said within herself, If my neighbour will needs be gone, I will go a little way with her, and help her. 2. Her bowels yearned over her own soul; for what Christiana had said, had taken some hold upon her mind. Wherefore she said within herself again, I will yet have more talk with this Christiana; and, if I find truth and life in what she shall say, myself with my heart shall also go with her. Wherefore Mercy began thus to reply to her neighbour Timorous.

MERCY'S BOWELS YEARN OVER CHRISTIANA.

MER. Neighbour, I did indeed come with you to see Christiana this morning; and, since she is, as you see,

* That is right. It is well to be bold in the name of the Lord, and blunt with those who seek to turn us away from following on to know the Lord: for nothing less than life and salvation, or death and damnation, will be the issue of it. O pilgrims, beware, beware of parleying with the carnal. Ever remember, you have a nature prone to catch the falling spark from their flint and steel, and tinder about you ever ready to take the fire.

a taking her last farewell of the country, I think to walk this sunshiny morning a little with her, to help her on her way. But she told her not of her second reason, but kept it to herself.

TIM. Well, I see you have a mind to go a fooling too; but take heed in time, and be wise: while we are out of danger, we are out; but, when we are in, we are in.

TIMOROUS FORSAKES HER, BUT MEYCY CLEAVES TO HER.

So Mrs. Timorous returned to her house, and Christiana betook herself to her journey.* But, when Timorous was got home to her house, she sends for some of her neighbours, to wit, Mrs. Bat's-Eyes, Mrs. Inconsiderate, Mrs. Light-Mind, and Mrs. Know-Nothing. So, when they were come to her house, she falls to telling of the story of Christiana, and of her intended journey. And thus she began her tale.

TIMOROUS ACQUAINTS HER FRIENDS WHAT THE GOOD CHRISTIANA INTENDS TO DO.

TIM. Neighbours, having had little to do this morning, I went to give Christiana a visit; and, when I came at the door, I knocked, as you know it is our custom: and she answered, If you come in God's name, come in. So in I went, thinking all was well: but, when I came in, I found her preparing herself to depart the town, she, and also her children. So I asked her, what was her meaning by that? And she told me in short, that she was now of a mind to go on pilgrimage,

* Here we see our Lord's word verified, "The one shall be taken, and the other left," Matt. xxiv. 41. Mercy is called, and Timorous left. All to appearance seems chance and accident, that any come to the knowledge of the truth; but electing love directs all things, and sovereign grace overrules all things: and "all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ," 2 Cor. v. 18. Oh, ever bow to divine sovereignty! ever adore discriminating grace! what shall we say to these things? "If God be for us, who shall be against us?" Rom. viii. 31.

as did her husband. She told me also of a dream that she had, and how the King of the country where her husband was, had sent an inviting letter to come thither.

MRS. KNOW-NOTHING. Then said Mrs. Know-Nothing, And what, do you think she will go?

TIM. Ay, go she will, whatever comes on't; and methinks I know it by this; for that which was my great argument to persuade her to stay at home, (to wit, the troubles she was like to meet with in the way,) is one great argument with her to put her forward on her journey. For she told me in so many words, "The bitter goes before the sweet; yea, and forasmuch as it so doth, it makes the sweet the sweeter."

Mrs. BAT'S-EYES. O this blind and foolish woman!

MRS. BAT'S-EYES. said she, and will she not take warning by her husband's afflictions? For my part, I see, if he were here again, he would rest himself content in a whole skin, and never run so many hazards for nothing.

Mrs. Inconsiderate also replied, saying, Away with

MRS. INCONSIDERATE. such fantastical fools from the town: a good riddance, for my part, I say, of her; should she stay where she dwells, and retain this her mind, who could live quietly by her? for she will either be dumpish or unneighbourly, or talk of such matters as no wise body can abide: wherefore, for my part, I shall never be sorry for her departure; let her go, and let better come in her room: it was never a good world since these whimsical fools dwelt in it.*

* O how do such carnal wretches sport with their own damnation, while they despise the precious truths of God, and ridicule his beloved, chosen, and called people! But, as it was in the beginning, he who was born after the flesh persecuted him who was born after the Spirit, so it is now, and will be for ever—as long as the seed of the woman, and the seed of the serpent, are upon the earth.

Then Mrs. Light-Mind added as followeth: Come, put this kind of talk away. I was yesterday at Madam Wanton's, where we were as merry as the maids. For who do you think should be there, but I and Mrs. Love-the-Flesh, and three or four more, with Mrs. Lechery, Mrs. Filth, and some others: so there we had music and dancing, and what else was meet to fill up the pleasure. And, I dare say, my lady herself is an admirable well-bred gentlewoman, and Mr. Lechery is as pretty a fellow.

MRS. LIGHT-MIND.

MADAM WANTON, SHE THAT HAD LIKE TO HAVE BEEN TOO HARD FOR FAITHFUL, IN TIME PAST.

By this time Christiana was got on her way, and Mercy went along with her: so as they went, her children being there also, Christiana began to discourse. And, Mercy, said Christiana, I take this as an unexpected favour, that thou shouldest set forth out of doors with me to accompany me a little in the way.

DISCOURSE BETWIXT MERCY AND GOOD CHRISTIANA.

MER. Then said young Mercy, (for she was but young,) If I thought it would be to purpose to go with you, I would never go near the town any more.

MERCY INCLINES TO GO.

CHR. Well, Mercy, said Christiana, cast in thy lot with me. I well know what will be the end of our pilgrimage: my husband is where he would not but be for all the gold in the Spanish mines. Nor shalt thou be rejected, though thou goest but upon my invitation. The King, who hath sent for me and my children, is one that delighteth in mercy. Besides, if thou wilt, I will hire thee, and thou shalt go along with me as my servant. Yet we will have all things in common betwixt thee and me: only go along with me.*

* Such is the true spirit of real pilgrims, they do not love to eat their precious morsel alone. They wish others to know precious

MERCY DOUBTS OF ACCEPTANCE.

MER. But how shall I be ascertained that I also shall be entertained? Had I this hope but from one that can tell, I would make no stick at all, but would go, being helped by Him that can help, though the way was never so tedious.*

CHRISTIANA ALLURES HER TO THE GATE, WHICH IS CHRIST, AND PROMISES THERE TO INQUIRE FOR HER.

CHR. Well, loving Mercy, I will tell thee what thou shalt do: go with me to the Wicket-gate, and there I will further inquire for thee; and if there thou shalt not meet with encouragement, I will be content that thou return to thy place. I also will pay thee for the kindness which thou showest to me and my children, in the accompanying of us in our way as thou dost.

MERCY PRAYS.

MER. Then will I go thither, and will take what shall follow; and the Lord grant that my lot may there fall, even as the King of heaven shall have his heart upon me.†

Christ, and to become followers of him with themselves. O how happy are they, when the Lord is pleased to draw the hearts of any of their fellow-sinners to himself!

* Though Christiana clearly saw and knew her calling of God, yet Mercy did not: therefore she is in doubt about it. Just so it is with many at their first setting out. Hence they are ready to say (and I have met with many who have said,) that they could even wish to have had the most violent convictions of sin, and to have been as it were shook over the mouth of hell, that they might have had a greater certainty of their being called of God. But this is speaking unadvisedly. Better to take the apostle's advice, "Give all diligence to make your calling sure."

† Here is a precious discovery of a heart divinely instructed. Mind, here is no looking to any thing Mercy was in herself, nor to any thing she could do for herself, for hope; but all is resolved into this, all is cast upon this, even the love of the heart of the King of heaven. Reader, can you be content with this lot? Can you cast all, and rest all, upon the love of Christ? Then bless his loving name for giving you a pilgrim's heart.

Christiana then was glad at heart; not only that she had a companion; but also for that she had prevailed with this poor maid to fall in love with her own salvation. So they went on together, and Mercy began to weep. Then said Christiana, Wherefore weepeth my sister so?

CHRISTIANA GLAD OF MERCY'S COMPANY.

MER. Alas! said she, who can but lament, that shall but rightly consider what a state and condition my poor relations are in, that yet remain in our sinful town? And that which makes my grief the more heavy is, because they have no instructor, nor any to tell them what is to come.*

MERCY GRIEVES FOR HER CARNAL RELATIONS.

CHR. Bowels become pilgrims: and thou dost for thy friends, as my good Christian did for me when he left me; he mourned for that I would not heed nor regard him: but his Lord and ours did gather up his tears, and put them into his bottle; and now both I and thou, and these my sweet babes, are reaping the fruit and benefit of them. I hope, Mercy, that these tears of thine will not be lost; for the Truth hath said, that "they that sow in tears shall reap in joy;" and "he that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him."[m]

CHRISTIAN'S PRAYERS WERE ANSWERED FOR HIS RELATIONS AFTER HE WAS DEAD.

Then said Mercy,

Let the most Blessed be my guide,
If't be his blessed will,
Unto his gate, into his fold,
Up to his holy hill:

m Psalm cxxvi. 5, 6.

* This is natural; when we know the worth of our souls, and the preciousness of Christ's salvation, and weep over ourselves and for our sins, to mourn and weep for our dear carnal relatives, lest they should be lost, and to wish for their salvation also.

And let him never suffer me
  To swerve, or turn aside
From his free-grace and holy ways,
  What'er shall me betide.

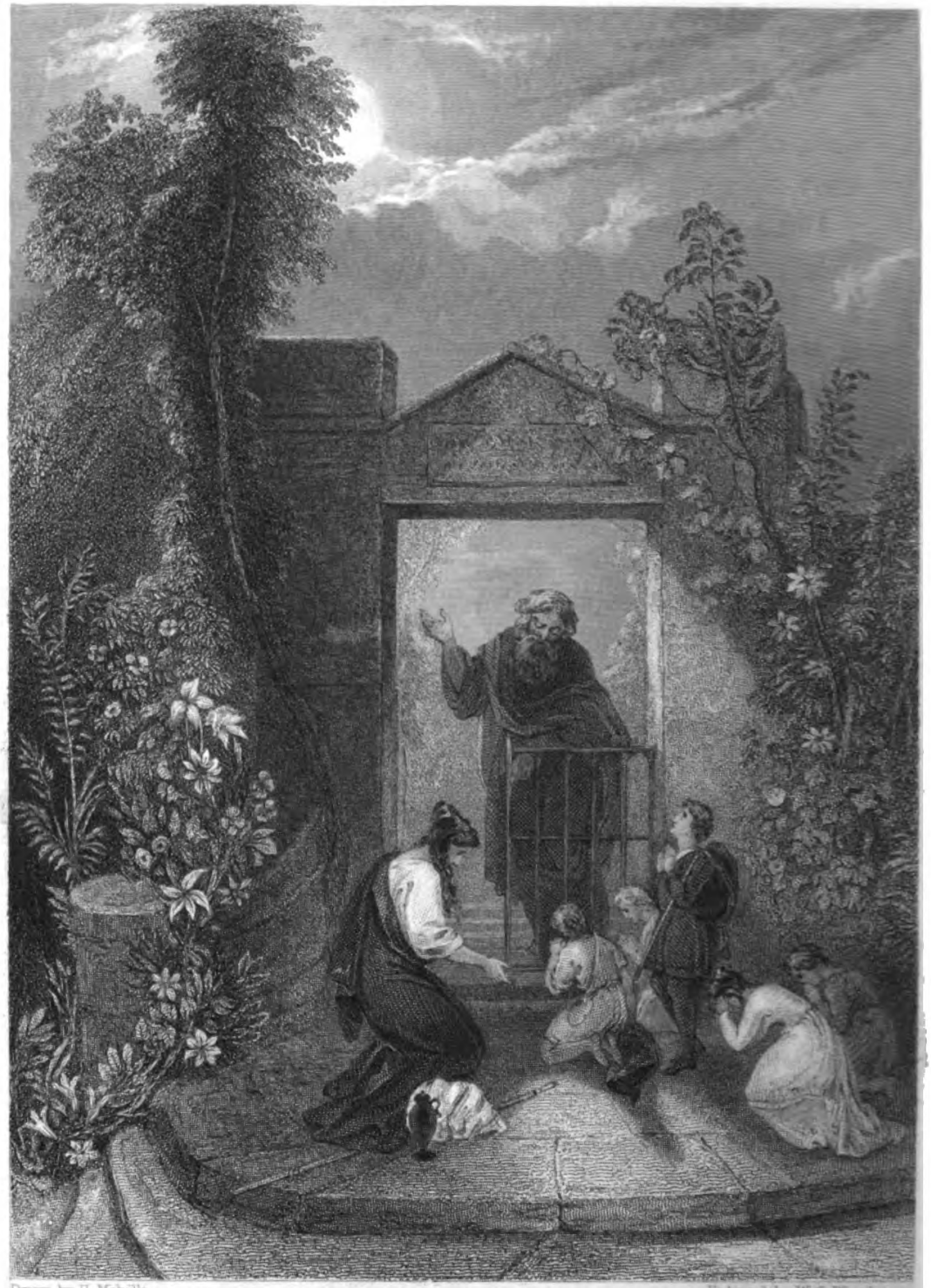
And let him gather them of mine,
  That I have left behind:
Lord, make them pray they may be thine,
  With all their heart and mind.

Now my old friend proceeded, and said, But, when Christiana came to the Slough of Despond, she began to be at a stand; For, said she, this is the place in which my dear husband had like to have been smothered with mud. She perceived also, that, nothwithstanding the command of the King to make this place for pilgrims good, yet it was rather worse than formerly. So I asked if that was true? Yes, said the old gentleman, too true: for many there be that pretend to be the King's labourers, and that say they are for mending the King's highways, and that bring dirt and dung instead of stones, and so mar, instead of mending.* Here Christiana, therefore, and her boys, did make a stand: but, said Mercy, Come, let us venture; only let us be

THEIR OWN CARNAL CONCLUSIONS INSTEAD OF THE WORD OF LIFE.

MERCY THE BOLDEST AT THE SLOUGH OF DESPOND.

* But instead of being what they profess, the King's labourers, Paul calls them gospel-perverters, and soul-troublers, Gal. v. 10. For, instead of preaching a free, full, and finished salvation, graciously bestowed as of free gift and by rich grace, upon poor sinners who can do nothing to entitle themselves to it, or to gain an interest in it; behold, these wretched daubers set forth salvation to sale upon certain terms and conditions which sinners are to perform and fulfil. Thus they distress the upright and sincere, and deceive the self-righteous and unwary into pride and delusion. Thus they mar, instead of mend, the way; and bring dirt and dung, instead of stones, to make the way sound and safe for pilgrims. Beware of the sophistry of free-will, self-righteous preachers: for they only perplex the mind, and puzzle the conscience, but never make good the ground of hope, in the sinner's heart, upon the Saviour of the lost.



Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by W. C. Wrankmore.

wary. Then they looked well to their steps, and made a shift to get staggeringly over.

Yet Christiana had like to have been in, and that not once or twice. Now they had no sooner got over, but they thought they heard words that said unto them, "Blessed is she that believeth, for there shall be a performance of what has been told her from the Lord."[n]

Then they went on again; and said Mercy to Christiana, Had I as good ground to hope for a loving reception at the Wicket-gate as you, I think no Slough of Despond would discourage me.

Well, said the other, you know your sore, and I know mine; and, good friend, we shall all have enough evil before we come to our journey's end. For can it be imagined, that the people who design to attain such excellent glories as we do, and that are so envied that happiness as we are, but that we shall meet with what fears and snares, with what troubles and afflictions, they can possibly assault us with that hate us.

PRAYER SHOULD BE MADE WITH CONSIDERATION AND FEAR, AS WELL AS IN FAITH AND HOPE.

And now Mr. Sagacity left me to dream out my dream by myself. Wherefore, methought I saw Christiana, and Mercy, and the boys, go all of them up to the gate: to which when they were come, they betook themselves to a short debate about how they must manage their calling at the gate, and what should be said unto him that did open to them; so it was concluded, since Christiana was the eldest, that she should knock for entrance, and that she should speak to him, that did open, for the rest. So Christiana began to knock, and, as her poor husband did, she knocked and knocked again. But, instead of any that answered, they all thought that they heard as if a dog came barking upon

THE DOG, THE DEVIL, AN ENEMY TO PRAYER.

n Luke i. 45.

them; a dog, and a great one too: and this made the women and children afraid. Nor durst they for a while to knock any more, for fear the mastiff should fly upon them. Now therefore they were greatly tumbled up and down in their minds, and knew not what to do: knock they durst not, for fear of the dog; go back they durst not, for fear the keeper of that gate should espy them as they so went, and should be offended with them: at last they thought of knocking again, and knocked more vehemently than they did at first. Then said the keeper of the gate, Who is there? So the dog left off to bark, and he opened unto them.*

CHRISTIANA AND HER COMPANIONS PERPLEXED ABOUT PRAYER.

Then Christiana made low obeisance, and said, Let not our Lord be offended with his handmaidens, for that we have knocked at his princely gate. Then said the keeper, Whence come ye? and what is it that you would have?

Christiana answered, We are come from whence Christian did come, and upon the same errand as he; to wit, to be, if it shall please you, graciously admitted, by this gate, into the way that leads unto the Celestial City. And I answer, my Lord, in the next place, that I am Christiana, once the wife of Christian, that now is gotten above.

With that the keeper of the gate did marvel, saying, What, is she now become a pilgrim, that but a while

* No sooner does a poor sinner open his lips in prayer to Jesus, but the devil will bark and roar at him, and by all means try to terrify and discourage him. Do you find this? What is our remedy against this? Resist the devil, and he will flee from you, James iv. 7. Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you, James iv. 8. O ever remember our dear Lord's word, Men should pray always, and not faint, Luke xviii. 1.

ago abhorred that life? Then she bowed her head, and said, Yea; and so are these my sweet babes also.

HOW CHRISTIANA IS ENTERTAINED AT THE GATE.

Then he took her by the hand, and led her in, and said also, "Suffer little children to come unto me;" and with that he shut up the gate. This done, he called to a trumpeter that was above, over the gate, to entertain Christiana with shouting and sound of trumpet, for joy. So he obeyed, and sounded, and filled the air with his melodious notes.

Now all this while poor Mercy did stand without, trembling and crying, for fear that she was rejected. But when Christiana had got admittance for herself and her boys, then she began to make intercession for Mercy.

CHRISTIANA'S PRAYER FOR HER FRIEND MERCY.

And she said, My Lord, I have a companion of mine that stands yet without, that is come hither upon the same account as myself; one that is much dejected in her mind, for that she comes, as she thinks, without sending for; whereas I was sent for by my husband's King to come.

DELAYS MAKE THE HUNGERING SOUL THE FERVENTER.

Now Mercy began to be very impatient, and each minute was as long to her as an hour; wherefore she prevented Christiana from a fuller interceding for her, by knocking at the gate herself. And she knocked then so loud, that she made Christiana to start. Then said the keeper of the gate, Who is there? And Christiana said, It is my friend.

MERCY FAINTS.

So he opened the gate, and looked out, but Mercy was fallen down without in a swoon, for she fainted, and was afraid that no gate should be opened to her.

Then he took her by the hand, and said, Damsel, I bid thee arise.

O sir, said she, I am faint; there is scarce life left in me. But he answered, that one once said, "When my soul fainted within me, I remembered the Lord, and my prayer came unto thee, into thy holy temple."[o] Fear not, but stand upon thy feet, and tell me wherefore thou art come.

MER. I am come for that unto which I was never invited, as my friend Christiana was. Her's was from the King, and mine was but from her. Wherefore I fear I presume.*

o Jonah ii. 7.

* Mercy's case is not singular. Many have set out just as she did, and have been discouraged by the same reason as she was. Some are wrought on by one means, and some by another. She, as many have

GOOD. Did she desire thee to come with her to this place?

MER. Yes; and, as my Lord sees, I am come: and if there is any grace and forgiveness of sins to spare, I beseech that thy poor handmaid may be a partaker thereof.

Then he took her again by the hand, and led her gently in, and said, I pray for all them that believe on me, by what means soever they come unto me. Then said he to those that stood by, Fetch something, and give it to Mercy to smell on, thereby to stay her faintings. So they fetched her a bundle of myrrh,[p] and a while after she was revived.

And now were Christiana and her boys, and Mercy, received of the Lord at the head of the way, and spoke kindly unto by him. Then said they yet further unto him, We are sorry for our sins, and beg of our Lord his pardon, and further information what we must do.

I grant pardon, said he, by word and deed: by word, in the promise of forgiveness; by deed, in the way I obtained it. Take the first from my lips with a kiss, and the other as it shall be revealed.[q]

p Song i. 13. q John xx. 20.

been, was encouraged to set out in the ways of the Lord by her neighbour and friend. Hence she, as many others also, have thought there was no cause to conclude that she was effectually called by the Lord, but it was only the effect of human power, or moral suasion, and therefore doubted and fainted lest she should not meet with acceptance. But her very doubts, fears, and distress proved the earnestness of her heart, and the desire of her soul after the Saviour; and also, that his attracting love and gracious power had a hand in the work. Well therefore might Mr. Bunyan call upon his readers, at her gracious reception by Christ—Mark this, ye poor doubting, fearing, trembling souls, who are halting every step, and fearing you have not set out aright, hear what Christ's angel said, and be not discouraged, "Fear not, for ye seek Jesus," Matt. xxviii. 5.

Now I saw in my dream, that he spake many good words unto them, whereby they were greatly gladded. He also had them up to the top of the gate, and showed them by what deed they were saved; and told them withal, that that sight they would have again as they went along in the way, to their comfort.

CHRIST CRUCIFIED SEEN AFAR OFF.

So he left them a while in a summer parlour below, where they entered into talk by themselves; and thus Christiana began: O Lord, how glad am I that we are got in hither!

TALK BETWEEN THE CHRISTIANS.

MER. So you well may: but I of all have cause to leap for joy.

CHR. I thought one time, as I stood at the gate, (because I had knocked, and none did answer,) that all our labour had been lost, especially when that ugly cur made such a heavy barking against us.*

MER. But my worst fear was, after I saw that you was taken into his favour, and that I was left behind. Now, thought I, it is fulfilled which is written, "Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left."[r] I had much ado to forbear crying out, Undone!† And afraid I was to knock any more: but, when I looked up to what was written

r Matt. xxiv. 41.

* The devil often barks most at us, and brings his heaviest accusations against us, when peace, comfort, and salvation are nearest to us.

"Press on, nor fear to win the day,
Though death and hell obstruct the way."

† See what proper use a gracious soul makes of the doctrine of election. Here is no replying against God; no calling in question his sovereign right to receive or to reject. No: all that this poor humble heart thought, Now is fulfilled what is written, "One shall be taken, and the other left." If so, what had she to say? No impeachment of the Lord's dealings; but only, I am undone! But yet, on

over the gate, I took courage. I also thought, that I must either knock again or die: so I knocked, but I cannot tell how; for my spirit now struggled between life and death.

CHR. Can you not tell how you knocked? I am sure your knocks were so earnest, that the very sound of them made me start. I thought I never heard such knocking in all my life; I thought you would a come in by a violent hand, or a took the kingdom by storm.[s]

CHRISTIANA THINKS HER COMPANION PRAYS BETTER THAN SHE.

MER. Alas! to be in my case, who that so was could but have done so? You saw that the door was shut upon me, and that there was a most cruel dog thereabout. Who, I say, that was so faint-hearted as I, would not have knocked with all their might? But pray, what said my Lord to my rudeness? Was he not angry with me?

CHR. When he heard your lumbering noise, he gave a wonderful innocent smile: I believe what you did pleased him well, for he showed no sign to the contrary. But I marvel in my heart why he keeps such a dog: had I known that afore, I should not have had heart enough to have ventured myself in this manner. But now we are in, we are in, and I am glad with all my heart.

CHRIST PLEASED WITH LOUD AND RESTLESS PRAYER.

IF THE SOUL AT FIRST DID KNOW ALL IT SHOULD MEET WITH IN ITS JOURNEY TO HEAVEN, IT WOULD HARDLY EVER SET OUT.

s Matt. xi. 12.

seeing what was written over the gate, "Knock, and it shall be opened;" from that, and not from any sight of worth or worthiness in herself, but, ruined as she found herself, lost as she felt herself, she was encouraged to knock again, or to cry and pray more vehemently than ever. Here is a blessed example of deep humility; and of holy boldness, excited by the divine word. Go, thou ruined sinner, and do likewise.

MER. I will ask, if you please, next time he comes down, why he keeps such a filthy cur in his yard: I hope he will not take it amiss.

THE CHILDREN ARE AFRAID OF THE DOG.

Do so, said the children, and persuade him to hang him, for we are afraid he will bite us when we go hence.

So at last he came down to them again, and Mercy fell to the ground on her face before him, and worshipped, and said, "Let my Lord accept the sacrifice of praise which I now offer unto him with the calves of my lips."

MERCY EXPOSTULATES ABOUT THE DOG.

So he said unto her, Peace be to thee; stand up. But she continued upon her face, and said, "Righteous art thou, O Lord, when I plead with thee; yet let me talk with thee of thy judgments:"[t] wherefore dost thou keep so cruel a dog in thy yard, at the sight of which such women and children as we are ready to fly from thy gate for fear?

THE DEVIL.

He answered and said, That dog has another owner: he also is kept close in another man's ground, only my pilgrims hear his barking: he belongs to the castle which you see there at a distance, but can come up to the walls of this place. He has frighted many an honest pilgrim from worse to better, by the great voice of his roaring. Indeed, he that owneth him doth not keep him out of any good-will to me or mine, but with intent to keep the pilgrims from coming to me, and that they may be afraid to come and knock at this gate for entrance. Sometimes also he has broken out, and has worried some that I loved; but I take all at present patiently. I also give my pilgrims timely help, so that they are not delivered to his power, to do with them what his doggish nature would prompt him

t Jer. xii. 1, 2.

to. But what! my purchased one, I trow, hadst thou known never so much beforehand, thou wouldest not have been afraid of a dog. The beggars that go from door to door, will, rather than lose a supposed alms, run the hazard of the bawling, barking, and biting too, of a dog; and shall a dog, a dog in another man's yard, a dog whose barking I turn to the profit of pilgrims, keep any from coming to me? I deliver them from the lions, and "my darling from the power of the dog."[u]

A CHECK TO THE CARNAL FEAR OF THE PILGRIMS.

MER. Then said Mercy, I confess my ignorance: I spake what I understood not: I acknowledge that thou dost all things well.

CHRISTIANS, WHEN WISE ENOUGH, ACQUIESCE IN THE WISDOM OF THEIR LORD.

CHR. Then Christiana began to talk of their journey, and to inquire after the way. So he fed them, and washed their feet, and set them in the way of his steps, according as he had dealt with her husband before.

So I saw in my dream, that they walked on their way; and had the weather very comfortable to them.

Then Christiana began to sing, saying,

Bless'd be the day that I began
  A pilgrim for to be;
And blessed also be that man
  That thereto moved me.

'Tis true, 'twas long ere I began
  To seek to live for ever:
But now I run fast as I can;
  'Tis better late than never.

Our tears to joy, ours fears to faith,
  Are turned, as we see;
Thus our beginning (as one saith)
  Shows what our end will be.

u Psalm xxii. 20, 21.

THE DEVIL'S GARDEN.

Now, there was on the other side of the wall, that fenced in the way up which Christiana and her companions were to go, a garden, and that garden belonged to him whose was that barking dog, of whom mention was made before. And some of the fruit-trees that grew in that garden shot their branches over the wall; and being mellow, they that found them did gather them up, and eat of them to their hurt. So Christiana's boys, (as boys are apt to do,) being pleased with the trees, and with the fruit that did hang thereon, did pluck them, and began to eat. Their mother did also chide them for so doing, but still the boys went on.*

THE CHILDREN EAT OF THE ENEMY'S FRUIT.

Well, (said she,) my sons, you transgress, for that fruit is none of ours: but she did not know that it belonged to the enemy. I'll warrant you, if she had, she would have been ready to die for fear. But that passed, and they went on their way. Now, by that they were gone about two bow-shots from the place that led them into the way, they spied two very ill-favoured ones coming down apace to meet them.† With that, Christiana, and Mercy her friend, covered themselves with their veils, and so kept on their journey: the chil-

* What is this garden, but the world? What is the fruit they here found? The lusts of the flesh, the lust of the eye, and the pride of life, 1 John ii. 16. Of this the boys ate. The mother chides them, for taking that which did not belong to them; but she did not know that it grew in the devil's garden. Parents, mind this. Suffer not your children in the least evil. Reprove them for the smallest fault. Sin is both deceitful and hardening. If no notice is taken of a small fault, it naturally will harden them, so as to commit a greater. Mark the consequence of their eating of this fruit hereafter.

† What are these ill-favoured ones? Such as you will be sure to meet with in your pilgrimage, some vile lusts, or cursed corruptions, which are suited to your carnal nature. These will attack you, strive to prevail against you, and overcome you. Mind how these pilgrims

dren also went on before: so that at last they met together. Then they that came down to meet them, came just up to the women, as if they would embrace them: but Christiana said, Stand back, or go peaceably as you should. Yet these two, as men that are deaf, regarded not Christiana's words, but began to lay hands upon them: at that Christiana waxing very wroth, spurned at them with her feet. Mercy also, as well as she could, did what she could to shift them. Christiana again said to them, Stand back, and be gone, for we have no money to lose, being pilgrims, as you see, and such too as live upon the charity of our friends.

TWO ILL-FAVOURED ONES ASSAULT CHRISTIANA AND MERCY.

Then said one of the two men, We make no assault on you for money, but are come out to tell you, that if you will but grant one small request we shall ask, we will make women of you for ever.

Now Christiana, imagining what they should mean, made answer again, We will neither hear, nor regard, nor yield to what you shall ask. We are in haste, and cannot stay; our business is a business of life and death. So again she and her companion made a fresh essay to go past them: but they letted them in their way.

And they said, We intend no hurt to your lives; 'tis another thing we would have.

Ay, quoth Christiana, you would have us body and soul, for I know 'tis for that you are come; but we will die rather upon the spot, than to suffer ourselves to be brought into such snares as shall hazard our well-being hereafter. And with that they

SHE CRIES OUT.

acted, and follow their example. Were one to fix names to these ill-favoured ones, they might be called Unbelief and Licentiousness, which aim to rob Christ's virgins of their chastity to him.

both shrieked out, and cried, Murder! murder! and so put themselves under those laws that are provided for the protection of women.[v] But the men still made their approach upon them, with design to prevail against them. They therefore cried out again.*

IT IS GOOD TO CRY OUT WHEN WE ARE ASSAULTED.

Now they being, as I said, not far from the gate in at which they came, their voice was heard from whence they were, thither: wherefore some of the house came out, and knowing that it was Christiana's tongue, they made haste to her relief. But by that they were got within sight of them, the women were in a very great scuffle: the children also stood crying by. Then did he that came in for their relief call out to the ruffians, saying, What is that thing you do? Would you make my Lord's people to transgress? He also attempted to take them: but they did make their escape over the wall into the garden of the man to whom the great dog belonged; so the dog became their protector. This Reliever then came up to the women, and asked them how they did. So they answered, We thank thy Prince, pretty well, only we

THE RELIEVER COMES.

THE ILL ONES FLY TO THE DEVIL FOR RELIEF.

v Deut. xxii. 25—27.

* Here we see, that the most violent temptation to the greatest evil is not sin, if resisted and not complied with. Our dear Lord himself was tempted in all things like as we are, yet without sin. Therefore, ye dear followers of him, don't be dejected and cast down, though you should be exercised with temptations to the blackest crimes, and the most heinous sins. You cannot be assaulted with worse than your Lord was: he was tempted to hellish unbelief, abominable idolatry, and cruel self-murder, by the devil; but he resisted Satan, and overcame all in our nature. And he is faithful, "who will not suffer us to be tempted above that we are able; but will, with the temptation also, make a way to escape, that we may be able to bear it," 1 Cor. x. 13. Oh, then cry to him. He is the precious Reliever, who will come in the hour of distress.

have been somewhat affrighted; we thank thee also, that thou camest in to our help, otherwise we had been overcome.

RELIEVER. So, after a few more words, this Reliever said as followeth: I marvelled much, when you were entertained at the gate above, being ye knew that ye were but weak women, that you petitioned not the Lord for a conductor; then might you have avoided these troubles and dangers; for he would have granted you one.*

THE RELIEVER TALKS TO THE WOMEN.

MARK THIS!

CHR. Alas! said Christiana, we were so taken with our present blessing, that dangers to come were forgotten by us: beside, who could have thought, that so near the King's palace there could have lurked such naughty ones? Indeed, it had been well for us, had we asked our Lord for one; but, since our Lord knew it would be for our profit, I wonder he sent not one along with us.†

REL. It is not always necessary to grant things not asked for, lest by so doing they become of little esteem; but when the want of a thing is felt, it then comes under, in the eyes of him that feels it, that estimate that properly is its due, and so consequently will be thereafter used. Had my Lord granted you a conductor, you would not either so have bewailed that oversight of yours in not asking for one,

WE LOSE FOR NOT ASKING FOR.

* Let this convince us of our backwardness to prayer, and make us ashamed of ourselves, that our conduct brings that cutting word against us. "Ye have not, because ye ask not," James iv. 2.

† It is well to be taken with present blessings, to be joyful in them, and thankful for them; but it is wrong to forget our dangers, and grow secure. Though the Lord loves us so well as to withhold no good thing from us, yet what he does withhold, he makes to work for good unto us; even to convict us of our remissness.

as now you have occasion to do. So all things work for good, and tend to make you more wary.*

CHR. Shall we go back again to my Lord, and confess our folly, and ask one?

REL. Your confession of your folly I will present him with: to go back again, you need not, for in all places where you shall come, you shall find no want at all; for in every one of my Lord's lodgings, which he has prepared for the reception of his pilgrims, there is sufficient to furnish them against all attempts whatsoever. But, as I said, "he will be inquired of by them, to do it for them."[w] And 'tis a poor thing that is not worth asking for.

When he had thus said, he went back to his place, and the pilgrims went on their way.

THE MISTAKE OF MERCY.

MER. Then said Mercy, What a sudden blank is here! I made account that we had been past all danger, and that we should never see sorrow more.

CHRISTIANA'S GUILT.

CHR. Thy innocency, my sister, said Christiana to Mercy, may excuse thee much; but as for me, my fault is so much the greater, for that I saw this danger before I came out of the doors, and yet did not provide for it when provision might have been had. I am much to be blamed.†

w Ezek. xxxvi. 37.

* What loving, what precious reasoning is this! With what tender affection does our Lord reprove his dear people! See how kindly it works upon a pilgrim's soul. Poor Christiana was for going back to confess her folly, and make her request to her Lord. But she is forbidden, and encouraged and comforted to go on. O how does our Lord bear, and what pains does he take with us, poor awkward creatures, who are ever prone to act amiss! Let us ever think most lowly of ourselves, and most highly of him.

† Here is the display of a truly christian spirit, in that open and ingenuous confession of her fault, taking all the blame upon herself,

MER. Then said Mercy, How knew you this before you came from home? Pray open to me this riddle.

CHRISTIANA'S DREAM REPEATED.

CHR. Why, I will tell you.—Before I set foot out of doors, one night, as I lay in my bed, I had a dream about this: for methought I saw two men, as like these as ever any in the world could look, stand at my bed's feet, plotting how they might prevent my salvation. I will tell you their very words: they said, ('twas when I was in my troubles,) What shall we do with this woman? for she cries out, waking and sleeping, for forgiveness. If she be suffered to go on as she begins, we shall lose her as we have lost her husband. This, you know, might have made me take heed, and have provided when provision might have been had.

MERCY MAKES GOOD USE OF THEIR NEGLECT OF DUTY.

MER. Well, said Mercy, as by this neglect we have an occasion ministered unto us to behold our own imperfections, so our Lord has taken occasion thereby to make manifest the riches of his grace; for he, as we see, has followed us with unasked kindness, and has delivered us from their hands that were stronger than we, of his mere good pleasure.*

Thus now, when they had talked away a little more time, they drew near to a house that stood in the way,

exaggerating it, and excusing Mercy. This is not natural to us; for we are all prone to self-justification, and self-vindication. This is the real mark of our high spirit. But the grace of Christ humbles the heart, and silences the tongue to self-justifying pleas. O for more of this precious grace!

* Mark these phrases—the riches of his grace, and his mere good pleasure. You cannot entertain too exalted ideas of these, nor speak too highly of them. While, on the other hand, you can never see too much, nor speak too much, of your own imperfections. Pilgrims

which house was built for the relief of pilgrims, as you will find more fully related in the First Part of these records of the Pilgrim's Progress. So they drew on towards the house, (the house of the Interpreter;) and when they came to the door, they heard a great talk in the house. Then they gave ear, and heard, as they thought, Christiana mentioned by name; for you must know that there went along, even before her, a talk of her and her children's going on pilgrimage. And this was the most pleasing to them, because they had heard that she was Christian's wife, that woman who was, some time ago, so unwilling to hear of going on pilgrimage. Thus, therefore, they stood still, and heard the good people within commending her, who they little thought stood at the door. At last Christiana knocked, as she had done at the gate before. Now, when she had knocked, there came to the door a young damsel, and opened the door, and looked, and behold, two women were there.

TALK IN THE INTERPRETER'S HOUSE ABOUT CHRISTIANA'S GOING ON PILGRIMAGE.

SHE KNOCKS AT THE DOOR.

THE DOOR IS OPENED TO THEM BY INNOCENT.

DAM. Then said the damsel to them, With whom would you speak in this place?

CHR. Christiana answered, We understand that this is a privileged place for those that are become pilgrims, and we now at this door are such; wherefore we pray that we may be partakers of that for which we at this time are come; for the day, as thou seest, is very far spent, and we are loath to-night to go any further.

should be known by their language, as well as their walk. Those who talk highly of their own perfection, speak little, if at all, of the riches of God's grace, and the good pleasure of his will. But if they do, they talk so confusedly about them, that real pilgrims cannot understand them. Beware of the infection of the pride and self-righteous leaven of such.

DAM. Pray, what may I call your name, that I may tell it to my Lord within?

CHR. My name is Christiana; I was the wife of that pilgrim that some years ago did travel this way; and these be his four children. This maiden also is my companion, and is going on pilgrimage too.

JOY IN THE HOUSE OF THE INTERPRETER THAT CHRISTIANA IS TURNED PILGRIM.

Then Innocent ran in, (for that was her name,) and said to those within, Can you think who is at the door? There is Christiana, and her children, and her companion, all waiting for entertainment here! Then they leaped for joy, and went and told their Master. So he came to the door, and, looking upon her, he said, Art thou that Christiana whom Christian the good man left behind him, when he betook himself to a pilgrim's life?

CHR. I am that woman, that was so hard-hearted as to slight my husband's troubles, and that left him to go on his journey alone; and these are his four children: but now I also am come, for I am convinced that no way is right but this.*

INTER. Then is fulfilled that which is written of the man that said to his son, "Go, work to-day in my vineyard: and he said to his father, I will not; but afterwards repented, and went."[x]

x Matt. xxi. 28, 29.

* Here see how the experience of true grace works in the heart: by keeping the subjects of it low in their own eyes, and cutting off all self-exaltings, "I am that hard-hearted woman," &c. This ever dwelt uppermost in Christiana's heart. O soul, if thou truly knowest thyself, thou wilt ever be sinking into nothing, yea, worse than nothing, because a sinner before the Lord, and confess thy vileness unto him, and acknowledge, if he had left thee to thyself, destruction must have been thy inevitable doom. And see how confident divine teaching makes us. Under its power and influence, we can say with Christiana, I am convinced that no way is right but this, even to be a pilgrim of the Lord, and sojourner upon the earth.

CHR. Then said Christiana, So be it: Amen. God make it a true saying upon me, and grant that I may be found at the last "of him in peace, without spot, and blameless!"

INTER. But why standest thou thus at the door? Come in, thou daughter of Abraham: we were talking of thee but now, for tidings have come to us before, how thou art become a pilgrim. Come, children, come in; come, maiden, come in! So he had them all into the house.

So, when they were within, they were bidden to sit down and rest them; the which when they had done, those that attended upon the pilgrims in the house came into the room to see them. And one smiled, and another smiled, and they all smiled, for joy that Christiana was become a pilgrim. They also looked upon the boys; they stroked them over their faces with the hand, in token of their kind reception of them: they also carried it lovingly to Mercy, and bid them all welcome into their Master's house.*

OLD SAINTS GLAD TO SEE THE YOUNG ONES WALK IN GOD'S WAYS.

After a while, because supper was not ready, the Interpreter took them into his Significant Rooms, and showed them what Christian, Christiana's husband, had seen some time before. Here,

THE SIGNIFICANT ROOMS.

* Here is joy indeed, which strangers to the love of Christ intermeddle not with. Believer, did you never partake of this pleasing, this delightful sensation, on seeing other poor sinners like thyself called to know Jesus, and follow him? Surely this is the joy of heaven: and if thou hast this joy, thou hast the love that reigns in heaven. Glory to Jesus, I think I can truly say, I have this blessed evidence in my heart, that I know somewhat of this joy, arising from seeing poor lost sinners converted, not merely to an opinion, or to a party of Christians, but their hearts converted to Jesus, so as to love him and follow him. O for a spread and increase of this spirit, among Christians of all denominations!

therefore, they saw the man in the cage, the man and his dream, the man that cut his way through his enemies, and the picture of the biggest of them all; together with the rest of those things that were then so profitable to Christian.

This done, and after those things had been somewhat digested by Christiana and her company, the Interpreter takes them apart again, and has them first into a room where was a man that could look no way but downwards, with a muck-rake in his hand. There stood also one over his head with a celestial crown in his hand, and proffered him that crown for his muck-rake; but the man did neither look up nor regard, but raked to himself the straws, the small sticks, and dust of the floor.

THE MAN WITH THE MUCK-RAKE EXPOUNDED.

Then said Christiana, I persuade myself, that I know somewhat the meaning of this; for this is a figure of a man of this world: is it not, good sir?

INTER. Thou hast said right, said he, and his muck-rake doth show his carnal mind. And, whereas thou seest him rather give heed to rake up straws and sticks, and the dust of the floor, than to do what He says that calls to him from above, with the celestial crown in his hand; it is to show, that heaven is but as a fable to some, and that things here are counted the only things substantial. Now, whereas it was also showed thee, that the man could look no way but downwards, it is to let thee know, that earthly things, when they are with power upon men's minds, quite carry their hearts away from God.

CHR. Then said Christiana, O deliver me from this muck-rake!

CHRISTIANA'S PRAYER AGAINST THE MUCK-RAKE.

INTER. That prayer, said the Interpreter, has lain by till it is almost rusty: "Give me not riches," is scarce

the prayer of one in ten thousand.[y] Straws, and sticks, and dust, with most, are the great things now looked after.

With that Christiana and Mercy wept, and said, It is, alas! too true.*

When the Interpreter had showed them this, he had them into the very best room in the house, (a very brave room it was:) so he bid them look round about, and see if they could find any thing profitable there. Then they looked round and round, for there was nothing to be seen but a very great spider on the wall; and that they overlooked.

OF THE SPIDER.

MER. Then said Mercy, Sir, I see nothing; but Christiana held her peace.

INTER. But, said the Interpreter, look again: she therefore looked again, and said, Here is not any thing but an ugly spider, who hangs by her hands upon the wall. Then, said he, Is there but one spider in all this spacious room? Then the water stood in Christiana's eyes, for she was a woman quick of apprehension: and she said, Yea, Lord, there is more here than one; yea, and spiders whose venom is far more destructive than that which is in her. The Interpreter then looked pleasantly on her, and said, Thou hast said the truth. This made Mercy to blush, and the boys to cover their faces; for they all began now to understand the riddle.†

TALK ABOUT THE SPIDER.

y Prov. xxx. 8.

* Reader, didst thou, like these pious pilgrims, never shed a generous tear for thy base and disingenuous conduct towards thy Lord, in preferring the sticks and straws of this world, to the unsearchable riches of Christ, and the salvation of thy immortal soul? Oh, this is natural to us all! and though made wise unto salvation, yet this folly cleaves to our old nature still. Let the thought humble us, and make us weep before the Lord.

† There was not one dreaming perfectionist among them. No, they all knew the venom of sin which was in their fallen nature. This made

Then said the Interpreter again, "The spider taketh hold with her hands, (as you see,) and is in kings' palaces." And wherefore is this recorded, but to show you, that, how full of the venom of sin soever you be, yet you may, by the hand of faith, lay hold of, and dwell in, the best room that belongs to the King's house above.*

CHR. I thought, said Christiana, of something of this; but I could not imagine it at all. I thought that we were like spiders, and that we looked like ugly creatures, in what fine rooms soever we were; but that by this spider, that venomous and ill-favoured creature, we were to learn how to act faith, that came not into my thoughts; and yet she had taken hold with her hands, and, as I see, dwelleth in the best room in the house.—God has made nothing in vain.

Then they seemed all to be glad; but the water stood in their eyes; yet they looked one upon another, and also bowed before the Interpreter.

them cover their faces with shame, and sink into deep humility of heart. Every true interpreter of God's word, yea, the blessed Interpreter of God's heart, Jesus, will look pleasantly upon those who confess the truth; while he beholds the proud self-righteous sinner afar off.

* Here is the mystery of God's grace, the mystery of precious faith; that, however hateful sin is in the sight of a holy God, however full of sin the sinner is, yet he can love the sinner, as much as he loaths his sin. Why? because he views his elect sinners *in* Christ the Son of his love, by whom a perfect atonement is made for sin, his precious blood cleanses their souls from all sin, and presents them without spot of sin before God. This, faith apprehends; and then the soul dwells in the best room indeed, even in the very heart of God in Christ. The Lord increase our faith in this precious truth, that we may the more love and glorify the God of grace and truth! O let not our venom of sin deject us, while there is the blood of Christ to cleanse us! O for stronger love to Christ, and greater hatred of sin! Both spring from believing.

OF THE HEN AND CHICKENS.

He had them into another room, where was a hen and chickens, and bid them observe a while. So one of the chickens went to the trough to drink, and every time she drank she lifted up her head and her eyes towards heaven. See, said he, what this little chick doth, and learn of her to acknowledge whence your mercies come, by receiving them with looking up. Yet again, said he, observe and look; so they gave heed, and perceived that the hen did walk in a fourfold method towards her chickens. 1. She had a common call, and that she hath all the day long. 2. She had a special call, and that she had but sometimes. 3. She had a brooding note. And, 4. she had an outcry.[z]

Now, said he, compare this hen to your King, and these chickens to his obedient ones. For, answerable to her, himself has his methods, which he walketh in towards his people. By his common call he gives nothing; by his special call he always has something to give; he has also a brooding voice for them that are under his wing; and he has an outcry, to give the alarm when he seeth the enemy come. I choose, my darlings, to lead you into the room where such things are, because you are women, and they are easy for you.*

z Matt. xxiii. 37.

* Observation and experience justify this excellent simile. God's common call is, to all his creatures, who live within the sound of his gospel. His special call is, when he bestows the grace, peace, and pardon of the gospel of Christ upon his people. The brooding note is, when he gathers them under his wings, warms their hearts with the comforts of his love, nourishes their souls with close fellowship with himself, and refreshes their spirits with the overflowings of joy in the Holy Ghost. "In the shadow of thy wings will I rejoice," says David, Psa. lxiii. 7. "I sat under his shadow with great delight, and his fruit was sweet unto my taste," Song ii. 3. O for more of these

CHR. And, sir, said Christiana, pray let us see some more. So he had them into the slaughter-house, where was a butcher killing a sheep: and, behold, the sheep was quiet, and took her death patiently. Then said the Interpreter, You must learn of this sheep to suffer, and to put up with wrongs without murmurings and complaints. Behold how quietly she takes her death, and, without objecting, she suffereth her skin to be pulled over her ears. Your King doth call you his sheep.*

OF THE BUTCHER AND THE SHEEP.

After this, he led them into his garden, where was great variety of flowers; and he said, Do you see all these? So Christiana said, Yes. Then said he again, Behold, the flowers are diverse in stature, in quality, and colour, and smell, and virtue: and some are better than others; also, where the gardener hath set them, there they stand, and quarrel not one with another.†

OF THE GARDEN.

Again, he had them into his field, which he had sown with wheat and corn: but when they beheld,

OF THE FIELD.

precious brooding notes, to be gathered under the wing of our Immanuel! But, be our frames and experience what they may, still we are ever in danger; for enemies surround us on every side, and our worst are within us. Therefore our Lord has an outcry: he gives the alarm, calls upon us, and warns us of danger. Why? that we should flee to him, and run into him: for "the name of the Lord is a strong tower; the righteous runneth into it, and is safe," Prov. xviii. 10.

* Were we as sheep going astray? Are we now returned to thee, O Christ, the great Shepherd and bishop of our souls? Lord, give us more and more of thy meek and lowly spirit!

† Christ's church is his garden; his people are planted in it by the power of his grace, and they shall soon be transplanted into his kingdom of glory. Though there may be little non-essential differences of judgment, yet why should they fall out? O for more love and peace from Jesus, and then there will be more among each other.

the tops of all were cut off, only the straw remained. He said again, This ground was dunged, and ploughed, and sowed; but what shall we do with the crop? Then said Christiana, Burn some, and make muck of the rest. Then said the Interpreter again, Fruit, you see, is that thing you look for, and for want of that you condemn it to the fire, and to be trodden under foot of men: beware that in this you condemn not yourselves.*

OF THE ROBIN AND THE SPIDER.

Then, as they were coming in from abroad, they spied a little robin with a great spider in his mouth: so the Interpreter said, Look here. So they looked, and Mercy wondered; but Christiana said, What a disparagement is it to such a pretty little bird as the robin-redbreast; he being also a bird, above many, that loveth to maintain a kind of sociableness with men! I had thought they had lived upon crumbs of bread, or upon such other harmless matter: I like him worse than I did.

The Interpreter then replied, This robin is an emblem, very apt to set forth some professors by; for to sight they are, as this robin, pretty of note, colour, and carriage; they seem also to have a very great love for professors that are sincere; and, above all others, to desire to associate with them, and to be in their company, as if they could live upon the good man's crumbs. They pretend also, that therefore it is that they frequent the house of the godly, and the appointments of the Lord: but when they are by themselves, as the robin, they can catch and gobble up spiders, they can change

* A precious caution. See to it, Christian, that you avoid those things which cause deadness and unfruitfulness, and follow those things which tend to quicken and make your souls fruitful in good works, to the glory of God.

their diet, drink iniquity, and swallow down sin like water.*

So when they were come again into the house, because supper as yet was not ready, Christiana again desired that the Interpreter would either show or tell some other things that are profitable.

PRAY, AND YOU WILL GET AT THAT WHICH YET LIES UNREVEALED.

Then the Interpreter began, and said: The fatter the sow is, the more she desires the mire; the fatter the ox is, the more gamesomely he goes to the slaughter; and the more healthy the lustful man is, the more prone is he unto evil.

There is a desire in women to go neat and fine: and it is a comely thing to be adorned with that which in God's sight is of great price.

'Tis easier watching a night or two, than to sit up a whole year together: so 'tis easier for one to begin to profess well, than to hold out as he should to the end.

Every shipmaster, when in a storm, will willingly cast that overboard that is of the smallest value in the vessel: but who will throw the best out first? None but he that feareth not God.

One leak will sink a ship: and one sin will destroy a sinner.

He that forgets his friend, is ungrateful unto him; but he that forgets his Saviour is unmerciful to himself.

* A very striking emblem this, and most pertinently applied; and, if your soul is sincere, it will cause a holy fear, create a godly jealousy, put you upon self-examining, and make you sigh out, in some such words as David, "Search me, O God, and know my heart; try me, and know my thoughts; and see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting," Psa. cxxxix. 23, 24. O what will it avail in a dying hour, or in the judgment-day, that we have worn the mark of profession, and seemed to man what we were not in heart and reality of life before God? From all self-deceiving, good Lord, deliver us! for we are all naturally prone to it.

He that lives in sin, and looks for happiness hereafter, is like him that soweth cockle, and thinks to fill his barn with wheat or barley.

If a man would live well, let him fetch his last day to him, and make it always his company-keeper.

Whispering and change of thoughts prove that sin is in the world.

If the world, which God sets light by, is counted a thing of that worth with men; what is heaven, that God commendeth?

If the life that is attended with so many troubles, is so loath to be let go by us, what is the life above?

Every body will cry up the goodness of men; but who is there, that is, as he should be, affected with the goodness of God?

We seldom sit down to meat, but we eat and leave: so there is in Jesus Christ more merit and righteousness than the whole world has need of.

THE TREE THAT IS ROTTEN AT HEART.

When the Interpreter had done, he takes them out into his garden again, and had them to a tree, whose inside was all rotten and gone, and yet it grew and had leaves. Then said Mercy, What means this? This tree, (said he,) whose outside is fair, and whose inside is rotten, is it, to which many may be compared that are in the garden of God; who with their mouths speak high in behalf of God, but in deed will do nothing for him; whose leaves are fair, but their heart good for nothing, but to be tinder for the devil's tinder-box.*

* That's my very character, says many a doubting, broken-hearted sinner. Well, thank God, says many a self-confident, whole-hearted pharisee, it is far from being mine. We can only say to this—he that knows most of his own superlatively deceitful and desperately wicked heart, suspects himself most, and exercises most godly jealousy over

Now supper was ready, the table spread, and all things set on the board; so they sat down and did eat, when one had given thanks. And the Interpreter did usually entertain those that lodged with him, with music at meals; so the minstrels played. There was also one that did sing, and a very fine voice he had. His song was this—

THEY ARE AT SUPPER.

The Lord is only my support,
And he that doth me feed;
How can I then want anything
Whereof I stand in need?

When the song and music was ended, the Interpreter asked Christiana, what it was that at first did move her thus to betake herself to a pilgrim's life. Christiana answered, First, the loss of my husband came into my mind, at which I was heartily grieved: but all that was but natural affection. Then, after that, came the troubles and pilgrimage of my husband into my mind, and also how like a churl I had carried it to him as to that. So guilt took hold of my mind, and would have drawn me into the pond; but that opportunely I had a dream of the well-being of my husband, and a letter sent me by the King of that country where my husband dwells, to come to him. The dream and the letter together so wrought upon my mind, that they forced me to this way.

TALK AT SUPPER.

A REPETITION OF CHRISTIANA'S EXPERIENCE.

INTER. But met you with no opposition before you set out of doors?

CHR. Yes, a neighbour of mine, one Mrs. Timorous, (she was akin to him that would have persuaded my

himself; while persons, who see least of themselves, are most self-confident and daring. Even Judas could as boldly ask, Master, Is it I who shall betray thee? as any of the rest of his disciples.

husband to go back, for fear of the lions,) she also so befooled me, for, as she called it, my intended desperate adventure; she also urged what she could to dishearten me from it; the hardships and troubles that my husband met with in the way: but all this I got over pretty well. But a dream that I had of two ill-looking ones, that I thought did plot how to make me miscarry in my journey, that hath troubled me much: yea, it still runs in my mind, and makes me afraid of every one that I meet, lest they should meet me to do me a mischief, and to turn me out of my way.* Yea, I may tell my Lord, though I would not every body know of it, that between this and the gate by which we got into the way, we were both so sorely assaulted, that we were made to cry out Murder! and the two, that made this assault upon us, were like the two that I saw in my dream.

Then said the Interpreter, Thy beginning is good, thy latter end shall greatly increase. So he addressed himself to Mercy, and said unto her, And what moved thee to come hither, sweet heart?

A QUESTION PUT TO MERCY.

Then Mercy blushed and trembled, and for a while continued silent.

INTER. Then said he, Be not afraid, only believe, and speak thy mind.

* Ah, Mrs. Timorous! how many professed pilgrims hast thou befooled and turned back! How often does she attack and affright many real pilgrims! I am sure she has often made my poor heart ache with her ghastly looks and terrifying speeches. She always accosts us in the Arminian dialect, Save thyself; or, like Satan, when he borrowed Peter's tongue, to oppose our Lord's sufferings. O may we ever say to her, in our Lord's words, "Get thee behind me, Satan: thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men," Matt. xvi. 23.

MER. So she began, and said, Truly, sir, my want of experience is that which makes me covet to be in silence, and that also that fills me with fears of coming short at last. I cannot tell of visions and dreams, as my friend Christiana can: nor know I what it is to mourn for my refusing of the counsel of those that were good relations.* MERCY'S ANSWER.

INTER. What was it then, dear heart, that hath prevailed with thee to do as thou hast done?

MER. Why, when our friend here was packing up to be gone from our town, I and another went accidentally to see her. So we knocked at the door, and went in. When we were within, and seeing what she was doing, we asked her what was her meaning? She said, she was sent for, to go to her husband; and then she up and told us how she had seen him in a dream, dwelling in a curious place among immortals, wearing a crown, playing upon a harp, eating and drinking at his Prince's table, and singing praises to him for bringing him thither, &c. Now methought, while she was telling these things unto us, my heart burned within me. And I said in my heart, If this be true, I will leave my father and my mother, and the land of my nativity, and will, if I may, go along with Christiana.

So I asked her further of the truth of these things,

* A very simple and artless confession. The Lord works very differently upon his elect; but always to one and the same end, namely, to make us prize Christ, his salvation, and his ways, and to abhor ourselves, the paths of sin, and to cast off all self-righteous hopes. If this is effected in thy heart, reader, no matter whether thou canst tell of visions and dreams, and talk high of experiences. Many are and have been deceived by these things, and come to nothing. But where the soul is rooted and grounded in the knowledge of precious Christ, and love to his ways, though there may be many fears, yet this is an indubitable evidence of a real and sincere pilgrim.

and if she would let me go with her: for I saw now, that there was no dwelling, but with the danger of ruin, any longer in our town. But yet I came away with a heavy heart; not for that I was unwilling to come away, but for that so many of my relations were left behind. And I am come with all the desire of my heart, and will go, if I may, with Christiana, unto her husband, and his King.

INTER. Thy setting out is good, for thou hast given credit to the truth;* thou art a Ruth, who did, for the love she bare to Naomi, and to the Lord her God, leave father and mother, and the land of her nativity, to come out and go with a people that she knew not heretofore. "The Lord recompense thy work, and a

* Thou hast given credit to the truth. What is this but faith, the faith of God's elect; the faith of the operation of God? But some may ask, What, is justifying, saving faith, nothing more than a belief of the truth? If so, the very devils believe, yea, more, they tremble also. True: but mind how Mercy's faith wrought by her works. True, she did not tremble, like a devil, without hope, but she fled for refuge to the hope set before her in the gospel. She fled from sin, from the city of destruction, to Christ for salvation. Though she had not the joy of faith, yet she followed on to know the Lord, walking in his ways, and hoping for comfort from the Lord in his due time. O how are many poor pilgrims' hearts dejected and distressed about the faith of the gospel, by the strange, perplexing, unscriptural definitions which have been given of it! Whereas faith is the most simple thing in the world, it is the belief of the truth as it is in Jesus; that we are lost sinners in ourselves, and that there is salvation for us in him. Where this is believed in the heart, it causes a sinner to become a pilgrim: believing the exceeding sinfulness of sin, the perfect purity of God's law, his own ruined state, the preciousness of Christ, the glory of his salvation, the necessity of holiness, and the hope of glory; this faith will influence the conduct, bring love into the heart, and cause the soul to persevere, looking to Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith. Oh, if thou hast a grain of this precious faith in thy heart, bless Jesus for it, and go on thy way rejoicing.

full reward be given thee of the Lord God of Israel, under whose wings thou art come to trust."[a]

THEY UNDRESS THEMSELVES FOR BED.

Now supper was ended, and preparation was made for bed: the women were laid singly alone, and the boys by themselves. Now when Mercy was in bed, she could not sleep for joy, for that now her doubts of missing at last were removed further from her than ever they were before. So she lay blessing and praising God, who had such favour for her.*

MERCY'S GOOD NIGHT'S REST.

In the morning they arose with the sun, and prepared themselves for their departure; but the Interpreter would have them tarry a while; For, said he, you must orderly go from hence. Then said he to the damsel that first opened unto them, Take them and have them into the garden to the bath, and there wash them and make them clean from the soil which they have gathered by travelling. Then Innocent the damsel took them, and led them into the garden, and brought them to the bath; so she told them, that there they must wash and be clean, for so her Master would have the women to do, that called at his house as they were going on pilgrimage. Then they went in and washed, yea, they and the boys and all; and they came out of that bath not only sweet and clean, but also much enlivened and strengthened in their joints. So when they came in, they looked fairer a deal than when they went out to the washing.†

THE BATH OF SANCTIFICATION.

THEY WASH IN IT.

a Ruth ii. 11, 12.

* Here now is the comfort of faith. As our faith grows strong, it expels our doubts, enlivens our hearts, and sets our souls a blessing and praising our Immanuel. This prayer, "Lord, increase our faith!" is ever needful for God's glory, and to our soul's comfort.

† There is no travelling on pilgrimage without gathering soil. There are no pilgrims, but daily need to have recourse to this bath of

When they were returned out of the garden from the bath, the Interpreter took them, and looked upon them, and said unto them, "Fair as the moon." Then he called for the seal, wherewith they used to be sealed that were washed in his bath. So the seal was brought, and he set his mark upon them, that they might be known in the places whither they were yet to go. Now the seal was the contents and sum of the passover which the children of Israel did eat when they came out of the land of Egypt;[b] and the mark was set between their eyes. This seal greatly added to their beauty, for it was an ornament to their faces. It

THEY ARE SEALED.

b Exod xiii. 8—10.

sanctification. What may we understand by it? The blood of Jesus, which cleanses us from all sin, 1 John i. 7. Christ is the fountain opened for sin and for uncleanness, Zech. xiii. 1. Christ is the soul's only bath. As all baths are for the health and purification of the body; such is this bath to the soul. But, unless a bath be used, and water applied, this cannot be effected. So, unless we have recourse to Christ, we cannot enjoy the comfort of health and purification of soul. But the Holy Spirit, the Sanctifier, convinces us of sin, shows us our fresh-contracted spots and defilements, and leads us to the blood of the Lamb. The Spirit bears witness to this blood, and purifies and comforts by the application of this blood only. O how does this enliven and strengthen our souls, by filling our consciences with joy and peace in believing! Let us bless our dear Saviour for such a bath. Let us pray him to keep us from being so hardened through the deceitfulness of sin, as not to feel our want of it; or so blinded by a false notion of our own perfection, as not to see our constant need of this fountain.

The fountain of Christ
I ever will sing;
The blood of our Priest,
Our crucified King;
Which perfectly cleanses
From sin, and from filth;
And richly dispenses
Salvation and health.

This fountain from guilt
Not only makes pure,
And gives, soon as felt,
Infallible cure;
But if guilt removed
Return and remain,
Its pow'r may be proved
Again and again.

also added to their gravity, and made their countenances more like those of angels.*

Then said the Interpreter again to the damsel that waited upon these women, Go into the vestry, and fetch out garments for these people. So she went and fetched out white raiment, and laid it down before him; so he commanded them to put it on:† it was "fine linen, white and clean." When the women were thus adorned, they seemed to be a terror one to the other; for that they could not see that glory each one had in herself, which they could see in each other. Now, therefore, they began to esteem each other better than themselves. For, You are fairer than I am, said one; and, You are more comely than I am, said another. The children also stood amazed, to see into what fashion they were brought.‡

THEY ARE CLOTHED.

TRUE HUMILITY.

* This means the sealing of the Spirit, whereby they were sealed unto the day of redemption, Eph. iv. 30. O this is blessed sealing! None know the comfort and joy of it, but those who have experienced it. It confirms our faith, establishes our hope, and inflames our affections to God the Father, for his everlasting love; to God the Son, for his everlasting atonement and righteousness; and to God the Spirit, for his enlightening mercy, regenerating grace, quickening, sanctifying, testifying, and assuring influences, whereby we know that we are the children of God, for "the Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirits, that we are the children of God," Rom. viii. 16. All the comfort of our souls lies in keeping this seal clear in our view, and constant in our sight. Therefore grieve not the Holy Spirit.

† Mind, they are commanded to put it on. Though God imputes the righteousness of his beloved Son to sinners, yet it is received and put on by faith. Hence it is called the righteousness of God, 2 Cor. v. 21. and the righteousness of faith, Rom. x. 6. Christ the God-man wrought it out, God the Father imputes it, and faith receives it, under the influence of God the Spirit. God's imputation does not supersede faith's acceptation of his Son's righteousness.

‡ This is always the case, when souls are clothed in the robe of Christ's righteousness. They are little, low, and mean in their own eyes, and they esteem each other better than themselves: whereas they,

The Interpreter then called for a man-servant of his, one Great-heart, and bid him take a sword, and helmet, and shield; and take these my daughters, said he; conduct them to the house called Beautiful, at which place they will rest next. So he took his weapons, and went before them; and the Interpreter said, God speed. Those also that belonged to the family sent them away with many a good wish. So they went on their way, and sang—

This place hath been our second stage:
  Here we have heard and seen
Those good things, that from age to age
  To others hid have been.

The dunghill-raker, spider, hen,
  The chicken, too, to me
Have taught a lesson: let me then
  Conformed to it be.

The butcher, garden, and the field,
  The robin and his bait,
Also the rotten tree, doth yield
  Me argument of weight;

To move me for to watch and pray,
  To strive to be sincere:
To take my cross up day by day,
  And serve the Lord with fear.

Now I saw in my dream, that these went on, and Great-heart before them; so they went, and came to

who at all look to, trust in, or depend upon their own righteousness, in any degree, for their clothing and justification before God, always look down with an air of supercilious contempt upon others, who they think are not so righteous as themselves. This is contrary to living by faith upon, and looking wholly to Jesus. Lord, hide self-righteous pride from my heart, and sink me into the depth of deepest humility, that I may ever glory of thee, and in thee, in whom I am perfectly righteous!

the place where Christian's burden fell off his back, and tumbled into a sepulchre. Here then they made a pause; here also they blessed God. Now, said Christiana, it comes to my mind what was said to us at the gate, to wit, that we should have pardon by word and deed; by word, that is, by the promise; by deed, to wit, in the way it was obtained. What the promise is, of that I know something: but what it is to have pardon by deed, or in the way that it was obtained, Mr. Greatheart, I suppose you know; wherefore, if you please, let us hear your discourse thereof.

A COMMENT UPON WHAT WAS SAID AT THE GATE, OR A DISCOURSE OF OUR BEING JUSTIFIED BY CHRIST.

GREAT. Pardon by the deed done, is pardon obtained by some one, for another that hath need thereof: not by the person pardoned, but in the way, saith another, in which I have obtained it. So then, to speak to the question more at large, the pardon that you, and Mercy, and these boys, have attained, was obtained by another; to wit, by him that let you in at the gate: and he hath obtained it in this double way: he hath performed righteousness to cover you, and spilt his blood to wash you in.*

* This, this is the comfort, joy, and glorying of a pilgrim's heart. Hath Jesus performed righteousness to cover us, and spilt blood to wash us? Have we the faith of this? O how ought we to love him, glory of him, rejoice in him, and study to glorify him in every step of our pilgrimage! But Satan will envy us the comfort of this, and strive to spoil our rejoicing in it. And corrupt teachers will separate here. Many will speak highly of the blood of Christ being shed for our redemption, but oppose his righteousness being imputed to us, to cover, adorn, and justify us; and, instead of this, they will set up an inherent righteousness of their own, in opposition to the righteousness of Christ. As we love our souls, value our peace, comfort, and joy springing from the belief of the truth; and as we regard the honour and glory of our dear Lord, let us be on our guard against such proud, self-righteous, self-justifying, soul-deceiving teachers; for they err, not knowing the scriptures.

CHR. But if he parts with his righteousness to us, what will he have for himself?

GREAT. He has more righteousness than you have need of, or than he needeth himself.

CHR. Pray make that appear.

GREAT. With all my heart: but first I must premise, that he, of whom we are now about to speak, is one that has not his fellow. He has two natures in one person, plain to be distinguished, impossible to be divided. Unto each of these natures a righteousness belongeth, and each righteousness is essential to that nature. So that one may as easily cause the natures to be extinct, as to separate its justice or righteousness from it. Of these righteousnesses, therefore, we are not made partakers, so as that they, or any of them, should be put upon us, that we might be made just, and live thereby. Besides these, there is a righteousness which this person has, as these two natures are joined in one. And this is not the righteousness of the Godhead, as distinguished from the manhood; nor the righteousness of the manhood, as distinguished from the Godhead; but a righteousness which standeth in the union of both natures, and may properly be called the righteousness that is essential to his being prepared of God to the capacity of the mediatory office, which he was entrusted with.* If he parts with his first righteousness, he parts with his Godhead: if he parts with his second righteousness, he parts with the purity of his manhood: if he parts with his third, he parts with that perfection which capacitates him for the office of mediation.

He has therefore another righteousness, which standeth in performance, or obedience to a revealed will:

* Pray attend closely to this scriptural distinction and definition of Christ's righteousness.

and that is what he puts upon sinners, and that by which their sins are covered. Wherefore he saith, "As by one man's disobedience many were made sinners; so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."[c]*

CHR. But are the other righteousnesses of no use to us?

GREAT. Yes; for though they are essential to his natures and office, and cannot be communicated unto another, yet it is by virtue of them that the righteousness that justifies is for that purpose efficacious. The righteousness of his Godhead gives virtue to his obedience; the righteousness of his manhood giveth capability to his obedience to justify; and the righteousness that standeth in the union of these two natures to his

c Rom. v. 19.

* Here Mr. Bunyan gives a very clear and distinct account of that righteousness of Christ, as Mediator, which he wrought out by his perfect obedience to the law of God, for, and in behalf of all his seed: and which righteousness is imputed to them by God the Father, through faith; and in this one righteousness, and in no other, believers in Christ are made perfectly righteous before God. And by this righteousness, and no other, they are fully justified from all condemnation in the sight of God. Of this righteousness, therefore, they glory, and their souls make their boast of it, saying, IN the Lord, Jehovah-Jesus, have I righteousness, Isa. xlv. 24. Reader, study this point deeply, so as to be established in it. It is not of a speculative nature, but is of the essence of the gospel, enters into the life and joy of faith, brings relief to the conscience, and influences to the love of the Lord our righteousness, and to bring forth the fruits of righteousness, which are by him to the praise and glory of God. Nothing can be of greater importance to our souls than to be fully informed, and scripturally assured, how we, who are sinners before God, are made perfectly righteous and everlastingly justified in his sight. This will bring comfort to our souls in the day of life, and administer divine consolation in the hour of death. Therefore, be strong in the faith of thy Lord's righteousness being thine, and thou shalt be joyful in hope, comfortable in love, and steady in all holy obedience.

office, giveth authority to that righteousness to do the work for which it was ordained.

So then here is a righteousness that Christ, as God, has no need of; for he is God without it. Here is a righteousness that Christ, as man, has no need of to make him so, for he is perfect man without it. Again, here is a righteousness, that Christ, as God-man, has no need of, for he is perfectly so without it. Here then is a righteousness that Christ, as God, and as God-man, has no need of, with reference to himself, and therefore he can spare it; a justifying righteousness, that he for himself wanteth not, and therefore giveth it away. Hence it is called "the gift of righteousness." This righteousness, since Christ Jesus the Lord has made himself under the law, must be given away; for the law doth not only bind him that is under it, to do justly, but to use charity. Wherefore he must, or ought by the law, if he hath two coats, to give one to him that has none. Now, our Lord indeed hath two coats, one for himself, and one to spare: wherefore he freely bestows one upon those that have none. And thus, Christiana and Mercy, and the rest of you that are here, doth your pardon come by deed, or by the work of another man. Your Lord Christ is he that worked, and hath given away what he wrought for, to the next poor beggar he meets.

But again, in order to pardon by deed, there must something be paid to God as a price, as well as something prepared to cover us withal. Sin has delivered us up to the just curse of a righteous law: now from this curse we must be justified by way of redemption, a price being paid for the harms we have done; and this is by the blood of your Lord, who came and stood in your place and stead, and died your death for your

transgressions. Thus has he ransomed you from your transgressions by blood, and covered your polluted and deformed souls with righteousness;[d] for the sake of which, God passeth by you, and will not hurt you when he comes to judge the world.*

CHRISTIANA AFFECTED WITH THIS WAY OF REDEMPTION.

CHR. This is brave: now I see that there was something to be learned by our being pardoned by word and deed. Good Mercy, let us labour to keep this in mind; and, my children, do you remember it also. But, sir, was not this it that made my good Christian's burden fall from off his shoulders, and that made him give three leaps for joy?

HOW THE STRINGS THAT BOUND CHRISTIAN'S BURDEN TO HIM WERE CUT.

GREAT. Yes, it was the belief of this that cut those strings, that could not be cut by other means; and it was to give him a proof of the virtue of this, that he was suffered to carry his burden to the cross.

CHR. I thought so; for though my heart was lightsome and joyous before, yet it is ten times more lightsome and joyous now. And I am persuaded by what I have felt, (though I have felt but little as yet,) that if the most burdened man in the world was here, and did see and believe as I now do, it would make his heart the more merry and blithe.

HOW AFFECTION TO CHRIST IS BEGOT IN THE SOUL.

GREAT. There is not only comfort, and the ease of a burden, brought to us, by the sight and consideration of these, but an endeared

d Rom. viii. 34. Gal. iii. 13.

* Thus we see what God hath joined together—the life and death, the atonement and righteousness, of his beloved Son, for the salvation of our souls. Both enter into the essence of the faith of the gospel. Let us beware never to separate them in our views. We want both his blood to atone for our sins, and his righteousness to justify our souls. O give glory to Jesus for both, and triumph in both from day to day on earth, till you come to cast down your crowns at his feet, and to crown Christ with all his glory in heaven.

affection begot in us by it; for who can (if he doth but once think that pardon comes not only by promise, but thus,) but be affected with the way and means of his redemption, and so with the man that hath wrought it for him?*

CHR. True: methinks it makes my heart bleed to think that he should bleed for me. Oh, thou loving One! Oh, thou blessed One! Thou deservest to have me; thou hast bought me; thou deservest to have me all; thou hast paid for me ten thousand times more than I am worth! No marvel that this made the tears stand in my husband's eyes, and that it made him trudge so nimbly on: I am persuaded he wished me with him; but, vile wretch that I was, I let him come all alone. O Mercy, that thy father and mother were here; yea, and Mrs. Timorous also: nay, I wish now with all my heart that here was Madam Wanton too. Surely, surely, their hearts would be affected; nor could the fear of the one, nor the powerful lusts of the other, prevail with them to go home again, and refuse to become good pilgrims.†

CAUSE OF ADMIRATION.

* Come hither, ye sons of the sorceress, who make a sport of holy raptures and heavenly ecstasies, begotten in the soul by the knowledge of redemption in the blood of Christ, the forgiveness of our sins. Laugh on till ye howl in destruction, for despising salvation by the blood of the Lamb: but we will exult and triumph, sing of, and rejoice in, Jesus the God of our salvation, in spite of your sport at us; and notwithstanding also the frowns and contempt of you too, who are dead formalists, and know nothing of having your hearts warmed, and your affections inflamed, by the love of a redeeming God and Saviour, and finding yourselves broken-hearted sinners before him, and pardoned and justified sinners by him. O for more ardent affections for our Beloved!

* O brave Christiana! See what it is to have one's heart inflamed with a sense of the love of Christ. Here observe two things: first, that when the affections are thus powerfully carried out, it is no uncommon thing for the tongue to speak unguardedly. Thus Peter upon

GREAT. You speak now in the warmth of your affections: will it, think you, be always thus with you? Besides, this is not communicated to every one, nor to every one that did see your Jesus bleed. There were that stood by, and that saw the blood run from his heart to the ground, and yet were so far off this, that, instead of lamenting, they laughed at him; and, instead of becoming his disciples, did harden their hearts against him. So that all that you have, my daughters, you have by peculiar impression made by a divine contemplating upon what I have spoken to you. Remember, that 'twas told you, that the hen, by her common call, gives no meat to her chickens. This you have therefore by a special grace.*

TO BE AFFECTED WITH CHRIST, AND WITH WHAT HE HAS DONE, IS A THING SPECIAL.

the mount said, "It is good to be here: let us make three tabernacles. But he knew not what he said," Mark ix. 6. So Christiana thinks every one would naturally be affected as she was, if they were present: but she forgets, that what she sees, and feels, is of special, peculiar, distinguishing grace. Secondly, Beware of thinking slightly of having the affections thus divinely inflamed. Many poor, dry, formal professors go on year after year quite easy and contented, without any incomes of ravishing love and spiritual joy. They are content with the cold light of the moon, without the genial warmth of the sun: with clear notions of truth in their heads, without their hearts being warmed, and their affections carried out by the powerful influence of the love of Jesus; for he says, "Ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full," John xvi. 24.

* Mind how tenderly Great-heart deals with warm-hearted Christiana. He does not attempt to damp her joy, and throw cold water upon the fire of her affections; but gently insinuates, first, the peculiar frame of mind she speaks from: secondly, by a gentle hint suggests, that she must not always expect to be in such raptures: and, thirdly, reminds her, that her indulgences were of a peculiar nature, not common to all, but bestowed upon the faithful in Christ only. And that therefore, amidst all her joyful feelings, she should know to whom she was indebted for them, and give all the glory to the God of all grace.

Now I saw in my dream, that they went on until they were come to the place that Simple, and Sloth, and Presumption, lay and slept in, when Christian went by on pilgrimage: and, behold, they were hanged up in irons a little way off on the other side.

SIMPLE, SLOTH, AND PRESUMPTION HANGED; AND WHY.

MER. Then said Mercy to him that was their guide and conductor, What are these three men? and for what are they hanged there?

GREAT. These three men were men of bad qualities; they had no mind to be pilgrims themselves, and whomsoever they could they hindered: they were sloth and folly themselves, and whomsoever they could persuade they made so too; and withal taught them to presume that they should do well at last. They were asleep when Christian went by; and now you go by, they are hanged.*

MER. But could they persuade any to be of their opinion?

THEIR CRIMES.

GREAT. Yes, they turned several out of the way. There was Slow-pace, that they persuaded to do as they. They also prevailed with one Short-wind, with one No-heart, with one Linger-after-lust, and with one Sleepy-head, and with a young woman, her name was Dull, to turn out of the way, and become as they. Besides, they brought up an ill report of your Lord, persuading others that he was a hard taskmaster. They also brought up an evil report of the good land, saying, It was not half so good as some pretended it was. They also began to vilify his servants, and to count the best of them meddlesome, troublesome busy-bodies: further, they would call the bread of God, husks;

* God, as it were, gibbets some professors; and causes their names and characters to be publicly exhibited, as a terror to others, and as a warning to his own people.

the comforts of his children, fancies; the travail and labour of pilgrims, things to no purpose.*

Nay, said Christiana, if they were such, they should never be bewailed by me: they have but what they deserve; and I think it is well that they stand so near the highway, that others may see and take warning. But had it not been well if their crimes had been engraven in some plate of iron or brass, and left here where they did their mischiefs, for a caution to other bad men?

GREAT. So it is, as you may well perceive, if you will go a little to the wall.

MER. No, no; let them hang, and their names rot, and their crimes live for ever against them: I think it is a high favour that they were hanged afore we came hither; who knows else what they might have done to

* Let us consider the characters of these three professors: first, here is Simple, who, as Solomon says, believeth every word, Prov. xiv. 15, a foolish credulous professor, who is easily led away and beguiled by smooth words and fair pretences of others; ever learning, but never coming to the knowledge of the truth, so as to believe it, love it, and be established on it; hence liable to be carried away by every wind of doctrine. Secondly, Sloth, a quiet, easy professor, who never disturbs any one, by his diligence in the ways of God, nor his zeal for the truths and glory of God. Hence all men speak well of him; but Christ denounces a woe against all such, Luke vi. 6. Thirdly, Presumption, one who presumes to find favour with God in a way which his word does not promise; or expects salvation as the end, without the means prescribed by God for attaining it. Such are your licentious, antinomian spirits, who boldly presume to hope for salvation by Christ, without being conformed to the image of Christ; and ridicule the work of the Spirit, as renewing his people in the spirit of their minds, in righteousness and true holiness, for without this real, personal holiness, no man shall see the Lord, Heb. xii. 14. O beware of these three sort of professors, for they turn many aside. Real Christians are in danger of being seduced by them, if not of total destruction from them.

such poor women as we are? Then she turned it into a song, saying—

Now then you three hang there, and be a sign
To all that shall against the truth combine.
And let him that comes after fear this end,
If unto pilgrims he is not a friend.
And thou, my soul, of all such men beware,
That unto holiness opposers are.

Thus they went on, till they came at the foot of the hill Difficulty,* where again the good Mr. Great-heart took an occasion to tell them what happened there when Christian himself went by. So he had them first to the spring. Lo, said he, this is the spring that Christian drank of before he went up this hill; and then it was clear and good, but now it is dirty with the feet of some, that are not desirous that pilgrims here should quench their thirst.[e] Thereat Mercy said, And why so envious, trow? But said their guide, It will do, if taken up and put into a vessel that is sweet and good; for then the dirt will sink to the bottom, and the water come out by itself more clear. Thus, therefore, Christiana and her companions were compelled to do. They took it up, and put it into an earthen pot, and so let it stand till the dirt was gone to the bottom, and then they drank thereof.†

IT IS DIFFICULT GETTING OF GOOD DOCTRINE IN ERRONEOUS TIMES.

e Ezek. xxxiv. 18.

* This hill Difficulty may signify, how hard it is to abide by Christ, cleave to him, and continue to hold fast the truth as it is him, when surrounded by errors and heresies on every side, and temptations and lusts are continually springing up from within us. But, looking to Jesus, and praying him to keep us, is the way of safety, though the hill be ever so difficult to us.

† This represents to us, that some preachers, as the prophet says, soil the water with their feet, Ezek. xxxiv. 18. that is, though they

Next he showed them the two by-ways that were at the foot of the hill, where Formality and Hypocrisy lost themselves. And, said he, these are dangerous paths: two were here cast away when Christian came by. And although, as you see, these ways are since stopped up with chains, posts, and a ditch, yet there are those that will choose to adventure here, rather than take the pains to go up this hill.

THE PATHS, THOUGH BARRED UP, WILL NOT KEEP ALL FROM GOING IN THEM.

CHR. "The way of transgressors is hard:"[f] it is a wonder that they can get into these ways without danger of breaking their necks.

GREAT. They will venture; yea, if at any time any of the King's servants doth happen to see them, and doth call upon them, and tell them that they are in the wrong way, and do bid them beware of the danger, then they railingly return them answer, and say, "As for the word that thou hast spoken unto us in the name of the King, we will not hearken unto thee; but we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth out of our own mouth."[g] Nay, if you look a little further, you shall see that these ways are made cautionary enough, not only by these posts, and ditch, and chain, but also by being hedged up; yet they will choose to go there.*

f Prov. xiii. 15. g Jer. xliv. 16, 17.

preach somewhat about Christ, and salvation by him; yet they so clog, mire, and pollute the stream of free-grace, with pre-requisites, terms, and conditions, &c. that a poor, thirsty soul cannot drink the water, nor allay his thirst with it; but is forced to let it stand, till these gross dregs sink to the bottom. Yea, we ought to beware of drinking such filthy dregs, for they will certainly swell us up with the tympany of pride of our free-will, human merit, and self-righteousness, which oppose the glory of Jesus and the comfort of our souls.

* Examine—which do you like best, self-soothing or soul-searching doctrine? Formalists and hypocrites love the former, and hate the latter. But the sincere and upright are discovered, by desiring to have their hearts searched to the quick, and their ways tried to the uttermost,

THE REASON WHY SOME DO CHOOSE TO GO IN BY-WAYS.

CHR. They are idle; they love not to take pains; up-hill way is unpleasant to them. So it is fulfilled unto them as it is written,—"The way of the slothful man is as an hedge of thorns."[h] Yea, they will rather choose to walk upon a snare, than to go up this hill, and the rest of this way to the City.

THE HILL PUTS THE PILGRIMS TO IT.

Then they set forward, and began to go up the hill, and up the hill they went; but before they got to the top, Christiana began to pant, and said, I dare say this is a breathing hill; no marvel if they that love their ease more than their souls choose to themselves a smoother way. Then said Mercy, I must sit down; also the least of the children began to cry. Come, come, said Great-heart, sit not down here, for a little above is the Prince's arbour. Then he took the little boy by the hand, and led him up thereto.*

THEY SIT IN THE ARBOUR.

When they were come to the arbour, they were very willing to sit down, for they were all in a pelting heat. Then said Mercy, How sweet is rest to them that labour![i] And how good is the Prince of pilgrims, to provide such resting-places for them! Of this arbour I have heard much; but I never saw it before. But here let us beware of sleeping; for as I have heard, it cost poor Christian dear.

h Prov. xv. 19. i Matt. xi. 28.

and therefore with David will cry, "Search me, O God, and know my heart; try me, and know my thoughts; and see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting," Ps. cxxxix. 23, 24.

* He who is a stranger to the hard work of self-denial, and how difficult it is to the flesh, knows not what this hill Difficulty means: for the nearer to the arbour of Jesus's rest, the more difficulties in the way; but the sweeter it is when attained.

Then said Mr. Great-heart to the little ones, Come, my pretty boys, how do you do? What think you now of going on pilgrimage? Sir, said the least, I was almost beat out of heart; but I thank you for lending me a hand at my need. And I remember now what my mother hath told me, namely, that the way to heaven is as a ladder, and the way to hell is as down a hill. But I had rather go up the ladder to life, than down the hill to death.

THE LITTLE BOY'S ANSWER TO THE GUIDE, AND ALSO TO MERCY.

Then said Mercy, But the proverb is, "To go down the hill is easy." But James said, (for that was his name,) The day is coming, when, in my opinion, going down the hill will be the hardest of all. 'Tis a good boy, said his master; thou hast given her a right answer. Then Mercy smiled, but the little boy did blush.*

Come, said Christiana, will you eat a bit, to sweeten your mouths, while you sit here to rest your legs? For I have here a piece of pomegranate, which Mr. Interpreter put into my hand just when I came out of his door; he gave me also a piece of an honeycomb, and a little bottle of spirits.

THEY REFRESH THEMSELVES.

I thought he gave you something, said Mercy, because he called you aside.

Yes, so he did, said the other. But, said Christiana, it shall be still as I said it should, when at first we came from home; thou shalt be a sharer in all the good that I have, because thou so willingly didst become my companion.

* That is right; when we are praised, to have a conscious blush, well knowing how much we have to be ashamed of. But some have got such a vain confidence in, and high opinion of, their own inherent righteousness, merits, and perfection, that they have thereby got, what the scripture calls, a whore's forehead, and refuse to be ashamed, Jer. iii. 3. O cry to the Lord continually against spiritual pride, and for a humble heart, knowing thyself to be a poor sinner.

Then she gave to them, and they did eat, both Mercy and the boys. And said Christiana to Mr. Great-heart, Sir, will you do as we? But he answered, You are going on pilgrimage, and presently I shall return: much good may what you have do you! At home I eat the same every day.

Now when they had eaten and drank, and had chatted a little longer, their guide said to them, The day wears away; if you think good, let us prepare to be going. So they got up to go, and the little boys went before; but Christiana forgot to take her bottle of spirits with her, so she sent her little boy back to fetch it. Then said Mercy, I think this is a losing place. Here Christian lost his roll; and here Christiana left her bottle behind her. Sir, what is the cause of this? So their guide made answer, and said, The cause is sleep, or forgetfulness: some sleep when they should keep awake, and some forget when they should remember; and this is the very cause why often, at the resting-places, some pilgrims in some things come off losers. Pilgrims should watch, and remember what they have already received under their greatest enjoyments; but for want of doing so, oftentimes their rejoicing ends in tears, and their sunshine in a cloud;—witness the story of Christian at this place.*

CHRISTIANA FORGETS HER BOTTLE OF SPIRITS.

MARK THIS!

When they were come to the place where Mistrust and Timorous met Christian to persuade him to go back for fear of the lions, they perceived as it were a stage,

* Reader, mind this well: remember it often; and it will do thee good. I am a witness against myself, of how much I have lost by indulging the flesh, and how much I have suffered by forgetfulness. But oh what a gracious Lord do we serve! this is no excuse for our folly, but an aggravation of our faults—ought to sink us lower in shame, and excite us to greater care, diligence, and watchfulness: else we shall surely smart for our folly, if not in hell, yet in our consciences.

and before it, towards the road, a broad plate, with a copy of verses written thereon; and, underneath, the reason of raising up of that stage in that place rendered. The verses were—

Let him that sees this stage, take heed
Unto his heart and tongue;
Lest, if he do not, here he speed
As some have long agone.

The words underneath the verses were, This stage was built to punish those upon, who, through timorousness or mistrust, shall be afraid to go further on pilgrimage: also on this stage both Mistrust and Timorous were burnt through the tongue with a hot iron, for endeavouring to hinder Christian on his journey."*

Then said Mercy, This is much like to the saying of the Beloved: "What shall be given unto thee, or what shall be done unto thee, thou false tongue? Sharp arrows of the mighty, with coals of juniper."[k]

So they went on, till they came within sight of the lions. Now Mr. Great-heart was a strong man, so he was not afraid of a lion: but yet when they were come up to the place where the lions were, the boys that went before were now glad to cringe behind, for they were afraid of the lions; so they stept back, and went behind. At this their guide smiled, and said, How now, my boys;

AN EMBLEM OF THOSE THAT GO ON BRAVELY WHEN THERE IS NO DANGER, BUT SHRINK WHEN TROUBLES COME.

k Psalm cxx. 3, 4.

* Christians, take heed to your tongue. O beware, beware, lest in any wise you make an evil report of the good land, through fear or mistrust! The Lord notes what you boldly speak for his ways and to his glory; and he marks your words which in any wise have a contrary tendency. The tongue is an unruly evil. "If any man offend not in word (in speaking contrary to the truth as it is in Jesus) the same is a perfect man," James iii. 2.

do you love to go before when no danger doth approach, and love to come behind so soon as the lions appear?

OF GRIM THE GIANT, AND OF HIS BACKING THE LIONS.

Now, as they went on, Mr. Great-heart drew his sword, with intent to make a way for the pilgrims in spite of the lions. Then there appeared one, that it seems had taken upon him to back the lions; and he said to the pilgrims' guide, What is the cause of your coming hither? Now, the name of that man was Grim, or Bloody-man, because of his slaying of pilgrims: and he was of the race of the giants.*

Then said the pilgrims' guide, These women and children are going on pilgrimage; and this is the way they must go; and go it they shall, in spite of thee and the lions.

GRIM. This is not their way, neither shall they go therein. I am come forth to withstand them, and to that end will back the lions.

Now, to say truth, by reason of the fierceness of the lions, and of the grim carriage of him that did back them, this way had of late lain much unoccupied, and was almost grown over with grass.

* Who is this giant Grim, who backs the lions, and terrifies the hearts of pilgrims with a sense of danger in the right way to the kingdom? It is an evil heart of unbelief. This, Great-heart will fight with, and conquer. O how does unbelief multiply dangers, and magnify difficulties; call up fears, and deject our hearts! Unbelief makes every danger wear a grim and terrible aspect. The only weapon to slay this enemy, is the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God, Eph. vi. 17. O pilgrim, when dangers beset you, and fears arise in you, hear what the Lord speaks to you; and in the belief of his truth, quit yourself manfully; fight the good fight of faith; ever remembering, that you are more than conqueror through Christ who hath loved you. Faith will exalt the love and power of Christ, above the fear of every enemy.

Then said Christiana, Though the highways have been unoccupied heretofore, and though the travellers have been made in times past to walk through by-paths, it must not be so now I am risen, "now I am risen a mother in Israel."[1]

Then he swore by the lions, that it should: and therefore bid them turn aside, for they should not have passage there.

A FIGHT BETWIXT GRIM AND GREAT-HEART.

But Great-heart their guide made first his approach unto Grim, and laid so heavily on him with his sword, that he forced him to retreat.

Then said he that attempted to back the lions, Will you slay me upon my own ground?

GREAT. It is the King's highway that we are in, and in this way it is that thou hast placed the lions; but these women and these children, though weak, shall hold on their way in spite of thy lions. And with that he gave him again a downright blow, and brought him upon his knees. With this blow also he broke his helmet, and with the next he cut off an arm. Then did the giant roar so hideously, that his voice frighted the women; and yet they were glad to see him lie sprawling upon the ground. Now the lions were chained, and so of themselves could do nothing.* Wherefore, when old Grim, that intended to back them, was dead,

THE VICTORY.

[1] Judges v. 6, 7.

* How often, after we have fought with the courage of faith, and the resolution of hope, and have overcome a grim enemy, have we seen the fiercest of our enemies chained by the power of God, so as not to have the least power to hurt us? O pilgrim! it is sweet to reflect, that every lion-like foe is under the control of thy God, and cannot come one link of his chain nearer to thee than thy Lord will permit. Therefore, when fears and terrors beset thee, think of thy Lord's love to thee, his power engaged to preserve thee, and his promises to comfort thee. For "the Lord is nigh unto all them who call upon him," Psalm cxlv. 18.

Mr. Great-heart said to the pilgrims, Come now, and follow me, and no hurt shall happen to you from the lions. They therefore went on, but the women trembled as they passed by them; the boys also looked as if they would die; but they all got by without further hurt.

THEY PASS BY THE LIONS.

Now, when they were within sight of the Porter's lodge, they soon came up unto it; but they made the more haste after this to go thither, because it is dangerous travelling there in the night. So when they were come to the gate, the guide knocked, and the porter cried, Who is there? But as soon as the guide had said, It is I, he knew his voice, and came down; for the guide had oft before that come thither as a conductor of pilgrims. When he was come down, he opened the gate, and, seeing the guide standing just before it, (for he saw not the women, for they were behind him,) he said unto him, How now, Mr. Great-heart, what is your business here so late at night? I have brought, said he, some pilgrims hither, where, by my Lord's commandment, they must lodge: I had been here some time ago, had I not been opposed by the giant that used to back the lions. But I, after a long and tedious combat with him, have cut him off, and have brought the pilgrims hither in safety.*

THEY COME TO THE PORTER'S LODGE.

POR. Will not you go in, and stay till morning?

GREAT. No; I will return to my Lord to-night.

GREAT-HEART ATTEMPTS TO GO BACK.

* How mindful is our Lord of us! How gracious is he to us! What blessed provision doth he make for us! If pilgrims are attacked by giant Grim, and terrified with the sight of lions, they may be sure, that it is only a prelude to some sweet enjoyment of their Lord's love, and that they are near to some sweet asylum, some sanctuary of rest, peace, and comfort. Some bitter generally precedes the sweet, and makes the sweet still sweeter.

CHR. O, sir, I know not how to be willing you should leave us in our pilgrimage: you have been so faithful and so loving to us, you have fought so stoutly for us, you have been so hearty in counselling of us, that I shall never forget your favour towards us.

THE PILGRIMS IMPLORE HIS COMPANY STILL.

Then said Mercy, O that we might have thy company to our journey's end! How can such poor women as we hold out in a way so full of troubles as this way is, without a friend and defender?

Then said James, the youngest of the boys, Pray, sir, be persuaded to go with us and help us, because we are so weak, and the way so dangerous as it is.*

HELP LOST FOR WANT OF ASKING FOR.

GREAT. I am at my Lord's commandment: if he shall allot me to be your guide quite through, I will willingly wait upon you. But here you failed at first; for when he bid me come thus far with you, then you should have begged me of him to have gone quite through with you, and he would have granted your request. However, at present I must withdraw; and so, good Christiana, Mercy, and my brave children, adieu.

Then the Porter, Mr. Watchful, asked Christiana of her country, and of her kindred: and she said, I came from the city of Destruction; I am a widow-woman, and my husband is dead; his name was Christian, the pilgrim.

How! said the Porter, was he your husband? Yes, said she, and these are his children; and this (pointing to Mercy) is one of my townswomen.

* Oh, it is hard work to part with Great-heart! How many blessings do we lose for want of asking! Great-heart is at the command of our Lord. O for more power to cry incessantly to the Lord, for the presence of Great-heart, that we may go on more cheerfully and more joyfully in the ways of the Lord!

Then the Porter rang his bell, as at such times he is wont, and there came to the door one of the damsels, whose name was Humble-mind. And to her the Porter said, Go tell it within, that Christiana, the wife of Christian, and her children, are come hither on pilgrimage. She went in, therefore, and told it. But, oh, what noise for gladness was there within, when the damsel did but drop that out of her mouth!

JOY AT THE NEWS OF THE PILGRIMS COMING.

So they came with haste to the Porter, for Christiana stood still at the door. Then some of the most grave said unto her, Come in, Christiana, come in, thou wife of that good man; come in, thou blessed woman, come in, with all that are with thee. So she went in, and they followed her that were her children and companions. Now when they were gone in, they were had into a large room, where they were bidden to sit down: so they sat down, and the chief of the house were called to see and welcome the guests. Then they came in, and, understanding who they were, did salute each other with a kiss, and said, Welcome, ye vessels of the grace of God, welcome unto us your friends.*

CHRISTIANS' LOVE IS KINDLED AT THE SIGHT OF ONE ANOTHER.

Now, because it was somewhat late, and because the pilgrims were weary with their journey, and also made faint with the sight of the fight and of the terrible lions, they desired, as soon as might be, to prepare to go to rest. Nay, said those of the family, refresh yourselves first with a morsel of meat; for they had prepared for them

* Here is a blessed mark of being vessels of the grace of God, when we delight in the sight of, salute, and welcome others in the way to Zion, and mutually have our hearts and affections drawn out to each other in love. O how sweet is the fellowship of pilgrims below! what must it be above! Infinitely beyond conception. Lord, fire our souls with the thought of ever being with thee, and each other, in thy kingdom!

a lamb, with the accustomed sauce belonging thereto.[m]* For the Porter had heard before of their coming, and had told it to them within. So when they had supped, and ended their prayer with a psalm, they desired they might go to rest.

But let us, said Christiana, if we may be so bold as to choose, be in that chamber that was my husband's, when he was here. So they had them up thither, and they all lay in a room. When they were at rest, Christiana and Mercy entered into discourse about things that were convenient.

CHR. Little did I think once, when my husband went on pilgrimage, that I should ever have followed him.

CHRIST'S BOSOM IS FOR ALL PILGRIMS.

MER. And you as little thought of lying in his bed, and in his chamber to rest, as you do now.†

CHR. And much less did I ever think of seeing his face with comfort, and of worshipping the Lord the King with him; and yet now I believe I shall.

MER. Hark, don't you hear a noise?

MUSIC.

CHR. Yes, 'tis, as I believe, a noise of music, for joy that we are here.

m Exod. xii. 3. John i. 29.

* The Lamb is the food of pilgrims, and the end of their conversation. Reader, can you feed upon Christ by faith? Is the Lamb the nourishment of thy soul, and the portion of thy heart? Canst thou say, from sweet and blessed experience, his flesh is meat indeed, and his blood is drink indeed? Is it thy delight to think of him, hear of him, speak of him, abide in him, and live upon him? O bless him, and praise him for this distinguishing mercy, this spiritual appetite. It is peculiar to his beloved ones only.

† Pray, mind the above sweet note, "Christ's bosom is for all pilgrims." It is there the weary find rest, and the burdened soul ease. O for more reclinings of soul upon the precious bosom of our dear Lord! We can be truly happy nowhere else.

MER. Wonderful!—Music in the house, music in the heart, and music also in heaven, for joy that we are here!*

Thus they talked a while, and then betook themselves to sleep. So in the morning, when they were awaked, Christiana said to Mercy, What was the matter, that you did laugh in your sleep to-night? I suppose you was in a dream.

MERCY DID LAUGH IN HER SLEEP.

MER. So I was, and a sweet dream it was; but are you sure I laughed?

CHR. Yes, you laughed heartily: but pr'ythee, Mercy, tell me thy dream.

MER. I was dreaming that I sat all alone in a solitary place, and was bemoaning of the hardness of my heart. Now, I had not sat there long, but methought many were gathered about me to see me, and to hear what it was that I said. So they hearkened, and I went on bemoaning the hardness of my heart. At this, some of them laughed at me, some called me a fool, and some began to thrust me about.

MERCY'S DREAM.

With that, methought I looked up, and saw one coming with wings towards me. So he came directly to me, and said, Mercy, what aileth thee? Now, when he had heard me make my complaint, he said, Peace be to thee: he also wiped mine eyes with his handkerchief, and clad me in silver and gold. He put a chain about my neck, and ear-rings in mine ears, and a beautiful crown upon my head.[n]

WHAT HER DREAM WAS.

Then he took me by the hand, and said, Mercy, come after me. So he went up, and I followed, till we came

n Ezek. xvi. 8—13.

* O what precious harmony is this! how joyful to be the subjects of it, and to join in it! The free, sovereign grace of God is the delightful theme; and glory to God in the highest, the universal chorus. It is the wonder and joy of sinners on earth, and of angels in heaven.

at a golden gate. Then he knocked; and, when they within had opened, the man went in, and I followed him up to a throne, upon which one sat, and he said to me, Welcome, daughter. The place looked bright and twinkling, like the stars, or rather like the sun, and I thought that I saw your husband there. So I awoke from my dream. But did I laugh?*

CHR. Laugh! ay, and well you might, to see yourself so well. For you must give me leave to tell you, that it was a good dream; and that, as you have begun to find the first part true, so you shall find the second at last. "God speaks once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not; in a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumbering upon the bed."[o] We need not, when a-bed, to lie awake to talk with God; he can visit us while we sleep, and cause us then to hear his voice. Our heart oftentimes wakes when we sleep; and God can speak to that, either by words, by proverbs, by signs and similitudes, as well as if one was awake.†

o Job xxxiii. 14—16.

* Pray observe this dream: it is a most precious one indeed. We find it true in the broad day of sweet experience; for then it is we get the most blessed visits from our dear Lord, when we get by ourselves, and bemoan the deadness of our poor hearts. True, we may be laughed at, called fools, and despised by the profane and self-righteous, who do not feel the hardness of their hearts, nor bemoan themselves for it; yet the loving, compassionate, tender-hearted Saviour is ever near to us, he feels for us, sympathizes with us, will manifest himself to us, and revive us with the sense of peace, the joy of hope, and the comforts of love; and assure us, that where he is, there we shall soon be, where pain of heart, and sorrow of soul, shall be no more for ever. Therefore, so far from thinking yourself not to be a pilgrim, because you feel hardness of heart, and bemoan it, be assured that it is a most blessed sign that Christ's heart of love is set upon you.

† O how blessed are they who are watching and waiting continually to hear the small, still voice of the Spirit, speaking rest and peace to

MERCY GLAD OF HER DREAM.

MER. Well, I am glad of my dream, for I hope ere long to see it fulfilled, to the making of me laugh again.

CHR. I think it is now high time to rise, and to know what we must do.

MER. Pray, if they invite us to stay a while, let us willingly accept of the proffer. I am the willinger to stay a while here, to grow better acquainted with these maids: methinks Prudence, Piety, and Charity have very comely and sober countenances.

CHR. We shall see what they will do.

So when they were up and ready, they came down, and they asked one another of their rest, and if it was comfortable or not?

Very good, said Mercy; it was one of the best night's lodgings that ever I had in my life.

Then said Prudence and Piety, If you will be persuaded to stay here a while, you shall have what the house will afford.

Ay, and that with a very good will, said Charity.

THEY STAY HERE SOME TIME.

So they consented, and staid there about a month or above, and became very profitable one to another. And, because Prudence would see how Christiana had brought up her children, she asked leave of her to catechise them: so she gave her free consent. Then she began with the youngest, whose name was James.

PRUDENCE DESIRES TO CATECHISE CHRISTIANA'S CHILDREN.

JAMES CATECHISED.

PRUD. And she said, Come, James, canst thou tell me who made thee?

JAMES. God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost.

their souls by the blood of the Lamb! O how condescending is our Lord, thus to visit us, and converse with us in the way to his kingdom!

PRUD. Good boy. And canst thou tell who saved thee?

JAMES. God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost.

PRUD. Good boy still. But how doth God the Father save thee?

JAMES. By his grace.

PRUD. How doth God the Son save thee?

JAMES. By his righteousness, death and blood, and life.

PRUD. And how doth God the Holy Ghost save thee?

JAMES. By his illumination, by his renovation, and by his preservation.*

Then said Prudence to Christiana, You are to be commended for thus bringing up your children. I suppose I need not ask the rest these questions, since the youngest of them can answer them so well. I will therefore now apply myself to the next youngest.

JOSEPH CATECHISED.

PRUD. Then she said, Come, Joseph, (for his name was Joseph,) will you let me catechise you?

JOS. With all my heart.

PRUD. What is man?

JOS. A reasonable creature, so made by God, as my brother said.

* The infinite love of the Father, and the redeeming grace of the adorable Saviour, however great and glorious, will never bring a soul to heaven without an enlightening, regenerating, and sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit. A deep conviction of the truth of this would cut off many presumptuous hopes, and lead souls to cry for mercy and salvation. They would be afraid to rest in notions, in professions or formality; and would see the necessity of being made new creatures in Christ, in order to their having a title to, or meetness of soul for, heaven and happiness. Thus, the apostle prays for the Ephesians, "that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto [them] the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him," Ephes. i. 17.

PRUD. Good boy. And canst thou tell who saved thee?

JAMES. God the Father, God the Son, and [illegible] Holy Ghost.

PRUD. Good boy still. But how doth [illegible] save thee?

JAMES. By his grace.

PRUD. How doth God the Son [illegible]

JAMES. By his righteousness [illegible] life.

PRUD. And how doth God [illegible]

JAMES. By his illumination [illegible] by his preservation.*

Then said Prudence [illegible] commended for thus bringing [illegible] pose I need not ask the [illegible] youngest of them can answer [illegible] fore now apply myself [illegible]

PRUD. Then she said [illegible] his name was Joseph, [illegible]

JOS. With all my [illegible]

PRUD. What is [illegible]

JOS. A reasonable [illegible] brother said [illegible]

* The infi[illegible] adorable Sa[illegible] to he[illegible] of [illegible]

PRUD. What is supposed by this word, saved?

JOS. That man by sin has brought himself into a state of captivity and misery.

PRUD. What is supposed by his being saved by the Trinity?

JOS. That sin is so great and mighty a tyrant, that none can pull us out of its clutches but God; and that God is so good and loving to man, as to pull him indeed out of this miserable state.

PRUD. What is God's design in saving poor men?

JOS. The glorifying of his name, of his grace, and justice, &c. and the everlasting happiness of his creature.

PRUD. Who are they that must be saved?

JOS. Those that accept of his salvation.

PRUD. Good boy, Joseph; thy mother hath taught thee well, and thou hast hearkened unto what she has said unto thee.

SAMUEL CATECHISED.

PRUD. Then said Prudence to Samuel, (who was the eldest but one,) Come, Samuel, are you willing that I should catechise you?

SAM. Yes, forsooth, if you please.

PRUD. What is heaven?

SAM. A place and state most blessed, because God dwelleth there.

PRUD. What is hell?

SAM. A place and state most woeful, because it is the dwelling-place of sin, the devil, and death.

PRUD. Why wouldest thou go to heaven?

SAM. That I may see God, and serve him without weariness; that I may see Christ, and love him everlastingly; that I may have that fulness of the Holy Spirit in me, which I can by no means here enjoy.

PRUD. A very good boy, and one that has learned well.

Then she addressed herself to the eldest, whose name was Matthew; and she said to him, Come, Matthew, shall I also catechise you? MATTHEW CATECHISED.

MATT. With a very good will.

PRUD. I ask, then, if there was ever any thing that had a being antecedent to, or before, God?

MATT. No; for God is eternal; nor is there any thing excepting himself, that had a being until the beginning of the first day: "For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is."[p]

PRUD. What do you think of the Bible?

MATT. It is the holy word of God.

PRUD. Is there nothing written therein but what you understand?

MATT. Yes, a great deal.

PRUD. What do you do when you meet with places therein that you do not understand?

MATT. I think God is wiser than I. I pray also that he will please to let me know all therein that he knows will be for my good.*

PRUD. How believe you as touching the resurrection of the dead?

MATT. I believe they shall rise, the same that was buried; the same in nature, though not in corruption. And I believe this upon a double account: First, because God has promised it: Secondly, because he is able to perform it.†

p Exod. xx. 11.

* Though this is answered with the simplicity of a child; yet it is, and ever will be, the language of every father in Christ. Happy those whose spirits are cast into this humble, evangelical mould! O that this spirit may accompany us in all our researches, ways, and through all our days.

† Here is the foundation of faith, and the triumph of hope, God's faithfulness to his promise, and his power to perform. Having these to look to, what should stagger our faith, or deject our hope? We

PRUDENCE'S CONCLUSION UPON THE CATECHISING OF THE BOYS.

Then said Prudence to the boys, You must still hearken to your mother, for she can learn you more. You must also diligently give ear to what good talk you shall hear from others: for your sakes do they speak good things. Observe also, and that with carefulness, what the heavens and the earth do teach you; but especially be much in the meditation of that book which was the cause of your father's becoming a pilgrim. I, for my part, my children, will teach you what I can while you are here, and shall be glad if you will ask me questions that tend to godly edifying.

MERCY HAS A SWEETHEART.

Now, by that these pilgrims had been at this place a week, Mercy had a visitor that pretended some good-will unto her, and his name was Mr. Brisk; a man of some breeding, and that pretended to religion, but a man that stuck very close to the world. So he came once or twice, or more, to Mercy, and offered love unto her.

Now Mercy was of a fair countenance, and therefore the more alluring. Her mind also was to be always busying of herself in doing; for when she had nothing to do for herself, she would be making of hose and garments for others, and would bestow them upon them that had need. And Mr. Brisk, not knowing where or how she disposed of what she made, seemed to be greatly taken, for that he found her never idle. I will warrant her a good housewife, quoth he to himself.

MERCY INQUIRES OF THE MAIDS CONCERNING MR. BRISK.

Mercy then revealed the business to the maidens that were of the house, and inquired of them concerning him, for they did know him better than she. So they told her, that he was a

may, we ought to smile at all carnal objections, and trample upon all corrupt reasonings.

very busy young man, and one that pretended to religion; but was, as they feared, a stranger to the power of that which is good.

Nay then, said Mercy, I will look no more on him; for I purpose never to have a clog to my soul.*

Prudence then replied, that there needed no matter of great discouragement to be given to him; for continuing so as she had begun, to do for the poor, would quickly cool his courage.

TALK BETWEEN MERCY AND MR. BRISK.

So the next time he comes, he finds her at her old work, a-making of things for the poor. Then said he, What! always at it? Yes, said she, either for myself or for others. And what canst thou earn a day? quoth he. "I do these things," said she, "that I may be rich in good works, laying a foundation against the time to come, that I may lay hold on eternal life."[q] Why, pr'ythee, what dost thou do with them? said he. Clothe the naked, said she. With that his countenance fell. So he forbore to come at her again. And when he was asked the reason why, he said, that Mercy was a pretty lass, but troubled with ill conditions.†

HE FORSAKES HER, AND WHY.

When he had left her, Prudence said, Did I not tell thee, that Mr. Brisk would soon forsake thee? yea, he

q 1 Tim. vi. 18, 19.

* Most blessed resolution! Ah, pilgrims, if ye were more wary, lest, by your choice and conduct, ye brought clogs to your souls, how many troubles would ye escape, and how much more happy would ye be, in your pilgrimage! It is for want of this wisdom and conduct, that many bring evil upon themselves.

† How easily are the best of characters traduced, and false constructions put upon the best of actions? Reader, is this your lot also? Mind your duty. Look to your Lord. Persevere in his works and ways; and leave your character with him, to whom you can trust your soul. For if God be for us, who shall be against us? Who shall harm us, if we be followers of that which is good?

will raise up an ill report of thee: for, notwithstanding his pretence to religion, and his seeming love to Mercy, yet Mercy and he are of tempers so different, that I believe they will never come together.

MERCY IN THE PRACTICE OF MERCY REJECTED, WHILE MERCY IN THE NAME OF MERCY IS LIKED.

MER. I might have had husbands before now, though I spoke not of it to any: but they were such as did not like my conditions, though never did any of them find fault with my person. So they and I could not agree.

PRUD. Mercy in our days, is but little set by, any further than as to its name: the practice, which is set forth by thy conditions, there are but few that can abide.

MER. Well, said Mercy, if nobody will have me, I will die a maid, or my conditions shall be to me as a husband: for I cannot change my nature; and to have one that lies cross to me in this, that I purpose never to admit of as long as I live. I had a sister, named Bountiful, that was married to one of these churls: but he and she could never agree; but, because my sister was resolved to do as she had begun, that is, to show kindness to the poor, therefore her husband first cried her down at the cross, and then turned her out of his doors.

MERCY'S RESOLUTION.

HOW MERCY'S SISTER WAS SERVED BY HER HUSBAND.

PRUD. And yet he was a professor, I warrant you!

MER. Yes, such a one as he was, and of such as he the world is now full: but I am for none of them all.*

* Though we are to beware of a censorious spirit in regard to professors, yet when they give sad evidence by their walk, that they are not what they profess to be, humble, holy followers of the Lamb, we are by no means to be deceived by them. For we have an unerring rule laid down by our Lord, to judge of them, "Ye shall know them by their fruits," Matt. vii. 16. yea, and we ought to be faithful to them too, by reproving them in the spirit of humility and love. O that more of this prevailed!

Now, Matthew, the eldest son of Christiana, fell sick, and his sickness was sore upon him, for he was much pained in his bowels, so that he was with it, at times, pulled as it were both ends together.* There dwelt also not far from thence, one Mr. Skill, an ancient and well-approved physician. So Christiana desired it, and they sent for him, and he came: when he was entered the room, and had a little observed the boy, he concluded that he was sick of the gripes. Then he said to his mother, What diet has Matthew of late fed upon? Diet! said Christiana, nothing but what is wholesome. The physician answered, This boy has been tampering with something that lies in his maw undigested, and that will not away without means. And I tell you, he must be purged, or else he will die.

MATTHEW FALLS SICK.

GRIPES OF CONSCIENCE.

THE PHYSICIAN'S JUDGMENT.

Then said Samuel, Mother, what was that which my brother did gather up and eat, so soon as we were come from the gate that is at the head of this way? You know that there was an orchard on the left hand, on the other side of the wall, and some of the trees hung over the wall, and my brother did pluck and eat.†

SAMUEL PUTS HIS MOTHER IN MIND OF THE FRUIT HIS BROTHER DID EAT.

True, my child, said Christiana, he did take thereof, and did eat: naughty boy as he was, I chid him, and yet he would eat thereof.

SKILL. I knew he had eaten something that was not wholesome food; and that food, to wit, that fruit, is even

* See the effects of sin. It will pinch and gripe the conscience, and make the heart of a gracious soul sick.

† See how useful pilgrims may be, in faithfully reminding each other of their conduct. Though this sin was committed some time past, and neither Matthew nor his mother thought of it, yet it must be brought to light, and repented of.

the most hurtful of all. It is the fruit of Beelzebub's orchard. I do marvel that none did warn you of it, many have died thereof.*

Then Christiana began to cry; and she said, O naughty boy! and O careless mother! what shall I do for my son?

SKILL. Come, do not be too much dejected; the boy may do well again, but he must purge and vomit.

CHR. Pray, sir, try the utmost of your skill with him, whatever it costs.

SKILL. Nay, I hope I shall be reasonable.—So he made him a purge, but it was too weak; 'twas said, it was made of the blood of a goat, the ashes of a heifer, and with some of the juice of hyssop, &c.[r] When Mr. Skill had seen that that purge was too weak, he made one to the purpose; it was made *ex carne et sanguine Christi;*[s]† (you know physicians give strange medicines to their patients:) and it was made into pills, with a promise or two, and a proportionable quantity of salt.[t] Now, he was to take them three at a time, fasting, in half a quarter of a pint of the tears of repentance.

THE LATIN I BORROW.

r Heb. ix. 19, x. 1—4. s John vi. 54—57. t Mark ix. 49.

* Here is conviction for the mother, in not warning of sin, and chiding for it. She takes it home, falls under the sense of it, and is grieved for it. A tender conscience is a blessed sign of a gracious heart. Ye parents, who know the love of Christ, watch over your children: see to it, lest ye smart for their sins, in not warning and teaching them that the fear of the Lord is to depart from all evil, yea, to abstain from the very appearance of it.

† Mr. Bunyan's great modesty and humility are truly admirable: though he quotes Latin, yet, as he did not understand it, he tells us, "The Latin I borrow." The English is, "Of the flesh and of the blood of Christ." This is the only potion for sin-sick souls. Feeding upon Christ's flesh and blood by faith, keeps us from sinning; and when sick of sin, these, and nothing but these, can heal and restore us. Yet there is in our nature an unaccountable reluctance to receive these, through the unbelief which works in us. So Matthew found it.

When this potion was prepared, and brought to the boy, he was loath to take it, though torn with the gripes as if he should be pulled in pieces. Come, come, said the physician, you must take it. It goes against my stomach, said the boy. I must have you take it, said his mother. I shall vomit it up again, said the boy. Pray, sir, said Christiana to Mr. Skill, how does it taste? It has no ill taste, said the doctor; and with that she touched one of the pills with the tip of her tongue. O Matthew, said she, this potion is sweeter than honey. If thou lovest thy mother, if thou lovest thy brothers, if thou lovest Mercy, if thou lovest thy life, take it. So, with much ado, after a short prayer for the blessing of God upon it, he took it, and it wrought kindly with him. It caused him to purge, it caused him to sleep, and to rest quietly; it put him into a fine heat and breathing sweat, and it quite rid him of his gripes.*

THE BOY LOATH TO TAKE THE PHYSIC.

THE MOTHER TASTES IT, AND PERSUADES HIM.

So in a little time he got up, and walked about with a staff, and would go from room to room, and talk with Prudence, Piety, and Charity, of his distemper, and how he was healed.

A WORD OF GOD IN THE HAND OF FAITH.

So, when the boy was healed, Christiana asked Mr. Skill, saying, Sir, what will content you for your pains

u Zech. xii. 10.

* See the blessed effects of receiving Christ, when under the sense of sin, and distress for sin. O what a precious Saviour is Jesus! What efficacy is there in his blessed flesh and precious blood, to purge the conscience from guilt. Lord, what a mercy is it, that though we sin, yet thou art abundant to pardon, yea, multipliest thy pardons; yea, and also givest poor, pained, broken-hearted sinners to know and feel thy pardoning love. Oh, it is this sense of Christ's love and pardoning grace, which heals, restores, and makes our hearts happy in Christ, and joyful in God! Who that know themselves, and their guilt and wretchedness, can rest without this!

and care to and of my child? And he said, You must pay the Master of the College of Physicians, according to rules made in that case, and provided.[v]

But, sir, said she, what is this pill good for else?

THE PILL A UNIVERSAL REMEDY.

SKILL. It is a universal pill; it is good against all the diseases that pilgrims are incident to; and, when it is well prepared, will keep good time out of mind.

CHR. Pray, sir, make me up twelve boxes of them; for, if I can get these, I will never take other physic.

SKILL. These pills are good to prevent diseases, as well as to cure when one is sick.* Yea, I dare say it, and stand to it, that if a man will but use this physic as he should, it will make him live for ever.[w] But, good Christiana, thou must give these pills no other way but as I have prescribed; for if you do, they will do no good. So he gave unto Christiana physic for herself, and her boys, and for Mercy; and bid Matthew take heed how he ate any more green plums; and kissed them, and went his way.

IN A GLASS OF THE TEARS OF REPENTANCE.

It was told you before, that Prudence bid the boys, that if at any time they would, they should ask her some questions that might be profitable, and she would say something to them.

Then Matthew, who had been sick, asked her, Why, for the most part, physic should be bitter to our palates?

OF PHYSIC.

v Heb. xiii. 15. w John vi. 51.

* I repeat it again: feeding by faith on the flesh and blood of Christ, keeps the soul from sinning, as well as heals and restores the soul when sick of the malady of sin. O pilgrims, let not a day pass without having recourse to the life and death of the Son of God, and living by faith upon him, who shed his blood to save us, and gives his flesh to nourish us, and who says, "My flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed," John vi. 55.

PRUD. To show how unwelcome the word of God, and the effects thereof, are to a carnal heart.

OF THE EFFECTS OF PHYSIC.

MAT. Why does physic, if it does good, purge, and cause to vomit?

PRUD. To show, that the word, when it works effectually, cleanseth the heart and mind. For look, what the one doth to the body, the other doth to the soul.

OF FIRE AND OF THE SUN.

MAT. What should we learn by seeing the flame of our fire go upwards; and by seeing the beams and sweet influences of the sun strike downwards?

PRUD. By the going up of the fire, we are taught to ascend to heaven by fervent and hot desires. And by the sun's sending his heat, beams, and sweet influences, downwards, we are taught that the Saviour of the world, though high, reaches down with his grace and love to us below.

OF THE CLOUDS.

MAT. Whence have the clouds their water?

PRUD. Out of the sea.

MAT. What may we learn from that?

PRUD. That ministers should fetch their doctrine from God.

MAT. Why do they empty themselves upon the earth?

PRUD. To show, that ministers should give out what they know of God to the world.

OF THE RAINBOW.

MAT. Why is the rainbow caused by the sun?

PRUD. To show, that the covenant of God's grace is confirmed to us in Christ.

OF THE SPRINGS.

MAT. Why do the springs come from the sea to us through the earth?

PRUD. To show, that the grace of God comes to us through the body of Christ.

MAT. Why do some of the springs rise out of the tops of high hills?

PRUD. To show, that the Spirit of grace shall spring up in some that are great and mighty, as well as in many that are poor and low.

OF THE CANDLE. MAT. Why doth the fire fasten upon the candlewick?

PRUD. To show, that unless grace doth kindle upon the heart, there will be no true light of life in us.

MAT. Why are the wick and tallow and all spent to maintain the light of the candle?

PRUD. To show, that body and soul and all should be at the service of, and spend themselves to maintain in good condition, that grace of God that is in us.

OF THE PELICAN. MAT. Why doth the pelican pierce her own breast with her bill?

PRUD. To nourish her young ones with her blood; and thereby to show, that Christ the Blessed so loved his young, his people, as to save them from death by his blood.

OF THE COCK. MAT. What may one learn by hearing the cock to crow?

PRUD. Learn to remember Peter's sin, and Peter's repentance. The cock's crowing shows also, that day is coming on: let then the crowing of the cock put thee in mind of that last and terrible day of judgment.

Now, about this time their month was out; wherefore they signified to those of the house, that it was convenient for them to up and be going. Then said Joseph to his mother, It is proper that you forget not to send to the house of Mr. Interpreter, to pray him

THE WEAK MAY SOMETIMES CALL THE STRONG TO PRAYERS.

to grant that Mr. Great-heart should be sent unto us, that he may be our con-

ductor for the rest of the way. Good boy, said she, I had almost forgot. So she drew up a petition, and prayed Mr. Watchful, the porter, to send it by some fit man to her good friend Mr. Interpreter; who, when it was come, and he had seen the contents of the petition, said to the messenger, Go tell them that I will send him.

THEY PROVIDE TO BE GONE ON THEIR WAY.

When the family where Christiana was, saw that they had a purpose to go forward, they called the whole house together, to give thanks to their King, for sending of them such profitable guests as these. Which done, they said unto Christiana, And shall we not show thee something, as our custom is to do to pilgrims, on which thou mayest meditate when thou art upon the way? So they took Christiana, her children, and Mercy, into the closet, and showed them one of the apples that Eve ate of, and that she also did give to her husband, and that for the eating of which they were both turned out of Paradise; and asked her, What she thought that was? Then Christiana said, It is food or poison, I know not which. So they opened the matter to her, and she held up her hands and wondered.[x]*

EVE'S APPLE.

A SIGHT OF SIN IS AMAZING.

JACOB'S LADDER.

Then they had her to a place, and showed her Jacob's ladder. Now at that time there were

x Gen. iii. 1—6. Rom. vii. 24.

* It is not enough that the Holy Spirit convinces us of sin, at our first setting out on pilgrimage, and makes us sensible of our want of Christ; but he also keeps up a sight and sense of the evil of sin, in its original nature, as well as actual transgression. This often makes us wonder at sin, at ourselves, and at the love of Christ in becoming a sacrifice for our sins. And this also humbles us, makes us hate sin the more, and makes Christ, his atonement and righteousness, more and more precious in our eyes, and inestimable to our hearts.

some angels ascending upon it. So Christiana looked and looked to see the angels go up; so did the rest of the company.[y] Then they were going into another place, to show them something else: but James said to his mother, Pray bid them stay here a little longer, for this is a curious sight. So they turned again, and stood feeding their eyes with this so pleasant a prospect. After this, they had them into a place, where did hang up a golden anchor. So they bid Christiana take it down; for, said they, you shall have it with you, for 'tis of absolute necessity that you should, that you may lay hold of that within the veil, and stand stedfast in case you should meet with turbulent weather: so they were glad thereof.[z]* Then they took them, and had them to the mount upon which Abraham our father offered up Isaac his son, and showed them the altar, the wood, the fire, and the knife; for they remain to be seen to this very day. When they had seen it, they held up their hands, and blessed themselves, and said, Oh! what a man for love to his Master, and for denial to himself, was Abraham!

A SIGHT OF CHRIST IS TAKING.

GOLDEN ANCHOR.

OF ABRAHAM OFFERING UP ISAAC.

After they had showed them all these things, Prudence took them into a dining-room, where stood a pair of excellent virginals: so she played upon them, and turned what she had showed them into this excellent song, saying—

PRUDENCE'S VIRGINALS.

y Gen. xxviii. 12. z Joel iii. 16. Heb. vi. 19.

* This is the anchor of hope. This keeps the soul safe, and steady to Jesus, who is the alone object of our hope. Hope springs from faith. It is an expectation of the fulfilment of those things which are promised in the word of truth, by the God of all grace. Faith receives them, trusts in them, relies upon them, and hope waits for the full accomplishment and enjoyment of them.

Eve's apple we have showed you;
  Of that be you aware:
You have seen Jacob's ladder too,
  Upon which angels are.

An anchor you received have;
  But let not these suffice,
Until with Abra'm you have gave
  Your best a sacrifice.

Now about this time one knocked at the door; so the Porter opened, and, behold, Mr. Great-heart was there. But when he was come in, what joy was there: for it came now afresh again into their minds, how but a while ago he had slain old Grim Bloody-man the giant, and had delivered them from the lions.

MR. GREAT-HEART COMES AGAIN.

Then said Mr. Great-heart to Christiana and to Mercy, My Lord has sent each of you a bottle of wine, and also some parched corn, together with a couple of pomegranates; he has also sent the boys some figs and raisins; to refresh you in your way.*

HE BRINGS A TOKEN FROM HIS LORD WITH HIM.

Then they addressed themselves to their journey; and Prudence and Piety went along with them. When they came to the gate, Christiana asked the Porter, if any of late went by? He said, No, only one, some time since, who also told me, that of late there had been a great robbery committed on the King's highway, as you go: but, said he, the thieves are taken, and will

* O how reviving and refreshing are these love-tokens from our Lord! Great-heart never comes empty-handed. He always inspires with courage and confidence. Let us look more into, and more heartily believe, the word of truth and grace; and cry more to our precious Immanuel, and we shall have more of Great-heart's company. It is but sad travelling without him.

shortly be tried for their lives. Then Christiana and Mercy were afraid; but Matthew said, Mother, fear nothing, as long as Mr. Great-heart is to go with us, and to be our conductor.

CHRISTIANA TAKES HER LEAVE OF THE PORTER.

Then said Christiana to the Porter, Sir, I am much obliged to you for all the kindnesses that you have showed to me since I came hither; and also for that you have been so loving and kind to my children. I know not how to gratify your kindness: wherefore, pray, as a token of my respect to you, accept of this small mite. So she put a gold angel in his hand: and he made a low obeisance, and said,

THE PORTER'S BLESSING.

Let thy garments be always white, and let thy head want no ointment. Let Mercy live and not die, and let not her works be few. And to the boys he said, Do you fly youthful lusts, and follow after godliness with them that are grave and wise; so shall you put gladness into your mother's heart, and obtain praise of all that are sober-minded. So they thanked the Porter, and departed.

Now, I saw in my dream, that they went forward until they were come to the brow of the hill, where Piety, bethinking herself, cried out, Alas! I have forgot what I intended to bestow upon Christiana and her companions; I will go back and fetch it. So she ran and fetched it. While she was gone, Christiana thought she heard in a grove, a little way off on the right hand, a most curious melodious note, with words much like these:—

Through all my life thy favour is
So frankly show'd to me,
That in thy house for evermore
My dwelling-place shall be.

And listening still, she thought she heard another answer it, saying,—

For why? The Lord our God is good;
His mercy is for ever sure;
His truth at all times firmly stood,
And shall from age to age endure.

So Christiana asked Prudence who it was that made those curious notes. They are, said she, our country birds: they sing these notes but seldom, except it be at the spring when the flowers appear, and the sun shines warm, and then you may hear them all day long. I often, said she, go out to hear them; we also oft-times keep them tame in our house. They are very fine company for us when we are melancholy; also they make the woods, and groves, and solitary places, places desirous to be in.[a]*

PIETY BESTOWETH SOMETHING ON THEM AT PARTING.

By this time Piety was come again; so she said to Christiana, Look here, I have brought thee a scheme of all those things that thou hast seen at our house, upon which thou mayest look when thou findest thyself forgetful, and call those things again to remembrance, for thy edification and comfort.

Now they began to go down the hill into the Valley of Humiliation. It was a steep hill, and the way was slippery; but they were very careful; so they got down

a Song ii. 11, 12.

* You see, these joyful notes spring from a sense of nearness to the Lord, and a firm confidence in his divine truth and everlasting mercy. Oh, when the Sun of righteousness shines warmly on the soul, and gives it clearly to see these, it makes pilgrims sing most sweetly, and shout most joyfully indeed! These songs approach very nearly to the heavenly music in the realms of glory.

pretty well. When they were down in the valley,* Piety said to Christiana, This is the place where Christian your husband met with the foul fiend Apollyon, and where they had that dreadful fight that they had: I know you cannot but have heard thereof. But be of good courage; as long as you have here Mr. Great-heart to be your guide and conductor, we hope you will fare the better. So when these two had committed the pilgrims unto the conduct of their guide, he went forward, and they went after.

MR. GREAT-HEART AT THE VALLEY OF HUMILIATION.

Then said Mr. Great-heart, We need not be so afraid of this valley, for here is nothing to hurt us, unless we procure it to ourselves. It is true, Christian did here meet with Apollyon, with whom he also had a sore combat; but that fray was the fruit of those slips that he got in his going down the hill: for they that get slips there, must look for combats here. And hence it is that this valley has got so hard a name. For the common people, when they hear that some frightful thing has befallen such a one, in such a place, are of opinion that that place is haunted with some foul fiend, or evil spirit; when, alas! it is for

* After being thus highly favoured with divine consolations, in the views of faith, the comforts of hope, and the joys of love, see the next step these pilgrims are to take; it is down the hill Difficulty, into the Valley of Humility. What doth this place signify? A deep and abiding sight and sense of ourselves, of our ruined state, lost condition, and desperate circumstances, as fallen sinners. This is absolutely necessary, lest we should be exalted above measure, and think more highly of ourselves than we ought to think. For, the Lord can oft favour us with manifestations of his love, and the comforts of his Spirit; but through the corruption of our nature, we are prone to be lifted up and exalted in ourselves, and as it were to be intoxicated by them Hence we are exhorted to think soberly, Rom. xii. 3. This the valley of humility causes us to do.

the fruit of their own doing that such things do befall them there.*

This Valley of Humiliation is of itself as fruitful a place as any the crow flies over: and I am persuaded, if we could hit upon it, we might find somewhere hereabouts something that might give us an account why Christian was so hardly beset in this place.

WHY CHRISTIAN WAS SO BESET IN THE VALLEY OF HUMILIATION.

Then said James to his mother, Lo, yonder stands a pillar, and it looks as if something was written thereon; let us go and see what it is. So they went and found there written, "Let Christian's slips, before he came hither, and the battles that he met with in this place, be a warning to those that come after."

A PILLAR WITH AN INSCRIPTION ON IT.

Lo, said their guide, did not I tell you that there was something hereabouts that would give intimation of the reason why Christian was so hard beset in this place? Then, turning himself to Christiana, he said, No dis-

* What a great blessing is it to have great-heart in the valley of humility! How sad is it for pilgrims to procure evils to themselves by their sin and folly! How joyful is it to know, that "like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear him!" Psa. ciii. 13. Yet, if we slip, we shall be sure to smart. If we do not hold fast faith, hope, love, and obedience, Satan will attack, distress us in some sort, and prevail against us, and then we shall bring up an evil report of the safe and fruitful Valley of Humiliation. Are you in this valley! Do you see and feel nothing in yourself but what tends to lay you low, and keep you low? Beware of murmuring and complaining, though you continue long in it; yea, all your life through, for your Jesus is proving you and trying you, that he may show you what is in you, that you may see that you are wholly and solely indebted to his arm that brought salvation to you, and wrought every deliverance for you, that you may ever glory in him and of him, and give all glory to him, for his lovingkindness and tender mercy to such a miserable sinner as you are, and to such an unprofitable servant as you ever will be.

paragement to Christian, more than to any others whose hap and lot it was. For it is easier going up than down this hill, and that can be said but of few hills in all these parts of the world. But we will leave the good man, he is at rest, he also had a brave victory over his enemy: let Him grant that dwelleth above, that we fare not worse, when we come to be tried, than he.

THIS VALLEY A BRAVE PLACE.

But we will come again to this Valley of Humiliation. It is the best and most fruitful piece of ground in all these parts. It is fat ground; and, as you see, consisteth much in meadows; and if a man was to come here in the summer time, as we do now, if he knew not any thing before thereof, and if he also delighted himself in the sight of his eyes, he might see that which would be delightful to him. Behold how green this valley is; also how beautiful with lilies.[b] I have known many labouring men that have got good estates in this Valley of Humiliation; (for "God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble;"[c]) for indeed it is a very fruitful soil, and doth bring forth by handfuls. Some also have wished that the next way to their Father's house were here, that they might be troubled no more with either hills or mountains to go over: but the way is the way, and there is an end.*

MEN THRIVE IN THE VALLEY OF HUMILIATION.

Now as they were going along, and talking, they spied a boy feeding his father's sheep. The boy was in

b Song ii. 1. c James iv. 6. 1 Pet. v. 5.

* Though this Valley of Humiliation, or a clear sight and abiding sense of the sinfulness of our nature, and the wickedness of our hearts, may be very terrifying to pilgrims, after they have been favoured with peace and joy, and comforted by the views of faith and hope; yet it is a very safe place; and though at first entering into it, and seeing more of themselves than was ever before showed them, they may fear and tremble; yet, after some time continuing here, they are more recon-

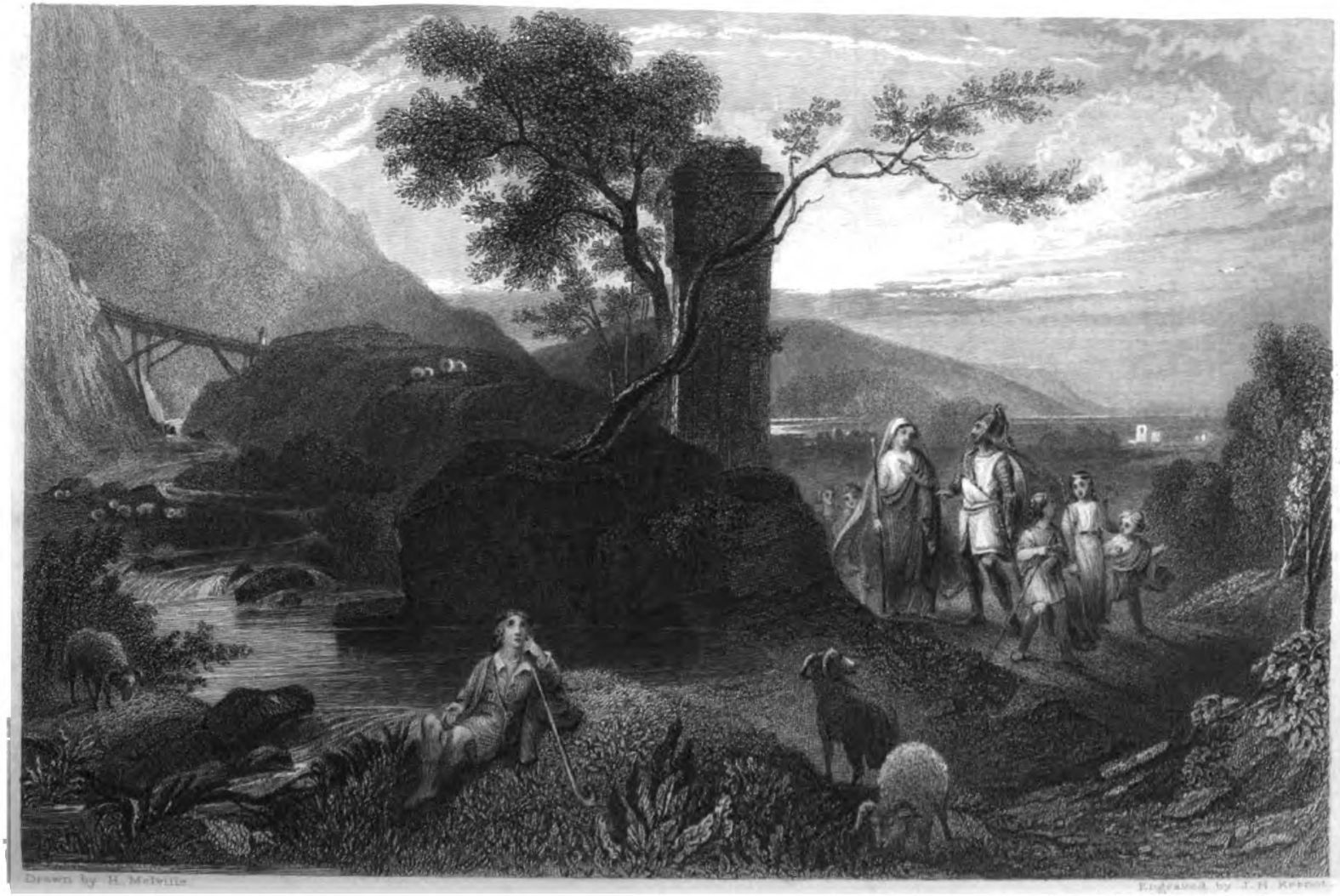
[illegible] to Christian, more than to any others whose [illegible] was. For it is easier going up than down [illegible] hill; and that can be said but of few hills in all these [illegible] of the world. But we will leave the good man, he [illegible] to rest, and a brave victory over his enemy: [illegible] ground that lieth above, that we fare not [illegible], when we come to be tried, than he.

[illegible] we will come again to this Valley of Humiliation. [illegible] It is the best and most fruitful piece of [illegible] ground in all these parts. It is fat [illegible] and, as you see, consisteth much in meadows; [illegible] man was to come here in the summer time, as [illegible] now, if he knew not any thing before thereof, [illegible] he also delighted himself in the sight of his eyes, [illegible] see that which would be delightful to him. [illegible] how green this valley is; also how beautiful [illegible] I have known many labouring men that [illegible] good estates in this Valley of Humiliation; [illegible] (for "God resisteth the proud, but giveth [illegible] grace to the humble;") for indeed it is [illegible] fruitful soil, and doth bring forth by handfuls. [illegible] have wished that the next way to their [illegible] house were here, that they might be troubled [illegible] with either hills or mountains to go over: but [illegible] the way, and there is an end.*

[illegible] as they were going along, and talking, they [illegible] feeding his father's sheep. The b[illegible]

[illegible] Song ii. 1. [illegible] James iv. 6. [illegible]

[illegible] this Valley of Humiliation, [illegible] ruddiness of our nature, and [illegible] humifying to pilgrims, after [illegible] and comforted by the wi[illegible] and though at first [illegible] than was ever before [illegible] after some time com[illegible]


Drawn by H. Melville
Engraved by J. H. Kernot

very mean clothes, but of a fresh and well-favoured countenance; and as he sat by himself, he sung. Hark, said Mr. Great-heart, to what the shepherd's boy saith: so they hearkened, and he said,

He that is down, needs fear no fall;
  He that is low, no pride:
He that is humble, ever shall
  Have God to be his guide.

I am content with what I have,
  Little be it or much;
And, Lord, contentment still I crave,
  Because thou savest such.

Fulness to such a burden is,
  That go on pilgrimage;
Here little, and hereafter bliss,
  Is best from age to age.[d]

Then said the guide, Do you hear him? I will dare to say, this boy lives a merrier life, and wears more of that herb called heart's-ease in his bosom, than he that is clad in silk and velvet. But we will proceed in our discourse.

CHRIST WHEN IN THE FLESH HAD HIS COUNTRY-HOUSE IN THE VALLEY OF HUMILIATION.

In this valley our Lord formerly had his country-house; he loved much to be here: he loved also to walk these meadows, for he found the air was pleasant. Besides, here a man shall be free from the noise, and from the

d Heb. xiii. 5.

ciled and contented; for here they find the visits of their Lord; and, in the depths of their humility, they behold the heights of his love, and the depths of his mercy, and cry out in joy, Where sin abounds, grace superabounds. Though sin abounds in me, the grace of Jesus superabounds towards me. Though I am emptied of all, yet I have an inexhaustible fulness in Jesus, to supply me with all I want and all I hope.

hurryings of this life: all states are full of noise and confusion, only the Valley of Humiliation is that empty and solitary place. Here a man shall not be so let and hindered in his contemplation, as in other places he is apt to be. This is a valley that nobody walks in, but those that love a pilgrim's life. And though Christian had the hard hap to meet here with Apollyon, and to enter with him in a brisk encounter: yet I must tell you, that in former times men have met with angels here, have found pearls here, and have in this place found the words of life.[e]*

Did I say our Lord had here in former days his country-house, and that he loved here to walk? I will add, in this place, and to the people that live and trace these grounds, he has left a yearly revenue to be faithfully paid them at certain seasons for their maintenance by the way, and for their further encouragement to go on in their pilgrimage.

Now, as they went on, Samuel said to Mr. Great-heart, Sir, I perceive that in this valley my father and Apollyon had their battle; but whereabout was the fight? for I perceive this valley is large.

e Hos. xii. 4, 5.

* Ever remember the word of our dear Lord, "It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master." If your Lord made it his chief delight to be in this Valley of Humiliation, learn from his example to prize this valley. Though you may meet with an Apollyon or a destroyer here; yet you are safe in the arms, and under the power, of your all-conquering Lord: for though the Lord is high, yet hath he respect unto the lowly. Therefore you may add, with David, "Though I walk in the midst of trouble, thou wilt revive me. Thou shalt stretch forth thine hand against the wrath of mine enemies, and thy right hand shall save me. The Lord will perfect that which concerneth me: thy mercy, O Lord, endureth for ever: forsake not the works of thine own hands," Psalm cxxxviii. 6, 7, 8. Such are the confidence, the reasoning, and the pleading of humble souls in the power of faith, which leads them quite out of themselves, to their Lord.

GREAT. Your father had the battle with Apollyon at a place yonder before us, in a narrow passage, just beyond Forgetful Green. And, indeed, that place is the most dangerous place in all these parts; for if at any time pilgrims meet with any brunt, it is when they forget what favours they have received, and how unworthy they are of them.* This is the place also where others have been hard put to it.—But more of the place when we are come to it; for I persuade myself, that to this day there remains either some sign of the battle, or some monument to testify that such a battle there was fought.

FORGETFUL GREEN.

Then said Mercy, I think I am as well in this valley as I have been any where else in all our journey: the place, methinks, suits with my spirit. I love to be in such places where there is no rattling with coaches, nor rumbling with wheels: methinks, here one may, without much molestation, be thinking what he is, whence he came, what he has done, and to what the King has called him: here one may

HUMILITY A SWEET GRACE.

* O pilgrims, attend to this! Pride and ingratitude go hand in hand. Study, ever study the favours of your Lord: how freely they are bestowed upon you; and how utterly unworthy you are of the least of them. Beware of Forgetful Green. Many, after going some way on pilgrimage, get into this green, and continue here; and talk of their own faithfulness to grace received, the merit of their works, and a second justification by their works, &c. Hence it is plain, that they are fallen asleep on this forgetful green, and talk incoherently as men do in their sleep: for they forget that they are still sinners, poor, needy, wretched sinners, and that they want the blood of Christ to cleanse them, the righteousness of Christ to justify them, and the Spirit of Christ to keep them humble, and to enable them to live by faith upon the fulness of Christ to sanctify them, as much as they did when they first set out as pilgrims. Oh, 'tis a most blessed thing to be kept mindful of what we are, and of the Lord's free grace and unmerited goodness to us!

think, and break at heart, and melt in one's spirit, until one's eyes become "as the fish-pools of Heshbon." They that go rightly through this "valley of Baca, make it a well; the rain," that God sends down from heaven upon them that are here, "also filleth the pools." This valley is that from whence also the King will give to his their vineyards;[f] and they that go through it shall sing as Christian did, for all he met with Apollyon.

AN EXPERIMENT UPON IT.

'Tis true, said their guide; I have gone through this valley many a time, and never was better than when here. I have also been a conductor to several pilgrims, and they have confessed the same. "To this man will I look, (saith the King,) even to him that is poor, and of a contrite spirit, and that trembleth at my word."*

THE PLACE WHERE CHRISTIAN AND THE FIEND DID FIGHT.

Now they were come to the place where the aforementioned battle was fought. Then said the guide to Christiana, her children, and Mercy, This is the place: on this ground Christian stood, and up there came Apollyon against him: and, look, did I not tell you, here is some of your husband's blood upon these stones to this day! Behold, also, how

f Song vii. 4. Psalm lxxxiv. 5—7. Hos. ii. 15.

* Trembles at God's word, so as not to dare to pick and chuse which doctrines he will receive, and which reject. I believe, says one, the doctrine of the atonement and salvation of Christ; but I set my face against the doctrine of his imputed righteousness, God's electing love, and the final perseverance of his saints. Do you so? No wonder, then, that we find an extract from the Pilgrim's Progress, with these precious truths left out. Would you dare act thus by God's holy commandments? Would you choose one of these, and reject another? Are they not all of equal authority? and are not all his holy doctrines also stamped with the same divine sanction? Where there is true faith in them, it will make a man tremble to act thus by God's word! The contrary conduct is no less than daring licentiousness.

here and there are yet to be seen upon the place some of the shivers of Apollyon's broken darts: see also, how they did beat the ground with their feet as they fought, to make good their places against each other; how also, with their by-blows, they did split the very stones in pieces: verily Christian did here play the man, and showed himself as stout as Hercules could, had he been here, even he himself. When Apollyon was beat, he made his retreat to the next valley, that is called the Valley of the Shadow of Death, unto which we shall come anon.*

SOME SIGNS OF THE BATTLE REMAINS.

Lo, yonder also stands a monument, on which is engraven this battle, and Christian's victory, to his fame throughout all ages. So because it stood just on the wayside before them, they stepped to it, and read the writing, which, word for word, was this:—

A MONUMENT OF CHRISTIAN'S VICTORY.

Hard by here was a battle fought,
  Most strange, and yet most true;
Christian and Apollyon sought
  Each other to subdue.

The man so bravely play'd the man,
  He made the fiend to fly;
Of which a monument I stand,
  The same to testify.†

When they had passed by this place, they came upon the borders of the Shadow of Death, and this valley was longer than the other, a place also most strangely

* If Satan be driven back from one attack, prepare for another. Bless God for your armour. Never put it off.

† Monuments of victory over Satan, are to God's glory, and are very animating and encouraging to those who come after. Proclaim, O Christians, your mercies with thankfulness, and your victories with shouts of humility, to the honour of the Captain of your salvation.

haunted with evil things, as many are able to testify; but these women and children went the better through it, because they had daylight, and because Mr. Great-heart was their conductor.

GROANINGS HEARD.

When they were entered upon this valley, they thought they heard a groaning, as of dying men—a very great groaning. They thought also that they did hear words of lamentation, spoken as of some in extreme torment. These things made the boys to quake, the women also looked pale and wan; but their guide bid them be of good comfort.

THE GROUND SHAKES.

So they went on a little further, and they thought that they felt the ground begin to shake under them, as if some hollow place was there; they heard also a kind of hissing, as of serpents, but nothing as yet appeared. Then said the boys, "Are we not yet at the end of this doleful place? But the guide also bid them be of good courage, and look well to their feet, lest haply, said he, you be taken in some snare.*

JAMES SICK WITH FEAR.

Now James began to be sick, but I think the cause thereof was fear; so his mother gave him some of that glass of spirits that had been given her at the Interpreter's house, and three of the pills that Mr. Skill had prepared, and the boy began to revive. Thus they went on, till they came to about the middle of the valley; and then Christiana said, Methinks I see

THE FIEND APPEARS.

something yonder upon the road before us; a thing of a shape such as I have not seen.

* None know the distress, anguish, and fear that haunt pilgrims in this valley, but those who have been in it. The hissings, revilings, and injections of that old serpent, with all his infernal malice, seem to be let loose upon pilgrims in this valley. Asaph seems to be walking in this valley, when he says, "As for me, my feet were almost gone: my steps had well-nigh slipped," Psalm lxxiii. 2.

Then said Joseph, Mother, what is it? An ugly thing, child, an ugly thing, said she. But, mother, what is it like? said he. 'Tis like I cannot tell what, said she. And now it is but a little way off. Then said she, It is nigh.

THE PILGRIMS ARE AFRAID.

Well, said Mr. Great-heart, let them that are most afraid, keep close to me. So the fiend came on, and the conductor met it; but when it was just come to him, it vanished to all their sights. Then remembered they what had been said some time ago, "Resist the devil, and he will flee from you."*

GREAT-HEART ENCOURAGES THEM.

They went therefore on, as being a little refreshed; but they had not gone far, before Mercy, looking behind her, saw, as she thought, something most like a lion, and it came a great padding pace after; and it had a hollow voice of roaring; and at every roar it gave, it made the valley echo, and all their hearts to ache, save the heart of him that was their guide. So it came up; and Mr. Great-heart went behind, and put the pilgrims all before him. The lion also came on apace, and Mr. Great-heart addressed himself to give him battle. But when he saw that it was determined that resistance should be made, he also drew back, and came no further.[g]*

A LION.

g 1 Pet. v. 9.

* Let Satan appear in what shape he will, we ought ever to put on great-heart and good courage. For the faith of what Jesus is to us, will inspire these. Let us ever look to Christ our conqueror, and ever resist Satan our adversary.

† Satan is often most dreaded at a distance, and courageously resisted when advanced nearer. This advice is ever needful: "Be sober; be vigilant." These pilgrims kept up their watch. Satan did not come upon them unawares: they heard his approach—were prepared for his attack—and, lo, Satan drew back.

Then they went on again, and their conductor did go before them, till they came at a place where was cast up a pit the whole breadth of the way; and, before they could be prepared to go over that, a great mist and a darkness fell upon them, so that they could not see. Then said the pilgrims, Alas! what now shall we do? But their guide made answer, Fear not, stand still, and see what an end will be put to this also. So they stayed there, because their path was marred. They then also thought that they did hear more apparently the noise and rushing of the enemies; the fire also and smoke of the pit was much easier to be discerned.*

A PIT AND DARKNESS.

CHRISTIANA NOW KNOWS WHAT HER HUSBAND FELT.

Then said Christiana to Mercy, Now I see what my poor husband went through; I have heard much of this place, but I never was here afore now. Poor man! he went here all along in the night; he had night almost quite through the way: also these fiends were busy about him, as if they would have torn him in pieces. Many have spoken of it, but none can tell what the Valley of the Shadow of Death should mean until they come in themselves. "The heart knoweth its own bitterness; and a stranger intermeddleth not with its joy." To be here is a fearful thing.†

GREAT. This is like doing business in great waters, or like going down into the deep; this is like being in the heart of the sea, and like going down to the bottoms

* Miserable, uncomfortable walking, with a pit before us, and darkness around, yea, within us—and hell seeming to move from beneath to meet him who has been left to the darkness of his nature, the terrors of a fiery law, the sense of guilt, and the fear of hell? Oh, what an unspeakable mercy, in such a distressing season, to have an almighty Saviour to look to, and call upon for safety and salvation! "For he will hear our cry, and save us," Psalm cxlv. 19.

† To hear of the soul-distresses of others, is one thing; to experience them ourselves, is very different.

of the mountains; now it seems as if the earth, with its bars, were about us for ever. "But let them that walk in darkness, and have no light, trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon their God."* For my part, as I have told you already, I have gone often through this valley; and have been much harder put to it than now I am; and yet you see I am alive. I would not boast, for that I am not my own saviour. But I trust we shall have a good deliverance. Come, let us pray for light to Him that can lighten our darkness, and that can rebuke, not only these, but all the Satans in hell.

THEY PRAY.

So they cried and prayed, and God sent light and deliverance; for there was now no let in their way, no, not there where but now they were stopt with a pit. Yet they were not got through the valley: so they went on still, and behold great stinks and loathsome smells, to the great annoyance of them.† Then said Mercy to Christiana, There is not such pleasant being here as at the gate, or at the Interpreter's, or at the house where we lay last.

ONE OF THE BOYS REPLY.

Oh, but, said one of the boys, it is not so bad to go through here, as it is to abide here always; and, for aught I know, one reason why we must go this way to the house prepared for us, is, that our home might be made the sweeter to us.‡

* This precious text, Isa. l. 10. has been as a sheet-anchor to my soul, under darkness and distress. I doubt not that it has been so to many others. Oh, there is an amazing depth of grace, and a wonderful height of merey, in it. Bless God for it. Study it deeply.

† In seasons of distress, the most irksome smells of our vile lusts, and filthy corruptions, greatly offend and distress real pilgrims.

‡ Precious thought! under the worst and most distressing circumstances, think of this. Their continuance is short. Their appointment, love. Their end shall be crowned with glory. Our dark and distressing nights make us prize our light and joyful days the more.

Well said, Samuel, quoth the guide; thou hast now spoke like a man.—Why, if ever I get out here again, said the boy, I think I shall prize light and good way better than ever I did in all my life. Then said the guide, We shall be out by and by.

So on they went, and Joseph said, Cannot we see to the end of this valley as yet? Then said the guide, Look to your feet, for we shall presently be among the snares. So they looked to their feet, and went on; but they were troubled much with the snares. Now, when they were come among the snares, they spied a man cast into the ditch on the left hand, with his flesh all rent and torn. Then said the guide, That is one Heedless, that was going this way; he has lain there a great while.* There was one Take-heed with him when he was taken and slain, but he escaped their hands. You cannot imagine how many are killed hereabouts, and yet men are so foolishly venturous, as to set out lightly on pilgrimage, and to come without a guide. Poor Christian, it was a wonder that he here escaped! But he was beloved of his God: also he had a good heart of his own, or else he could never have done it.

HEEDLESS IS SLAIN, AND TAKE-HEED PRESERVED.

Now they drew towards the end of this way; and just there, where Christian had seen the cave when he went by, out thence came forth Maul, a giant. This Maul did use to spoil young pilgrims with sophistry; and he called Great-heart by his name, and said unto him, How many times have you been forbidden to do these things? Then said Mr. Great-

MAUL, A GIANT, QUARRELS WITH GREAT-HEART.

* Heedless professor, be warned. The doctrines of grace were never intended to lull any asleep in carnal security. If they do so by you, it is a sure sign that what should have been for your health, proves an occasion of your falling.

heart, What things?—What things! quoth the giant; you know what things: but I will put an end to your trade.* But pray, said Mr. Great-heart, before we fall to it, let us understand wherefore we must fight. (Now the women and children stood trembling, and knew not what to do.) Quoth the giant, You rob the country, and rob it with the worst of thefts.—These are but generals, said Mr. Great-heart; come to particulars, man.

GOD'S MINISTERS COUNTED AS KIDNAPPERS.

Then said the giant, Thou practisest the craft of a kidnapper; thou gatherest up women and children, and carriest them into a strange country, to the weakening of my master's kingdom.—But now Great-heart replied, I am a servant of the God of heaven; my business is to persuade sinners to repentance. I am commanded to do my endeavours to turn men, women, and children "from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God;" and if this be indeed the ground of thy quarrel, let us fall to it as soon as thou wilt.†

THE GIANT AND MR. GREAT-HEART MUST FIGHT.

Then the giant came up, and Mr. Great-heart went to meet him: and, as he went, he drew his sword; but the giant had a club. So, without more ado, they fell to it, and at the first blow the giant struck Mr. Great-heart down upon one of his knees; with that the women and children cried out: so Mr. Great-heart, recovering himself, laid about him in full lusty manner, and gave

* How many such giants have we in the present day, who deceive and beguile precious souls into a false and fatal security, by their smooth lectures on morality, and their avowed opposition to the Gospel of Christ, and the way to his kingdom!

† To awaken souls, and lead them to Christ for life and salvation, is the blessed work of faithful ministers. In the spirit of love and meekness, they will contend for the faith, however they may be nicknamed and ill treated for their work.

the giant a wound in his arm: thus he fought for the space of an hour to that height of heat, that the breath came out of the giant's nostrils as the heat doth out of a boiling caldron.

Then they sat down to rest them, but Mr. Great-heart betook himself to prayer; also the women and children did nothing but sigh and cry all the time that the battle did last.*

When they had rested them, and taken breath, they both fell to it again; and Mr. Great-heart, with a blow, fetched the giant down to the ground. Nay, hold, let me recover, quoth he: so

THE GIANT STRUCK DOWN.

* The greatest heart cannot understand without prayer, nor conquer without the almighty power of God. The belief of this will excite prayer.

Mr. Great-heart fairly let him get up. So to it they went again, and the giant missed but little of all-to-breaking Mr. Great-heart's skull with his club.

Mr. Great-heart seeing that, runs to him in the full heat of his spirit, and pierceth him under the fifth rib; with that the giant began to faint, and could hold up his club no longer. Then Mr. Great-heart seconded his blow, and smit the head of the giant from his shoulders. Then the women and children rejoiced, and Mr. Great-heart also praised God for the deliverance he had wrought.*

HE IS SLAIN, AND HIS HEAD DISPOSED OF.

When this was done, they amongst them erected a pillar, and fastened the giant's head thereon, and wrote under it, in letters that passengers might read,

He that did wear this head was one
  That pilgrims did misuse;
He stopt their way, he spared none,
  But did them all abuse:
Until that I Great-heart arose,
  The pilgrims' guide to be;
Until that I did him oppose,
  That was their enemy.

Now I saw that they went on to the ascent that was a little way off cast up to be a prospect for pilgrims, (that was the place from whence Christian had the first sight of Faithful, his brother.) Wherefore here they sat down and rested; they also here did eat and drink, and make merry, for that they had gotten deliverance from this so dangerous an enemy. As they sat thus and did

* Many such a battle has been fought, and many such a victory has been obtained, since the Reformation, over the enemies of our most holy faith.

eat, Christiana asked the guide if he had caught no hurt in the battle? Then said Mr. Greatheart, No, save a little on my flesh; yet that also shall be so far from being to my detriment, that it is at present a proof of my love to my Master and you; and shall be a means, by grace, to increase my reward at last.

CHR. But was you not afraid, good sir, when you saw him come with his club?*

DISCOURSE OF THE FIGHT.

It is my duty, said he, to mistrust my own ability, that I may have reliance on Him that is stronger than all.[h]

CHR. But what did you think, when he fetched you down to the ground at the first blow?

Why, I thought, quoth he, that so my Master himself was served; and yet he it was that conquered at last.

MATTHEW HERE ADMIRES GOD'S GOODNESS.

MATT. When you all have thought what you please, I think God has been wonderfully good unto us, both in bringing us out of this valley, and in delivering us out of the hand of this enemy; for my part, I see no reason why we should distrust our God any more, since he has now, and in such a place as this, given us such testimony of his love.

OLD HONEST ASLEEP UNDER AN OAK.

Then they got up, and went forward. Now a little before them stood an oak: and under it, when they came to it, they found an old pilgrim fast asleep: they knew that he was a pilgrim by his clothes, and his staff, and his girdle.

h 2 Cor. iv.

* This club we may suppose to mean human power, under which many godly ministers in the last century suffered greatly. Blessed be God, we have nothing of this to fear in our day: therefore the more shame for those professors who desert Christ when they have nothing to fear but the breath of reproach, a nickname, or a by-word of contempt.

So the guide, Mr. Great-heart, awaked him; and the old gentleman, as he lifted up his eyes, cried out, What's the matter? Who are you? and what is your business here?*

ONE SAINT SOMETIMES TAKES ANOTHER FOR HIS ENEMY.

GREAT. Come, man, be not so hot, here are none but friends. Yet the old man gets up, and stands upon his guard, and will know of them what they are. Then said the guide, My name is Great-heart: I am the guide of these pilgrims, that are going to the Celestial country.

TALK BETWEEN GREAT-HEART AND HE.

Then said Mr. Honest, I cry you mercy. I feared that you had been of the company of those that some time ago did rob Little-faith of his money; but now I look better about me, I perceive you are honester people.

GREAT. Why, what would or could you have done, to have helped yourself, if indeed we had been of that company?

HON. Done! why, I would have fought as long as breath had been in me; and had I so done, I am sure you could never have given me the worst on't; for a Christian can never be overcome, unless he shall yield of himself.†

GREAT. Well said, father Honest, quoth the guide; for by this I know that thou art a cock of the right kind, for thou hast said the truth.

HON. And by this also, I know, that thou knowest

* A blessed sign of a watchful heart, ever alarmed at the fear of danger. Though he was found sleeping, yet he could say with the church, "My heart waketh," Song v. 2.

† Mind this. A Christian can never be overcome, unless he yields of himself. Then be most jealous over yourself, and most watchful against giving way to carnal reasonings, natural fears, and fleshly lusts. Look at yourself, and be humble. Look to God's word for courage.

what true pilgrimage is: for all others do think that we are the soonest overcome of any.

GREAT. Well, now we are so happily met, pray let me crave your name, and the name of the place you came from?

WHENCE MR. HONEST CAME.

HON. My name I cannot: but I came from the town of Stupidity; it lieth about four degrees beyond the city of Destruction.

GREAT. Oh! are you that countryman? Then I deem I have half a guess of you: your name is Old Honesty, is it not?

HON. So the old gentleman blushed, and said, Not honesty in the abstract:* but Honest is my name, and I wish that my nature may agree to what I am called.

But, sir, said the old gentleman, how could you guess that I am such a man, since I came from such a place?

STUPIFIED ONES ARE WORSE THAN THOSE MERELY CARNAL.

GREAT. I had heard of you before, by my Master; for he knows all things that are done on the earth: but I have often wondered that any should come from your place, for your town is worse than is the city of Destruction itself.

HON. Yes, we lie more off from the sun, and so are more cold and senseless; but was a man in a mountain of ice, yet if the Sun of Righteousness will arise upon

* By honesty in the abstract, he means to distinguish between himself and a perfect character. Every Christian is the subject of honesty or justice, uprightness, and sincerity; yet when we come to describe these virtues in the abstract, or what they really are in their strict purity and utmost perfection, where is the Christian but must wear the conscious blush, as Honesty did, under a sense of his imperfections? There is no perfect character, that God can delight in, but his own beloved Son in our nature. God is ever well pleased with him; and with us sinners, only as he views us in him, and hath made us accepted in him, to the praise of the glory of his own grace, Eph. i. 6. This is the view of true grace, and the glory of precious faith.

him, his frozen heart shall feel a thaw. And thus it hath been with me.*

GREAT. I believe it, father Honest, I believe it; for I know the thing is true.

Then the old gentleman saluted all the pilgrims with a holy kiss of charity; and asked them of their names, and how they had fared since they had set out on their pilgrimage.

OLD HONEST AND CHRISTIANA TALK.

Then said Christiana, My name, I suppose, you have heard of: good Christian was my husband, and these four are his children. But can you think how the old gentleman was taken, when she told him who she was! He skipped, he smiled, he blessed them with a thousand good wishes; saying, I have heard much of your husband, and of his travels and wars, which he underwent in his days. Be it spoken to your comfort, the name of your husband rings all over these parts of the world; his faith, his courage, his enduring, and his sincerity under all, have made his name famous.

OLD MR. HONEST'S BLESSING ON THEM.

Then he turned him to the boys, and asked of them their names, which they told him. And then said he unto them,—Matthew, be thou like Matthew the publican, not in vice but in virtue. Samuel, said he, be thou like Samuel the prophet, a man of faith and prayer. Joseph, said he, be thou like Joseph in Potiphar's house, chaste, and one that flies from temptation. And James, be thou like James the Just, and like James the brother of our

* This is the confession of an honest heart. It is never afraid of ascribing too much to the sovereignty of grace; nor of giving all the glory to the Sun of Righteousness, for shining upon, and melting down its hard, frozen soul. Here is no trimming between grace and nature: no halting between sovereign power and free-will.

Lord.[i] Then they told him of Mercy, and how she had left her town and her kindred to come along with Christiana and with her sons. At that the old honest man said, Mercy is thy name, by mercy shalt thou be sustained, and carried through all those difficulties that shall assault thee in thy way, till thou shalt come thither where thou shalt look the Fountain of mercy in the face with comfort. All this while the guide, Mr. Great-heart, was very well pleased, and smiled upon his companions.

HE BLESSETH MERCY.

Now, as they walked along together, the guide asked the old gentleman, if he did not know one Mr. Fearing, that came on pilgrimage out of his parts.

TALK OF ONE FEARING.

HON. Yes, very well, said he. He was a man that had the root of the matter in him; but he was one of the most troublesome pilgrims that ever I met with in all my days.*

GREAT. I perceive you knew him, for you have given a very right character of him.

HON. Knew him! I was a great companion of his; I was with him most an end; when he first began to think upon what would come upon us hereafter, I was with him.

GREAT. I was his guide from my Master's house to the gates of the Celestial City.

HON. Then you knew him to be a troublesome one.

GREAT. I did so; but I could very well bear it; for

i Matt. x. 3. Psalm xcix. 6. Gen. xxxix. Acts i. 13, 14.

* Fearing pilgrims, though perplexed in themselves, and troublesome to others, are yet to be cherished and encouraged, as they have the root of the matter in them—faith in Jesus, hope towards God, fear of offending him, and a desire to walk in his ways and please him. We must bear the burdens of such, and so fulfil the law of Christ, Gal. vi. 2.

men of my calling are oftentimes intrusted with the conduct of such as he was.

HON. Why, then, pray let us hear a little of him, and how he managed himself under your conduct.

GREAT. Why, he was always afraid that he should come short of whither he had a desire to go. Every thing frightened him that he heard any body speak of, if it had but the least appearance of opposition in it. I heard that he lay roaring at the Slough of Despond for above a month together; nor durst he, for all he saw several go over before him, venture, though they, many of them, offered to lend him their hands. He would not go back again neither. The Celestial City, he said he should die if he came not to it; and yet he was dejected at every difficulty, and stumbled at every straw that any body cast in his way. Well, after he had lain at the Slough of Despond a great while, as I have told you, one sunshiny morning, I don't know how, he ventured, and so got over; but when he was over, he would scarce believe it. He had, I think, a Slough of Despond in his mind, a slough that he carried every where with him, or else he could never have been as he was. So he came up to the gate, you know what I mean, that stands at the head of this way, and there also he stood a great while before he would venture to knock. When the gate was opened, he would give back, and give place to others, and say that he was not worthy. For, for all he got before some to the gate, yet many of them went in before him. There the poor man would stand shaking and shrinking; I dare say it would have pitied one's heart to have seen him. Nor would he go back again. At last he took the hammer that hanged on the gate,

MR. FEARING'S TROUBLESOME PILGRIMAGE.

HIS BEHAVIOUR AT THE SLOUGH OF DESPOND.

HIS BEHAVIOUR AT THE GATE.

in his hand, and gave a small rap or two; then one opened to him, but he shrunk back as before. He that opened, stepped out after him, and said, Thou trembling one, what wantest thou? With that he fell down to the ground. He that spoke to him wondered to see him so faint, so he said to him, Peace be to thee; up, for I have set open the door to thee; come in, for thou art blessed. With that he got up, and went in trembling; and when that he was in, he was ashamed to show his face. Well, after he had been entertained there a while, as you know how the manner is, he was bid go on his way, and also told the way he should take. So he went on till he came to our house; but as he behaved himself at the gate, so he did at my Master the Interpreter's door. He lay thereabout in the cold a good while, before he would adventure to call; yet he would not go back: and the nights were long and cold then. Nay, he had a note of necessity in his bosom to my Master to receive him, and grant him the comfort of his house, and also to allow him a stout and valiant conductor, because he was himself so chicken-hearted a man; and yet, for all that, he was afraid to call at the door. So he lay up and down thereabouts, till, poor man, he was almost starved; yea, so great was his dejection, that though he saw several others for knocking get in, yet he was afraid to venture. At last, I think, I looked out of the window, and perceiving a man to be up and down about the door, I went out to him, and asked what he was. But, poor man, the water stood in his eyes; so I perceived what he wanted. I went therefore in, and told it in the house, and we showed the thing to our Lord: so he sent me out again, to entreat him to come in; but I dare say, I had hard work to do it. At last he came

HIS BEHAVIOUR AT THE INTERPRETER'S DOOR.

in; and I will say that for my Lord, he carried it wonderful lovingly to him. There were but a few good bits at the table, but some of it was laid upon his trencher. Then he presented the note; and my Lord looked thereon, and said his desire should be granted. So when he had been there a good while, he seemed to get some heart, and to be a little more comfortable. For my Master, you must know, is one of very tender bowels, especially to them that are afraid; wherefore he carried it so towards him, as might tend most to his encouragement. Well, when he had had a sight of the things of the place, and was ready to take his journey to go to the city, my Lord, as he did to Christian before, gave him a bottle of spirits, and some comfortable things to eat. Thus we set forward, and I went before him; but the man was but of few words, only he would sigh aloud.

HOW HE WAS ENTERTAINED THERE.

HE IS A LITTLE ENCOURAGED AT THE INTERPRETER'S HOUSE.

When we were come to where the three fellows were hanged, he said that he doubted that that would be his end also. Only he seemed glad when he saw the Cross and the Sepulchre. There I confess he desired to stay a little to look; and he seemed for a while after to be a little cheery. When he came to the hill Difficulty, he made no stick at that, nor did he much fear the lions: for you must know that his trouble was not about such things as these; his fear was about his acceptance at last.*

HE WAS GREATLY AFRAID WHEN HE SAW THE GIBBET, BUT CHEERY WHEN HE SAW THE CROSS.

* See all through this character, what a conflict there was between fear, and the influence of grace. Though it may not be the most comfortable, yet the end of Mr. Fearing was very joyful. O what a godly jealousy displayed itself all through his life! Better this, than strong in vain-glorious confidence.

I got him in at the house Beautiful, I think before he was willing. Also when he was in, I brought him acquainted with the damsels of the place; but he was ashamed to make himself much in company. He desired much to be alone; yet he always loved good talk, and often would get behind the skreen to hear it. He also loved much to see ancient things, and to be pondering them in his mind. He told me afterward, that he loved to be in those two houses from which he came last, to wit, at the Gate, and that of the Interpreter, but that he durst not be so bold as to ask.

DUMPISH AT THE HOUSE BEAUTIFUL.

When we went also from the house Beautiful, down the hill, into the Valley of Humiliation, he went down as well as ever I saw a man in my life; for he cared not how mean he was, so he might be happy at last. Yea, I think there was a kind of sympathy betwixt that valley and him; for I never saw him better in all his pilgrimage than he was in that valley.*

PLEASANT IN THE VALLEY OF HUMILIATION.

Here he would lie down, embrace the ground, and kiss the very flowers that grew in this valley.[k] He would now be up every morning by break of day, tracing and walking to and fro in the valley.†

But when he was come to the entrance of the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I thought I should have lost my man: not for that he had any inclination to go back; that he always abhorred; but he was ready to die for fear. Oh, the hobgoblins will have me! the hobgoblins will have me!

MUCH PERPLEXED IN THE VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH.

k Lam. iii. 27—29.

* The valley of Humiliation suits well with fearing hearts.

† Fearing souls dwell much, early and late, in the Valley of Meditation.

cried he; and I could not beat him out on't. He made such a noise and such an outcry here, that had they but heard him, it was enough to encourage them to come and fall upon us.

But this I took very great notice of, that this valley was as quiet when we went through it, as ever I knew it before or since. I suppose those enemies here had now a special check from our Lord, and a command not to meddle until Mr. Fearing had passed over it.

It would be too tedious to tell you of all: we will therefore only mention a passage or two more. When he was come to Vanity Fair, I thought he would have fought with all the men in the fair. I feared there we should have been both knocked on the head, so hot was he against their fooleries.* Upon the Enchanted Ground he was very wakeful. But when he was come at the river where was no bridge, there again he was in a heavy case. Now, now, he said, he should be drowned for ever, and so never see that face with comfort, that he had come so many miles to behold.

HIS BEHAVIOUR AT VANITY FAIR.

And here also I took notice of what was very remarkable;—the water of that river was lower at this time than ever I saw it in all my life; so he went over at last, not much above wetshod.† When he was going up to the gate, I began to take leave of him, and to wish him a good reception above. So he said, I shall, I shall. Then parted we asunder, and I saw him no more.

HIS BOLDNESS AT LAST.

* Here is a glorious display of a fearing heart. Full of courage against evil, and fired with zeal for God's glory.

† O how gracious is our Lord! As thy day is, O pilgrim, so shall thy strength be. Even the river of death, though there be no bridge to go over, yet faith makes one: and the Lord of faith makes the waters low, to suit the state of his beloved ones.

HON. Then it seems he was well at last?

GREAT. Yes, yes, I never had doubt about him. He was a man of a choice spirit, only he was always kept very low, and that made his life so burdensome to himself, and so troublesome to others.[l] He was, above many, tender of sin: he was so afraid of doing injuries to others, that he often would deny himself of that which was lawful, because he would not offend.[m]*

HON. But what should be the reason that such a good man should be all his days so much in the dark?

REASONS WHY GOOD MEN ARE SO IN THE DARK.

GREAT. There are two sorts of reasons for it. One is, the wise God will have it so: some must pipe, and some must weep.[n] Now Mr. Fearing was one that played upon the bass. He and his fellows sound the sackbut, whose notes are more doleful than the notes of other music are; though indeed some say, the bass is the ground of music. And for my part, I care not at all for that profession that begins not in heaviness of mind. The first string that the musician usually touches, is the bass, when he intends to put all in tune. God also plays upon this string first, when he sets the soul in tune for himself. Only there was the imperfection of Mr. Fearing; he could play upon no other music but this, till towards his latter end.

I make bold to talk thus metaphorically for the ripening of the wits of young readers, and because in the book of the Revelation, the saved are compared to a company of musicians, that play upon their trumpets and harps, and sing their songs before the throne.[o]

l Psalm lxxxviii. m Rom. xiv. 21. 1 Cor. viii. 13. n Matt. xi. 16, 17. o Rev. vii. xiv. 2, 3.

* Oh, this is a blessed spirit! Ye who are strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might, study to excel herein.

HON. He was a very zealous man, as one may see by what relation which you have given of him. Difficulties, lions, or Vanity Fair, he feared not at all; it was only sin, death, and hell, that were to him a terror, because he had some doubts about his interest in that celestial country.*

A CLOSE ABOUT HIM.

GREAT. You say right; those were the things that were his troublers: and they, as you have well observed, arose from the weakness of his mind thereabout, not from weakness of spirit as to the practical part of a pilgrim's life. I dare believe that, as the proverb is, he could have bit a firebrand, had it stood in his way; but the things with which he was oppressed, no man ever yet could shake off with ease.

CHRISTIANA'S SENTENCE.

CHR. Then said Christiana, This relation of Mr. Fearing has done me good: I thought nobody had been like me. But I see there was some semblance betwixt this good man and me: only we differed in two things. His troubles were so great, that they broke out; but mine I kept within. His also lay so hard upon him, they made him that he could not knock at the houses provided for entertainment; but my trouble was always such as made me knock the louder.

MERCY'S SENTENCE.

MER. If I might also speak my heart, I must say that something of him has also dwelt in me. For I have ever been more afraid of the lake, and the loss of a place in paradise, than I have been of the

* Here is a very striking lesson for professors. Talk not of your great knowledge, rich experience, comfortable frames and joyful feelings; all are vain and delusive, if the gospel has not a holy influence upon your practice. On the other hand, be not dejected, if you are not favoured with these; for if a holy fear of God, and a godly jealousy over yourselves, possess your heart, verily you are a partaker of the grace of Christ.

loss of other things. Oh, thought I, may I have the happiness to have a habitation there! 'Tis enough, though I part with all the world to win it.

MATTHEW'S SENTENCE.

MATT. Then said Matthew, Fear was one thing that made me think that I was far from having that within me that accompanies salvation. But if it was so with such a good man as he, why may it not also go well with me?

JAMES'S SENTENCE.

JAMES. No fears, no grace, said James. Though there is not always grace where there is the fear of hell, yet to be sure there is no grace where there is no fear of God.

GREAT. Well said, James, thou hast hit the mark. For the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom; and to be sure they that want the beginning have neither middle nor end. But we will here conclude our discourse of Mr. Fearing, after we have sent after him this farewell.

Well, Master Fearing, thou didst fear
  Thy God, and wast afraid
Of doing any thing, while here,
  That would have thee betray'd.
And didst thou fear the lake and pit?
  Would others do so too!
For, as for them that want thy wit,
  They do themselves undo.

OF MR. SELF-WILL.

Now, I saw that they still went on in their talk. For after Mr. Great-heart had made an end with Mr. Fearing, Mr. Honest began to tell them of another, but his name was Mr. Self-will. He pretended himself to be a pilgrim, said Mr. Honest; but I persuade myself he never came in at the gate that stands at the head of the way.

GREAT. Had you ever any talk with him about it?

HON. Yes, more than once or twice; but he would always be like himself, self-willed. He neither cared for man, nor argument, nor yet example; what his mind prompted him to, that he would do, and nothing else could he be got to do.*

OLD HONEST HAD TALKED WITH HIM.

GREAT. Pray what principles did he hold? for I suppose you can tell.

HON. He held, that a man might follow the vices as well as the virtues of the pilgrims; and that if he did both, he should be certainly saved.

SELF-WILL'S OPINIONS.

GREAT. How? If he had said, it is possible for the best to be guilty of the vices, as well as partake of the virtues of pilgrims, he could not much have been blamed; for indeed we are exempted from no vice absolutely, but on condition that we watch and strive.† But this I perceive is not the thing; but if I understand you right, your meaning is, that he was of opinion, that it was allowable so to be.

HON. Ay, ay, so I mean, and so he believed and practised.

GREAT. But what grounds had he for his so saying?

HON. Why, he said he had the scripture for his warrant.

GREAT. Pr'ythee, Mr. Honest, present us with a few particulars.

HON. So I will. He said, to have to do with other men's wives had been practised by David, God's beloved;

* Self-will ever accompanies ignorance of ourselves, and of the truth; and is generally attended with licentious principles and practices.

† This is a solid, scriptural definition: pray mind it. Here conditions may safely be admitted; and happy is the Christian who keeps closest to these conditions, in order to enjoy peace of conscience, and joy of heart in Christ.

and therefore he could do it. He said, to have more women than one was a thing that Solomon practised, and therefore he could do it. He said, that Sarah and the godly midwives of Egypt lied, and so did saved Rahab, and therefore he could do it. He said, that the disciples went at the bidding of their Master, and took away the owner's ass, and therefore he could do so too. He said, that Jacob got the inheritance of his father in a way of guile and dissimulation, and therefore he could do so too.*

GREAT. High base indeed! And are you sure he was of this opinion?

HON. I have heard him plead for it, bring scripture for it, bring arguments for it, &c.

GREAT. An opinion that is not fit to be with any allowance in the world!

HON. You must understand me rightly: he did not say that any man might do this; but that they who had the virtues of those that did such things, might also do the same.

GREAT. But what more false than such a conclusion? For this is as much as to say, that because good men heretofore have sinned of infirmity, therefore he had allowance to do it of a presumptuous mind: or that if, because a child, by the blast of the wind, or for that it stumbled at a stone, fell down and defiled itself in the mire, therefore he might wilfully lie down and wallow like a boar therein. Who could have thought that any one could so far have been blinded by the power of lust?

* That heart, which is under the teaching and influence of the grace of God, will detest such horrid notions, and cry out against them, God forbid that ever I should listen one moment to such diabolical sentiments! for they are hatched in hell, and propagated on earth by the father of lies.

But what is written must be true;—they "stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto they also were appointed."[p] His supposing that such may have the godly men's virtues, who addict themselves to their vices, is also a delusion as strong as the other. 'Tis just as if the dog should say, I have, or may have, the qualities of the child, because I lick up its stinking excrements. To eat up the sin of God's people,[q] is no sign of one that is possessed with their virtues. Nor can I believe that one that is of this opinion, can at present have faith or love in him. But I know you have made some strong objections against him; pr'ythee what can he say for himself?

HON. Why, he says, to do this by way of opinion seems abundantly more honest than to do it, and yet hold contrary to it in opinion.

GREAT. A very wicked answer. For, though to let loose the bridle to lusts, while our opinions are against such things, is bad; yet to sin, and plead a toleration so to do, is worse: the one stumbles beholders accidentally, the other leads them into the snare.

HON. There are many of this man's mind, that have not this man's mouth; and that makes going on pilgrimage of so little esteem as it is.

GREAT. You have said the truth, and it is to be lamented: but he that feareth the King of paradise shall come out of them all.

CHR. There are strange opinions in the world. I know one that said, it was time enough to repent when we come to die.

GREAT. Such are not over-wise; that man would have been loth, might he have had a week to run twenty miles in his life, to have deferred his journey to the last hour of that week.

p 1 Pet. ii. 8. q Hos. iv. 8.

HON. You say right; and yet the generality of them who count themselves pilgrims do indeed do thus. I am, as you see, an old man, and have been a traveller in this road many a day; and I have taken notice of many things.*

I have seen some that have set out as if they would drive all the world afore them, who yet have in a few days died as they in the wilderness, and so never got sight of the promised land.—I have seen some that have promised nothing at first setting out to be pilgrims, and that one would have thought could not have lived a day, that have yet proved very good pilgrims.—I have seen some who have run hastily forward, that again have, after a little time, run just as fast back again.—I have seen some who have spoken very well of a pilgrim's life at first, that after a while have spoken as much against it.—I have heard some, when they first set out for paradise, say positively there is such a place, who, when they have been almost there, have come back again, and said there is none. I have heard some vaunt what they would do in case they should be opposed, that have, even at a false alarm, fled faith, the pilgrim's way, and all.

FRESH NEWS OF TROUBLE.

Now, as they were thus on their way, there came one running to meet them, and said, Gentlemen, and you of the weaker sort, if you love life, shift for yourselves, for the robbers are before you.

GREAT-HEART'S RESOLUTION.

GREAT. Then said Mr. Great-heart, They be the three that set upon Little-Faith heretofore. Well, said he, we are ready for them: so

* Pray attentively mind, and deeply consider, the six following observations: they are just; they are daily confirmed to our observation in the different conduct of professors. Study, and pray to improve them. to your soul's profit.

they went on their way. Now they looked at every turning when they should have met with the villains; but whether they heard of Mr. Great-heart, or whether they had some other game, they came not up to the pilgrims.*

CHRISTIANA WISHES FOR AN INN.

Christiana then wished for an inn to refresh herself and her children, because they were weary. Then said Mr. Honest, There is one a little before us, where a very honourable disciple, one Gaius, dwells.[r] So they all concluded to turn in thither; and the rather, because the old gentleman gave him so good a report. When they came to the door, they went in, not knocking, for folks use not to knock at the door of an inn. Then they called for the master of the house, and he came to them. So they asked if they might lie there that night.

GAIUS ENTERTAINS THEM, AND HOW.

GAIUS. Yes, gentlemen, if you be true men, for my house is for none but pilgrims. Then were Christiana, Mercy, and the boys the more glad, for that the innkeeper was a lover of pilgrims. So they called for rooms, and he showed them one for Christiana and her children and Mercy, and another for Mr. Great-heart and the old gentleman.

GREAT. Then said Mr. Great-heart, Good Gaius, what hast thou for supper? for these pilgrims have come far to-day, and are weary.

GAIUS. It is late, said Gaius, so we cannot conveniently go out to seek food; but such as we have you shall be welcome to, if that will content.

GREAT. We will be content with what thou hast in

r Rom. xvi. 23.

* It is a blessed thing to take every alarm, and to be on our guard. Hereby many dangers are avoided, and many evils prevented. "Watch," is the word of the Captain of our salvation.

the house; for as much as I have proved thee, thou art never destitute of that which is convenient.

GAIUS'S COOK.

Then he went down and spake to the cook, whose name was Taste-that-which-is-good, to get ready supper for so many pilgrims. This done, he comes up again, saying, Come, my good friends, you are welcome to me, and I am glad that I have a house to entertain you in; and while supper is making ready, if you please, let us entertain one another with some good discourse: so they all said, Content.*

HE COMES UP AGAIN.

TALK BETWEEN GAIUS AND HIS GUESTS.

GAIUS. Then said Gaius, Whose wife is this aged matron? and whose daughter is this young damsel?

GREAT. This woman is the wife of one Christian, a pilgrim of former times; and these are his four children The maid is one of her acquaintance, one that she hath persuaded to come with her on pilgrimage. The boys take all after their father, and covet to tread in his steps; yea, if they do but see any place where the old pilgrim hath lain, or any print of his foot, it ministereth joy to their hearts, and they covet to lie or tread in the same.

OF CHRISTIAN'S ANCESTORS.

GAIUS. Then said Gaius, Is this Christian's wife, and are these Christian's children? I knew your husband's father, yea, also his father's father. Many have been good of this stock; their ancestors dwelt first at Antioch.[s] Christian's progenitors (I suppose you have heard your husband talk of them) were very worthy men. They have, above any that I know, showed themselves men of great virtue and courage, for

s Acts xi. 26.

* How does this reprove many professors of this day, who can meet together, and chat about every trifle, but have not one word to speak for precious Christ, his glorious truths, and holy ways!

the Lord of the pilgrims, his ways, and them that loved him. I have heard of many of your husband's relations that have stood all trials for the sake of the truth. Stephen, that was one of the first of the family from whence your husband sprang, was knocked on the head with stones.[t] James, another of this generation, was slain with the edge of the sword.[u] To say nothing of Paul and Peter, men anciently of the family from whence your husband came, there was Ignatius, who was cast to the lions; Romanus, whose flesh was cut by pieces from his bones; and Polycarp, that played the man in the fire. There was he that was hanged up in a basket in the sun for the wasps to eat; and he whom they put into a sack, and cast into the sea to be drowned. It would be impossible utterly to count up all of that family that have suffered injuries and death for the love of a pilgrim's life. Nor can I but be glad to see that thy husband has left behind him four such boys as these. I hope they will bear up their father's name, and tread in their father's steps, and come to their father's end.

GREAT. Indeed, sir, they are likely lads, they seem to choose heartily their father's ways.

GAIUS. That is it that I said. Wherefore Christian's family is like still to spread abroad upon the face of the ground, and yet to be numerous upon the face of the earth; let Christiana look out some damsels for her sons, to whom they may be betrothed, &c. that the name of their father, and the house of his progenitors, may never be forgotten in the world.

ADVICE TO CHRISTIANA ABOUT HER BOYS.

HON. 'Tis pity his family should fall and be extinct.

GAIUS. Fall it cannot, but be diminished it may; but let Christiana take my advice, and that is the way to

t Acts vii. 59, 60. u Acts xii. 2.

uphold it. And, Christiana, said this inn-keeper, I am glad to see thee and thy friend Mercy together here, a lovely couple. And if I may advise, take Mercy into a nearer relation to thee: if she will, let her be given to Matthew thy eldest son. It is the way to preserve a posterity in the earth. So this match was concluded, and in process of time they were married: but more of that hereafter.

A MATCH BETWEEN MERCY AND MATTHEW.

Gaius also proceeded, and said, I will now speak on the behalf of women, to take away their reproach. For as death and the curse came into the world by a woman, so also did life and health. God sent forth his Son, made of a woman.[v] Yea, to show how much they that came after did abhor the act of the mother, this sex in the Old Testament coveted children, if happily this or that woman might be the mother of the Saviour of the world. I will say again, that when the Saviour was come, women rejoiced in him, before either man or angel.[w] I read not that ever any man did give unto Christ so much as one groat; but the women followed him, and ministered to him of their substance. 'Twas a woman that washed his feet with tears, and a woman that anointed his body to the burial. They were women that wept when he was going to the cross; and women that followed him from the cross, and that sat by his sepulchre when he was buried. They were women that were first with him at his resurrection-morn; and women that brought tidings first to his disciples that he was risen from the dead.[x] Women therefore are highly favoured, and show by these things, that they are sharers with us in the grace of life.

WHY WOMEN OF OLD SO MUCH DESIRED CHILDREN.

v Gen. iii. Gal. iv. 4. w Luke ii.
x Luke vii. 37—50. viii. 2, 3. xxiii. 27. xxiv. 22, 23. John ii. 3. xi. 2. Matt. xxvii. 55—61.

Now the cook sent up to signify that supper was almost ready, and sent one to lay the cloth, and the trenchers, and to set the salt and bread in order.

SUPPER READY.

Then said Matthew, The sight of this cloth, and of this forerunner of the supper, begetteth in me a greater appetite to my food than I had before.

GAIUS. So let all ministering doctrines to thee in this life beget in thee a greater desire to sit at the supper of the great King in his kingdom; for all preaching, books, and ordinances here, are but as the laying of the trenchers, and the setting of salt upon the board, when compared with the feast that our Lord will make for us when we come to his house.

WHAT IS TO BE GATHERED FROM LAYING OF THE BREAD WITH THE CLOTH AND TRENCHERS.

So supper came up. And first a heave-shoulder and a wave-breast were set on the table before them; to show that they must begin their meal with prayer and praise to God.[y] The heave-shoulder David lifted up his heart to God with; and with the wave-breast, where his heart lay, he used to lean upon his harp when he played. These two dishes were very fresh and good, and they all ate heartily thereof.

The next they brought up was a bottle of wine, as red as blood. So Gaius said to them, Drink freely; this is the true juice of the vine, that makes glad the heart of God and man. So they drank and were merry.[z]

The next was a dish of milk well crumbed: Gaius said, Let the boys have that, that they may grow thereby.[a]

A DISH OF MILK.

y Lev. vii. 32—34. x. 14, 15. Psalm xxv. 1. Heb. xiii. 15.
z Deut. xxxii. 14. Judg. ix. 13. John xv. 5. a 1 Pet. ii. 1, 2.

Then they brought up in course a dish of butter and honey. Then said Gaius, Eat freely of this, for this is good to cheer up and strengthen your judgments and understandings. This was our Lord's dish when he was a child: "Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know how to refuse the evil, and choose the good."[b]

OF HONEY AND BUTTER.

Then they brought them up a dish of apples, and they were very good-tasted fruit. Then said Matthew, May we eat apples, since they were such by and with which the serpent beguiled our first mother?

A DISH OF APPLES.

Then said Gaius:

Apples were they with which we were beguiled,
Yet sin, not apples, hath our souls defiled:
Apples forbid, if ate, corrupt the blood;
To eat such, when commanded, does us good:
Drink of his flagons then, thou church, his dove,
And eat his apples, who art sick of love.

Then said Matthew, I made the scruple, because I a while since was sick with the eating of fruit.

GAIUS. Forbidden fruit will make you sick; but not what our Lord has tolerated.

While they were thus talking, they were presented with another dish, and it was a dish of nuts.[c] Then said some at the table, Nuts spoil tender teeth, especially the teeth of children: which when Gaius heard, he said:—

A DISH OF NUTS.

Hard texts are nuts, (I will not call them cheaters,)
Whose shells do keep their kernels from the eaters;
Open then the shells, and you shall have the meat;
They here are brought for you to crack and eat.

b Isa. vii. 15. c Song vi. 11.

Then were they very merry, and sat at the table a long time, talking of many things. Then said the old gentleman, My good landlord, while we are cracking your nuts, if you please, do you open this riddle :*

A RIDDLE PUT FORTH BY OLD HONEST.

A man there was, though some did count him mad,
The more he cast away, the more he had.

Then they all gave good heed, wondering what good Gaius would say; so he sat still a while, and then thus replied:

GAIUS OPENS IT

He who bestows his goods upon the poor,
Shall have as much again, and ten times more.

JOSEPH WONDERS.

Then said Joseph, I dare say, sir, I did not think you could have found it out.

Oh! said Gaius, I have been trained up in this way a great while: nothing teaches like experience. I have learned of my Lord to be kind, and have found by experience that I have gained thereby. There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty. There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches.[d]

Then Samuel whispered to Christiana, his mother, and said, Mother, this is a very good man's house; let us stay here a good while, and let my brother Matthew be married here to Mercy, before we go any further.†

d Prov. xi. 24. xiii. 7.

* Observe here, the feast of pilgrims was attended with mirth. Christians may, they ought, yea, they have the greatest reason, to be merry; but then it ought to be spiritual mirth, which springs from spiritual views and spiritual conversation. Let our speech be thus seasoned, and our feasts thus tempered, and we shall find more joy and gladness of heart in the Lord.

† Here is a genuine discovery of a gracious heart; when it is delighted with spiritual company and conversation, and longs for its continuance. Is it so with you?

The which Gaius, the host, over-hearing, said, With a very good will, my child.

MATTHEW AND MERCY MARRIED.

So they stayed there more than a month, and Mercy was given to Matthew to wife. While they stayed here, Mercy, as her custom was, would be making coats and garments to give to the poor, by which she brought a very good report upon pilgrims.

THE BOYS GO TO BED, THE REST SIT UP.

But to return again to our story. After supper, the lads desired a bed, for they were weary with travelling. Then Gaius called, to show them their chamber; but said Mercy, I will have them to bed. So she had them to bed—and they slept well; but the rest sat up all night; for Gaius and they were such suitable company, that they could not tell how to part. Then after much talk of their Lord, themselves, and their journey, old Mr. Honest, he that put forth the riddle to Gaius, began to nod. Then said Great-heart, What, sir, you begin to be drowsy; come, rub up now, here is a riddle for you.* Then said Mr. Honest, Let us hear it. Then said Mr. Great-heart:

OLD HONEST NODS.

A RIDDLE.

He that would kill, must first be overcome:
Who live abroad would, first must die at home.

Ha! said Mr. Honest, it is a hard one; hard to expound, and harder to practise. But, come, landlord, said he, I will, if you please, leave my part to you; do you expound it, and I will hear what you say.

No, said Gaius, it was put to you, and 'tis expected you should answer it. Then said the old gentleman:

* Mind this: When one pilgrim observes that a brother is inclined to be drowsy, it is his duty, and should be his practice, to endeavour to awaken, quicken, enliven, and stir up such by spiritual hints. O that this was more practised! Many blessings would be consequent upon it.

He first by grace must conquer'd be,
That sin would mortify:
Who that he lives would convince me,
Unto himself must die.*

THE RIDDLE OPENED.

It is right, said Gaius; good doctrine and experience teach this. For, first, until grace displays itself, and overcomes the soul with its glory, it is altogether without heart to oppose sin. Besides, if sin is Satan's cords, by which the soul lies bound, how should it make resistance before it is loosed from that infirmity? Secondly, Nor will any that knows either reason or grace, believe that such a man can be a living monument of grace, that is a slave to his own corruptions. And now it comes into my mind, I will tell you a story worth the hearing. There were two men that went on pilgrimage; the one began when he was young, the other when he was old. The young man had strong corruptions to grapple with; the old man's were weak with the decays of nature. The young man trod his steps as even as did the old one, and was every way as light as he. Who now, or which of them, had their graces shining clearest, since both seemed to be alike?

A QUESTION WORTH THE MINDING.

HON. The young man's, doubtless. For that which heads it against the greatest opposition, gives best demonstration that it is strongest; especially when it also holdeth pace with that which meets not with half so much, as, to be sure, old age does not. Besides, I have observed that old men have

A COMPARISON.

A MISTAKE.

* O this dying to self, to self-righteous pride, vain confidence, the power of free-will, self-love, and self-complacency, is hard work to the old man; yea, it is both impracticable and impossible to him. It is only grace that can conquer and subdue him. And where grace reigns, this work is carried on day by day. For the old man, of sin and self-righteousness, still lives in us.

blessed themselves with this mistake; namely, taking the decays of nature for a gracious conquest over corruptions, and so have been apt to beguile themselves. Indeed, old men that are gracious are best able to give advice to them that are young, because they have seen most of the emptiness of things: but yet, for an old and a young man to set out both together, the young one has the advantage of the fairest discovery of a work of grace within him, though the old man's corruptions are naturally the weakest. Thus they sat talking till break of day.

Now, when the family were up, Christiana bid her son James that he should read a chapter; so he read the 53d of Isaiah. When he had done, Mr. Honest asked why it was said that the Saviour is said to "*come out of a dry ground*," and also, that "*he had no form nor comeliness in him.*"

ANOTHER QUESTION.

GREAT. Then said Mr. Great-heart, To the first I answer, Because the church of the Jews, of which Christ came, had then lost almost all the sap and spirit of religion. To the second I say, The words are spoken in the person of unbelievers, who, because they want the eye that can see into our Prince's heart, therefore they judge of him by the meanness of his outside, just like those that know not that precious stones are covered over with a homely crust, who, when they have found one, because they know not what they have found, cast it away again, as men do a common stone.

Well, said Gaius, now you are here, and since, as I know, Mr. Great-heart is good at his weapons, if you please, after we have refreshed ourselves, we will walk into the fields, to see if we can do any good. About a mile from hence there is one Slay-good, a giant, that does much annoy the King's highway in these parts;

and I know whereabout his haunt is. He is master of a number of thieves: 'twould be well if we could clear these parts of him.* So they consented and went; Mr. Great-heart with his sword, helmet, and shield; and the rest with spears and staves.

GIANT SLAY-GOOD FOUND WITH ONE FEEBLE-MIND IN HIS HAND.

When they came to the place where he was, they found him with one Feeble-mind in his hand, whom his servants had brought unto him, having taken him in the way. Now the giant was rifling him, with a purpose after that to pick his bones; for he was of the nature of flesh-eaters.

Well, so soon as he saw Mr. Great-heart and his friends at the mouth of his cave, with their weapons, he demanded what they wanted.

GREAT. We want thee; for we are come to revenge the quarrels of the many that thou hast slain of the pilgrims, when thou hast dragged them out of the King's highway: wherefore come out of thy cave. So he armed himself and came out, and to battle they went, and fought for above an hour, and then stood still to take wind.

Then said the giant, Why are you here on my ground?

GREAT. To revenge the blood of pilgrims, as I told thee before. So they went to it again, and the giant made Mr. Great-heart give back: but he came up again, and in the greatness of his mind he let fly with such stoutness at the giant's head and sides, that he made him let his weapon fall out of his hand. So he smote him, and slew him, and cut

THE GIANT ASSAULTED AND SLAIN.

* After feeding, pilgrims are to prepare for fighting. They are not to eat in order to pamper their lusts, but to strengthen their souls, that they may be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might, to fight and conquer every enemy.

off his head, and brought it away to the inn. He also took Feeble-mind the pilgrim, and brought him with him to his lodgings. When they were come home, they showed his head to the family, and set it up, as they had done others before, for a terror to those that should attempt to do as he hereafter.

Then they asked Mr. Feeble-mind how he fell into his hands.

FEEBLE. Then said the poor man, I am a sickly man, as you see: and because death did usually once a day knock at my door, I thought I should never be well at home; so I betook myself to a pilgrim's life, and have travelled hither from the town of Uncertain, where I and my father were born. I am a man of no strength at all of body, nor yet of mind, but would, if I could, though I can but crawl, spend my life in the pilgrim's way.* When I came at the gate that is at the head of the way, the Lord of that place did entertain me freely; neither objected he against my weakly looks, nor against my feeble mind; but gave me such things as were necessary for my journey, and bid me hope to the end. When I came to the house of the Interpreter, I received much kindness there: and because the hill of Difficulty was judged too hard for me, I was carried up that by one of his servants. Indeed, I have found much relief from pilgrims, though none was willing to go so softly as I am forced to do: yet still, as they came on, they bid me be of good cheer, and said, that it was the will of their Lord that comfort

HOW FEEBLE-MIND CAME TO BE A PILGRIM.

* All pilgrims are not alike vigorous, strong, and lively. Some are weak—creep and crawl on, in the ways of the Lord. No matter; if there be but a pilgrim's heart, all shall be well at last: for Omnipotence itself is for us; and then we may boldly ask, Who shall be against us?

should be given to the feeble-minded,[e] and so went on their own pace. When I was come to Assault-lane, then this giant met with me, and bid me prepare for an encounter. But, alas! feeble one that I was, I had more need of a cordial; so he came up and took me. I conceited he should not kill me. Also when he got me into his den, since I went not with him willingly, I believed I should come out alive again; for I MARK THIS! have heard, that not any pilgrim that is taken captive by violent hands, if he keeps heart-whole towards his Master, is, by the laws of providence, to die by the hand of the enemy. Robbed I looked to be, and robbed to be sure I am; but I am, as you see, escaped with life, for the which I thank my King as the author, and you as the means. Other brunts I also look for; but this I have resolved on, to wit, to run when I can, to MARK THIS! go when I cannot run, and to creep when I cannot go. As to the main, I thank Him that loved me, I am fixed; my way is before me, my mind is beyond the river that has no bridge, though I am, as you see, but of a feeble mind.*

HON. Then said old Mr. Honest, Have not you some time ago been acquainted with one Mr. Fearing a pilgrim?

FEEBLE. Acquainted with him! Yes, he came from the town of Stupidity, which lieth four degrees to the northward of the city of Destruction, and as many off of where I was born; yet we were well acquainted, for indeed he was my uncle, my

MR. FEARING, MR. FEEBLE-MIND'S UNCLE.

e 1 Thess. v. 14.

* What a sweet, simple relation is here! Doth it not suit many a feeble-minded Christian? Poor soul, weak as he was, yet his Lord provided against his danger. He sent some strong ones to his deliverance, and to slay his enemy. Mind his belief, even in his utmost extremity. Learn somewhat from this feeble mind.

father's brother. He and I have been much of a temper: he was a little shorter than I, but yet we were much of a complexion.

HON. I perceive you knew him, and I am apt to believe also that you were related one to another; for you have his whitely look, a cast like his with your eye, and your speech is much alike.

FEEBLE-MIND HAS SOME OF MR. FEARING'S FEATURES.

FEEBLE. Most have said so that have known us both: and, besides, what I have read in him I have for the most part found in myself.

GAIUS. Come, sir, said good Gaius, be of good cheer; you are welcome to me, and to my house. What thou hast a mind to, call for freely; and what thou wouldst have my servants do for thee, they will do it with a ready mind.

GAIUS COMFORTS HIM.

Then said Mr. Feeble-mind, This is an unexpected favour, and as the sun shining out of a very dark cloud. Did giant Slay-good intend me this favour when he stopped me, and resolved to let me go no further? Did he intend, that after he had rifled my pocket, I should go to Gaius mine host? Yet so it is.*

NOTICE TO BE TAKEN OF PROVIDENCE.

Now just as Mr. Feeble-mind and Gaius were thus in talk, there comes one running, and called at the door, and said, That about a mile and a half off there was one Mr. Not-right, a pilgrim, struck dead upon the place where he was, with a thunderbolt.

TIDINGS HOW ONE NOT-RIGHT WAS SLAIN BY A THUNDERBOLT.

FEEBLE Alas! said Mr. Feeble-mind, is he slain?

* O how sweet to reflect, that the most gigantic enemy shall be conquered, and their most malicious designs shall be over-ruled for our good: yea, what they intend for our ruin, shall be made to work for our health and prosperity.

He overtook me some days before I came so far as hither, and would be my company-keeper. He was also with me when Slay-good the giant took me, but he was nimble of his heels, and escaped: but it seems he escaped to die, and I was taken to live.*

MR. FEEBLE-MIND'S COMMENT UPON IT.

What one would think doth seek to slay outright,
Ofttimes delivers from the saddest plight.
That very Providence whose face is death,
Doth ofttimes to the lowly life bequeath.
I taken was, he did escape and flee;
Hands cross'd gave death to him, and life to me.

Now, about this time Matthew and Mercy were married; also Gaius gave his daughter Phebe to James, Matthew's brother, to wife; after which time, they yet stayed about ten days at Gaius's house, spending their time and the seasons like as pilgrims use to do.

When they were to depart, Gaius made them a feast, and they did eat and drink, and were merry. Now the hour was come that they must be gone; wherefore Mr. Great-heart called for a reckoning. But Gaius told him, that at his house it was not the custom of pilgrims to pay for their entertainment. He boarded them by the year, but looked for his pay from the good Samaritan, who had promised him, at his return, whatsoever charge he was at with them, faithfully to repay him.[f] Then said Mr. Great-heart to him:

THE PILGRIMS PREPARE TO GO FORWARD.

f Luke x. 34, 35.

* See the various dealings of God, and more and more adore him in all his ways of providence and grace:

"Know, all the ways of God to men are just;
"And, where you can't unriddle, learn to trust."

GREAT. "Beloved, thou doest faithfully, whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers; which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou yet bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well."[g] Then Gaius took his leave of them all, and his children, and particularly of Mr. Feeble-mind. He also gave him something to drink by the way. Now Mr. Feeble-mind, when they were going out of the door, made as if he intended to linger. The which when Mr. Great-heart espied, he said, Come, Mr. Feeble-mind, pray do you go along with us; I will be your conductor, and you shall fare as the rest.

HOW THEY GREET ONE ANOTHER AT PARTING.

GAIUS'S LAST KINDNESS TO FEEBLE-MIND.

FEEBLE. Alas! I want a suitable companion. You are all lusty and strong, but I, as you see, am weak; I choose therefore rather to come behind, lest, by reason of my many infirmities, I should be both a burden to myself and to you. I am, as I said, a man of a weak and feeble mind, and shall be offended and made weak at that which others can bear. I shall like no laughing; I shall like no gay attire; I shall like no unprofitable questions. Nay, I am so weak a man as to be offended with that which others have a liberty to do. I do not yet know all the truth: I am a very ignorant Christian man. Sometimes, if I hear some rejoice in the Lord, it troubles me because I cannot do so too. It is with me as it is with a weak man among the strong, or as with a sick man among the healthy, or as a lamp despised; ("He that is ready to slip with his feet is as a lamp despised in the thought of him that is at ease:[h]*) so that I know not what to do.

FEEBLE-MIND FOR GOING BEHIND.

HIS EXCUSE FOR IT.

g 3 John 5, 6. h Job xii. 5.

* What an open, ingenuous confession is here! though feeble in mind, he was strong in wisdom and sound judgment.

GREAT. But, brother, said Mr. Great-heart, I have it in commission to comfort the feeble-minded, and to support the weak. You must needs go along with us; we will wait for you; we will lend you our help; we will deny ourselves of some things, both opinionative and practical, for your sake: we will not enter into doubtful disputations before you; we will be made all things to you, rather than you shall be left behind.[i]*

GREAT-HEART'S COMMISSION.

A CHRISTIAN SPIRIT.

Now, all this while they were at Gaius's door; and behold, as they were thus in the heat of their discourse, Mr. Ready-to-halt came by, with his crutches in his hand, and he also was going on pilgrimage.[k]

PROMISES.

FEEBLE. Then said Mr. Feeble-mind to him, Man, how camest thou hither? I was but now complaining that I had not a suitable companion, but thou art according to my wish. Welcome, welcome, good Mr. Ready-to-halt, I hope thou and I may be some help.

FEEBLE-MIND GLAD TO SEE READY-TO-HALT COME.

READY. I shall be glad of thy company, said the other; and, good Mr. Feeble-mind, rather than we will part, since we are thus happily met, I will lend thee one of my crutches.†

FEEBLE. Nay, said he, though I thank thee for thy good will, I am not inclined to halt before I am lame. Howbeit, I think, when occasion is, it may help me against a dog.

i Rom. xiv. 1 Cor. vii. k Psalm xxxviii. 17.

* O that this were more practised among Christians of different standing, degrees, and judgment! If they who are strong were thus to bear with the weak, as they ought, how much more love, peace, and unanimity would prevail!

† Excellent! See the nature of Christian love: even to be ready to spare to a brother, what we ourselves have occasion for. Love looketh not at the things of our own, but to provide for the wants of others.

READY. If either myself or my crutches can do thee a pleasure, we are both at thy command, good Mr. Feeble-mind.

Thus therefore they went on. Mr. Great-heart and Mr. Honest went before, Christiana and her children went next, and Mr. Feeble-mind and Mr. Ready-to-halt came behind, with his crutches. Then said Mr. Honest.

HON. Pray, sir, now we are upon the road, tell us some profitable things of some that have gone on pilgrimage before us.

NEW TALK.

GREAT. With a good will. I suppose you have heard how Christian of old did meet with Apollyon in the Valley of Humiliation, and also what hard work he had to go through the Valley of the Shadow of Death. Also I think you cannot but have heard how Faithful was put to it by Madam Wanton, with Adam the First, with one Discontent, and Shame; four as deceitful villains as a man can meet with upon the road.

HON. Yes, I have heard of all this; but indeed good Faithful was hardest put to it with Shame: he was an unwearied one.

GREAT. Ay; for, as the pilgrim well said, he of all men had the wrong name.

HON. But pray, sir, where was it that Christian and Faithful met Talkative? That same was also a notable one.

GREAT. He was a confident fool; yet many follow his ways.

HON. He had like to have beguiled Faithful.

GREAT. Ay, but Christian put him into a way quickly to find him out.

Thus they went on till they came to the place where Evangelist met with Christian and Faithful, and pro-

phesied to them what should befall them at Vanity Fair. Then said their guide, Hereabouts did Christian and Faithful meet with Evangelist, who prophesied to them of what troubles they should meet with at Vanity Fair.

HON. Say you so? I dare say it was a hard chapter that then he did read unto them.

GREAT. 'Twas so; but he gave them encouragement withal. But what do we talk of them? They were a couple of lion-like men; they had set their faces like flint. Do not you remember how undaunted they were when they stood before the judge?

HON. Well: Faithful bravely suffered.

GREAT. So he did, and as brave things came on't; for Hopeful, and some others, as the story relates it, were converted by his death.

HON. Well, but pray go on; for you are well acquainted with things.*

GREAT. Above all that Christian met with after he had passed through Vanity Fair, one By-ends was the arch one.

HON. By-ends! what was he?

GREAT. A very arch fellow, a downright hypocrite; one that would be religious, whichever way the world went; but so cunning, that he would be sure never to lose or suffer for it. He had his mode of religion for every fresh occasion, and his wife was as good at it as he. He would turn from opinion to opinion; yea, and plead for so doing, too. But so far as I could

* Nothing more profitable, than conversing on the faith, valour, and success of those who have gone before us, with their trials, enemies, and dangers; yet how they gloriously fought their way through all, and came off more than conquerors over all. Pilgrims love to hear of these things.

learn, he came to an ill end with his by-ends; nor did I ever hear that any of his children were ever of any esteem with any that truly feared God.

THEY COME WITHIN SIGHT OF VANITY FAIR.

Now by this time they were come within sight of the town of Vanity, where Vanity Fair is kept. So, when they saw that they were so near the town, they consulted with one another how they should pass through the town; and some said one thing, and some another. At last Mr. Great-heart said, I have, as you may understand, often been a conductor of pilgrims through this town. Now, I am acquainted with one Mr. Mnason, a Cyprusian by nation, an old disciple, at whose house we may lodge. If you think good, said he, we will turn in there.

Content, said old Honest; Content, said Christiana; Content, said Mr. Feeble-mind; and so they said all. Now you must think that it was eventide by that they got to the outside of the town; but Mr. Great-heart knew the way to the old man's house. So thither they came; and he called at the door, and the old man within knew his tongue so soon as ever he heard it; so he opened,

THEY ENTER INTO ONE MR. MNASON'S TO LODGE.

and they all came in. Then said Mnason their host, How far have ye come to-day? So they said, From the house of Gaius our friend. I promise you, said he, you have gone a good stitch. You may well be weary; sit down. So they sat down.

GREAT. Then said their guide, Come, what cheer, good sirs? I dare say you are welcome to my friend.

MNAS. I also, said Mr. Mnason, do bid you welcome;

* How happy to find a house in Vanity Fair, whose master will receive and entertain pilgrims. Blessed be God for the present revival of religion in our day: and for the many houses that are open to friends of the Lamb; the hearts of the masters of which, he opens.

and whatever you want, do but say, and we will do what we can to get it for you.

HON. Our great want a while since was harbour and good company, and now I hope we have both.* THEY ARE GLAD OF ENTERTAINMENT.

MNAS. For harbour, you see what it is; but for good company, that will appear in the trial.

GREAT. Well, said Mr. Great-heart, will you have the pilgrims up into their lodging?

MNAS. I will, said Mr. Mnason. So he had them to their respective places; and also showed them a very fair dining-room, where they might be, and sup together until the time was come to go to rest.

Now when they were seated in their places, and were a little cheery after their journey, Mr. Honest asked his landlord if there were any store of good people in the town.

MNAS. We have a few; for indeed they are but a few, when compared with them on the other side.

HON. But how shall we do to see some of them? for the sight of good men to them that are going on pilgrimage, is like to the appearing of the moon and stars to them that are sailing upon the seas.† THEY DESIRE TO SEE SOME OF THE GOOD PEOPLE OF THE TOWN.

MNAS. Then Mr. Mnason stamped with his foot, and his daughter Grace came up. So he said unto her, Grace, go you, tell my friends, Mr. Contrite, Mr. Holy-man, Mr. Love-saints, Mr. Dare-not- SOME SENT FOR.

* Under all our wants, may we not say with our father Abraham, God will provide, Gen. xxii. 8.

† The inquiry of disciples after suitable company, discovers that they, with David, love the Lord's saints, and in the excellent of the earth is all their delight, Psa. xvi. 3. A genuine discovery this of a gracious heart.

lie, and Mr. Penitent, that I have a friend or two at my house that have a mind this evening to see them. So Grace went to call them, and they came; and after salutation made, they sat down together at the table.

Then said Mr. Mnason their landlord, My neighbours, I have, as you see, a company of strangers come to my house; they are pilgrims: they come from afar, and are going to mount Zion. But who, quoth he, do you think this is? pointing his finger to Christiana. It is Christiana the wife of Christian, the famous pilgrim, who with Faithful his brother was so shamefully handled in our town. At that they stood amazed, saying, We little thought to see Christiana when Grace came to call us; wherefore this is a very comfortable surprise. They then asked her of her welfare, and if these young men were her husband's sons. And when she had told them they were, they said, The King whom you love and serve make you as your father, and bring you where he is in peace.*

SOME TALK BETWIXT MR. HONEST AND MR. CONTRITE.

HON. Then Mr. Honest (when they were all sat down) asked Mr. Contrite and the rest, in what posture their town was at present.

CONTR. You may be sure we are full of hurry in fair-time. 'Tis hard keeping our hearts and spirits in good order when we are in a cumbered condition. He that lives in such a place as this is, and that has to do with such as we have, has need of an item to caution him to take heed every moment of the day.†

THE FRUIT OF WATCHFULNESS.

HON. But how are your neighbours now for quietness?

* A precious prayer, for the best of blessings.

† Mind this hint. May it kindle a sense of danger, and excite caution!

CONTR. They are much more moderate now than formerly. You know how Christian and Faithful were used at our town; but of late, I say, they have been far more moderate. I think the blood of Faithful lieth with a load upon them till now; for since they burned him, they have been ashamed to burn any more. In those days we were afraid to walk the streets; but now we can show our heads. Then the name of a professor was odious; now, especially in some parts of our town, (for you know our town is large,) religion is counted honourable.* Then said Mr. Contrite to them, Pray how fared it with you in your pilgrimage? how stands the country affected towards you?

PERSECUTION NOT SO HOT AT VANITY FAIR AS FORMERLY.

HON. It happens to us, as it happeneth to wayfaring men;—sometimes our way is clean, sometimes foul; sometimes up-hill, sometimes down-hill; we are seldom at a certainty. The wind is not always on our backs, nor is every one a friend that we meet with in the way. We have met with some notable rubs already, and what are yet behind we know not; but for the most part we find it true that has been talked of old, A good man must suffer trouble.

CONTR. You talk of rubs; what rubs have you met withal?

HON. Nay, ask Mr. Great-heart our guide; for he can give the best account of that.

GREAT. We have been beset three or four times already. First, Christiana and her children were beset by two ruffians, that they feared would have taken away

* It is a mercy, when open persecution for the word abates, and religion is more respected; but alas! how do professors in such times get cold and dead, grow formal and worldly! The smiles of the town of Vanity, prove more injurious than its frowns. Be on your guard, O pilgrims.

their lives. We were beset with Giant Bloody-man, Giant Maul, and Giant Slay-good. Indeed, we did rather beset the last than were beset of him. And thus it was: after we had been some time at the house of Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, we were minded upon a time to take our weapons with us, and go see if we could light upon any of those that are enemies to pilgrims; for we heard that there was a notable one thereabouts. Now Gaius knew his haunt better than I, because he dwelt thereabout. So we looked, and looked, till at last we discerned the mouth of his cave: then we were glad, and plucked up our spirits. So we approached up to his den; and, lo, when we came there, he had dragged, by mere force, into his net, this poor man, Mr. Feeble-mind, and was about to bring him to his end. But when he saw us, supposing, as we thought, he had another prey, he left the poor man in his hole, and came out. So we fell to it full sore, and he lustily laid about him; but, in conclusion, he was brought down to the ground, and his head cut off, and set up by the wayside, for a terror to such as should after practise such ungodliness. That I tell you the truth, here is the man himself to affirm it, who was as a lamb taken out of the mouth of the lion.

FEEBLE. Then said Mr. Feeble-mind, I found this true, to my cost and comfort: to my cost, when he threatened to pick my bones every moment; and to my comfort, when I saw Mr. Great-heart and his friends, with their weapons, approach so near for my deliverance.

MR. HOLY-MAN'S SPEECH.

HOLY. Then said Mr. Holy-man, There are two things that they have need to be possessed with who go on pilgrimage; courage, and an unspotted life. If they have not courage, they can never

hold on their way; and if their lives be loose, they will make the very name of a pilgrim stink.*

MR. LOVE-SAINTS' SPEECH.

LOVE. Then said Mr. Love-saints, I hope this caution is not needful among you. But truly there are many that go upon the road, that rather declare themselves strangers to pilgrimage, than strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

MR. DARE-NOT-LIE, HIS SPEECH.

DARE. Then said Mr. Dare-not-lie, 'Tis true. They neither have the pilgrim's weed, nor the pilgrim's courage; they go not uprightly, but all awry with their feet; one shoe goes inward, another outward; and their hosen out behind; here a rag, and there a rent, to the disparagement of their Lord.†

MR. PENITENT. HIS SPEECH.

PEN. These things, said Mr. Penitent, they ought to be troubled for; nor are the pilgrims like to have that grace put upon them and their Pilgrim's Progress as they desire, until the way is cleared of such spots and blemishes. Thus they sat talking and spending the time until supper was set upon the table, unto which they went, and refreshed their weary bodies, so they went to rest.

Now they staid in the fair a great while at the house of this Mr. Mnason, who in process of time gave his daughter Grace unto Samuel, Christiana's son, to wife, and his daughter Martha to Joseph.

The time, as I said, that they lay here, was long, for it was not now as in former times. Wherefore the pilgrims grew acquainted with many of the good people

* This is a sound speech. Lord, grant that we, who profess thy holy name, may take good heed to this. It is a word of conviction to many.

† An excellent observation, and a just reproof. May it carry conviction to the heart of those it suits!

of the town, and did them what service they could. Mercy, as she was wont, laboured much for the poor: wherefore their bellies and backs blessed her, and she was there an ornament to her profession. And, to say the truth for Grace, Phebe, and Martha, they were all of a very good nature, and did much good in their places. They were also all of them very fruitful; so that Christian's name, as was said before, was like to live in the world.

A MONSTER.

While they lay here, there came a monster out of the woods, and slew many of the people of the town. It would also carry away their children, and teach them to suck its whelps. Now, no man in the town durst so much as face this monster; but all fled when they heard the noise of his coming.

HIS SHAPE.

The monster was like unto no one beast on the earth. Its body was like a dragon, and it had seven heads and ten horns.[1] It made great havoc of children, and yet it was governed by a woman.

HIS NATURE.

This monster propounded conditions to men; and such men as loved their lives more than their souls, accepted of those conditions.* So they came under.

Now Mr. Great-heart, together with those who came to visit the pilgrims at Mr. Mnason's house, entered into a covenant to go and engage this beast, if perhaps they might deliver the people of this town from the paws and mouths of this so devouring a serpent.

HOW HE IS ENGAGED.

Then did Mr. Great-heart, Mr. Contrite, Mr. Holy-man, Mr. Dare-not-lie, and Mr. Penitent, with their weapons, go forth to meet him. Now the monster at first was very rampant, and looked upon these enemies with great disdain; but they so belaboured

1 Rev. xii. 3.

* I suppose, the author here means that horrid Monster Popery.

him, being sturdy men at arms, that they made him make a retreat: so they came home to Mr. Mnason's house again.

The monster, you must know, had his certain seasons to come out in, and to make his attempts upon the children of the people of the town. At these seasons did these valiant worthies watch him in, and did still continually assault him; insomuch that in process of time he became not only wounded, but lame. Also he has not made that havoc of the townsmen's children as formerly he had done; and it is verily believed by some, that this beast will die of his wounds.

This therefore made Mr. Great-heart and his fellows of great fame in this town; so that many of the people that wanted their taste of things, yet had a reverent esteem and respect for them. Upon this account therefore it was, that these pilgrims got not much hurt here. True, there were some of the baser sort, that could see no more than a mole, nor understand no more than a beast; these had no reverence for these men, nor took they notice of their valour and adventures.

Well, the time grew on that the pilgrims must go on their way; wherefore they prepared for their journey. They sent for their friends; they conferred with them; they had some time set apart therein to commit each other to the protection of their Prince. They were again that brought them of such things as they had, that were fit for the weak and the strong, for the women and the men, and so laded them with such things as were necessary.[m] Then they set forward on their way; and their friends accompanying them so far as was convenient, they again committed each other to the protection of their King, and parted.

m Acts xxviii. 10.

They therefore that were of the pilgrims' company went on, and Mr. Great-heart went before them. Now, the women and children being weakly, they were forced to go as they could bear; by this means Mr. Ready-to-halt and Mr. Feeble-mind had more to sympathize with their condition.

When they were gone from the townsmen, and when their friends had bid them farewell, they quickly came to the place where Faithful was put to death. Therefore they made a stand, and thanked Him that had enabled him to bear his cross so well; and the rather, because they now found that they had a benefit by such a manly suffering as his was.

They went on therefore after this a good way further, talking of Christian and Faithful, and how Hopeful joined himself to Christian after that Faithful was dead.

Now they were come up with the hill Lucre, where the silver mine was which took Demas off from his pilgrimage, and into which, as some think, By-ends fell and perished; wherefore they considered that. But when they were come to the old monument that stood over against the hill Lucre, to wit, to the pillar of salt, that stood also within view of Sodom and its stinking lake, they marvelled, as did Christian before, that men of that knowledge and ripeness of wit as they were should be so blinded as to turn aside here. Only they considered again, that nature is not affected with the harms that others have met with, especially if that thing upon which they look has an attracting virtue upon the foolish eye.

I saw now that they went on till they came to the river that was on this side of the Delectable Mountains; —to the river where the fine trees grow on both sides, and whose leaves, if taken inwardly, are good against

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by R. Brandard.

THE RIVER OF THE WATER OF LIFE.

surfeits:[n] where the meadows are green all the year long; and where they might lie down safely.

By this river side, in the meadows, there were cotes and folds for sheep, a house built for the nourishing and bringing up of those lambs, the babes of those women that go on pilgrimage. Also there was here one that was entrusted with them, who could have compassion; and that could gather these lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and that could gently lead those that are with young.[o] Now, to the care of this man Christiana admonished her four daughters to commit their little ones, that by these waters they might be housed, harboured, succoured, and nourished, and that none of them might be lacking in time to come. This man, if any of them go astray, or be lost, he will bring them again; he will also bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen them that are sick.[p] Here they will never want meat, drink, and clothing; here they will be kept from thieves and robbers; for this man will die before one of those committed to his trust shall be lost. Besides, here they shall be sure to have good nurture and admonition, and shall be taught to walk in right paths, and that you know is a favour of no small account. Also here, as you see, are delicate waters, pleasant meadows, dainty flowers, variety of trees, and such as bear wholesome fruit;—fruit, not like that which Matthew ate of, that fell over the wall out of Beelzebub's garden; but fruit that procureth health where there is none, and that continueth and increaseth it where it is.* So they were content to commit their little ones to him;

n Psalm xxiii. o Heb. v. 2. Isa. lxiii. p Jer. xxiii. 4. Ezek. xxxiv. 11—16.

* Here we frequently find our author speaking of our dear God and Saviour, as Man. He excels in this. It were to be wished that authors and preachers wrote and spoke more of the manhood of Jesus,

and that which was also an encouragement to them so to do, was, for that all this was to be at the charge of the King, and so was an hospital to young children and orphans.

THEY BEING COME TO BY-PATH STILE. HAVE A MIND TO HAVE A PLUCK WITH GIANT DESPAIR.

Now they went on. And when they were come to By-path meadow, to the stile over which Christian went with his fellow Hopeful, when they were taken by Giant Despair, and put into Doubting-castle, they sat down, and consulted what was best to be done: to wit, now they were so strong, and had got such a man as Mr. Great-heart for their conductor, whether they had not best to make an attempt upon the giant, demolish his castle, and if there were any pilgrims in it, to set them at liberty, before they went any further. So one said one thing, and another said the contrary. One questioned if it was lawful to go upon unconsecrated ground; another said they might, provided their end was good; but Mr. Great-heart said, Though that assertion offered last cannot be universally true, yet I have a commandment to resist sin, to overcome evil, to fight the good fight of faith: and I pray, with whom should I fight this good fight, if not with Giant Despair? I will therefore attempt the taking away of his life, and the demolishing of Doubting-castle. Then said he, Who will go with me? Then said old Honest, I will. And so will we too, said Christiana's four sons, Matthew, Samuel, Joseph, and James; for they were young men and strong.[q] So they left the women in the road, and with them Mr. Feeble-mind, and Mr. Ready-to-halt with

q 1 John ii. 13, 14.

who was a perfect man, like unto us in all things except sin. The view and consideration of this is sweet to faith, and endears *our* Saviour to our hearts.

his crutches, to be their guard, until they came back; for in that place the Giant Despair dwelt so near, they, keeping in the road, a little child might lead them.[r]

So Mr. Great-heart, old Honest, and the four young men, went to go up to Doubting-castle, to look for Giant Despair. When they came at the castle gate, they knocked for entrance with an unusual noise. At that the old giant comes to the gate, and Diffidence his wife follows. Then said he, Who and what is he that is so hardy, as after this manner to molest the Giant Despair? Mr. Great-heart replied, It is I, Great-heart, one of the King of the Celestial Country's conductors of pilgrims to their place; and I demand of thee that thou open thy gates for my entrance: prepare thyself also to fight, for I am come to take away thy head, and to demolish Doubting-castle.

DESPAIR HAS OVERCOME ANGELS.

Now Giant Despair, because he was a giant, thought no man could overcome him: and again thought he, Since heretofore I have made a conquest of angels, shall Great-heart make me afraid? So he harnessed himself, and went out. He had a cap of steel upon his head, a breast-plate of fire girded to him, and he came out in iron shoes, with a great club in his hand. Then these six men made up to him, and beset him behind and before: also when Diffidence the giantess came up to help him, old Mr. Honest cut her down at one blow. Then they fought for their lives, and Giant Despair was brought down to the ground,* but was very loth to die. He struggled hard, and had, as they say, as many lives as a

DESPAIR IS LOTH TO DIE.

r Isa. xi. 6.

* What cannot Great-heart do? what feats not perform? what victories not gain? Who can stand before Great-heart? Diffidence shall fall, and Giant Despair be slain, by the power of Great-heart, with

cat; but Great-heart was his death, for he left him not till he had severed his head from his shoulders.

DOUBTING-CASTLE DEMOLISHED.

Then they fell to demolishing Doubting-castle, and that you know might with ease be done, since Giant Despair was dead. They were seven days in destroying of that; and in it of pilgrims they found one Mr. Despondency, almost starved to death, and one Much-afraid, his daughter: these two they saved alive. But it would have made you a-wondered to have seen the dead bodies that lay here and there in the castle-yard, and how full of dead men's bones the dungeon was.

When Mr. Great-heart and his companions had performed this exploit, they took Mr. Despondency, and his daughter Much-afraid, into their protection; for they were honest people, though they were prisoners in Doubting-castle to that tyrant Giant Despair. They, therefore, I say, took with them the head of the giant, (for his body they had buried under a heap of stones,) and down to the road and to their companions they came, and showed them what they had done. Now, when Feeble-mind and Ready-to-halt saw that it was the head of Giant Despair indeed, they were very jocund and merry. Now, Christiana, if need was, could play upon the viol, and her daughter Mercy upon the lute: so since they were so merry disposed, she played them a lesson, and Ready-to-halt would dance. So he took Despondency's daughter, Much-afraid, by the hand, and to dancing they went in the road. True, he could not dance

THEY HAVE MUSIC AND DANCING FOR JOY.

the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God, Eph. vi. 17; even Despondency, though almost starved, shall be delivered, and his daughter Much-afraid shall be rescued. O for more of Great-heart's company!

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by J. Sands.

THE DESTRUCTION OF TORBELINO'S CASTLE.

without one crutch in his hand, but I promise you, he footed it well: also the girl was to be commended, for she answered the music handsomely.

As for Mr. Despondency, the music was not so much to him; he was for feeding, rather than dancing, for that he was almost starved. So Christiana gave him some of her bottle of spirits for present relief, and then prepared him something to eat; and in a little time the old gentleman came to himself, and began to be finely revived.

Now I saw in my dream, when all these things were finished, Mr. Great-heart took the head of Giant Despair, and set it upon a pole by the highway-side, right over against the pillar that Christian erected for a caution to pilgrims that came after, to take heed of entering into his grounds.

Then he writ under it upon a marble stone these verses following:—

This is the head of him, whose name only
In former times did pilgrims terrify.
His castle's down,* and Diffidence his wife
Brave Mr. Great-heart has bereft of life.
Despondency, his daughter Much-afraid,
Great-heart for them also the man has play'd.
Who hereof doubts, if he'll but cast his eye
Up hither may his scruples satisfy.
This head also, when doubting cripples dance,
Doth show from fears they have deliverance.

A MONUMENT OF DELIVERANCE.

When these men had thus bravely showed themselves against Doubting-castle, and had slain Giant Despair,

* Though Doubting-Castle be demolished,
And the Giant Despair hath lost his head,
Sin can rebuild the castle, make't remain,
And make Despair the Giant live again.*

* Excellent remark! pray mind it.

they went forward, and went on till they came to the Delectable Mountains, where Christian and Hopeful refreshed themselves with the varieties of the place. They also acquainted themselves with the Shepherds there, who welcomed them, as they had done Christian before, unto the Delectable Mountains.

Now the Shepherds seeing so great a train follow Mr. Great-heart, (for with him they were well acquainted,) they said unto him, Good sir, you have got a goodly company here; pray where did you find all these?

Then Mr. Great-heart replied:—

THE GUIDE'S SPEECH TO THE SHEPHERDS.

First, here is Christiana and her train,
Her sons, and her sons' wives, who like the wain,
Keep by the pole, and do by compass steer
From sin to grace, else they had not been here.
Next here's old Honest come on pilgrimage,
Ready-to-halt too, who I dare engage
True-hearted is, and so is Feeble-mind,
Who willing was not to be left behind.
Despondency, good man, is coming after,
And so also is Much-afraid, his daughter.
May we have entertainment here, or must
We further go? Let's know whereon to trust.

Then said the Shepherds, This a comfortable company. You are welcome to us; for we have for the feeble, as well as for the strong. Our Prince has an eye to what is done to the least of these;[s] therefore infirmity must not be a block to our entertainment. So they had them to the palace-door, and then said unto them, Come in, Mr. Feeble-mind, come in, Mr. Ready-to-halt, come in, Mr. Despondency, and Mrs. Much-afraid his daughter. These, Mr. Great-heart, said the Shepherds to the guide, we call in by

THEIR ENTERTAINMENT.

s Matt. xxv. 40.

name, for that they are most subject to draw back; but as for you, and the rest that are strong, we leave you to your wonted liberty. Then said Mr. Great-heart, This day I see that grace doth shine in your faces, and that you are my Lord's Shepherds indeed; for that you have not pushed these diseased neither with side nor shoulder, but have rather strewed their way into the palace with flowers, as you should.[t]

A DESCRIPTION OF FALSE SHEPHERDS.

So the feeble and weak went in, and Mr. Great-heart and the rest did follow. When they were also set down, the Shepherds said to those of the weaker sort, What is it that you would have? for, said they, all things must be managed here to the supporting of the weak, as well as to the warning of the unruly. So they made them a feast of things easy of digestion, and that were pleasant to the palate, and nourishing; the which when they had received, they went to their rest, each one respectively unto his proper place.

When morning was come, because the mountains were high and the day clear, and because it was the custom of the Shepherds to show the pilgrims before their departure some rarities, therefore after they were ready, and had refreshed themselves, the Shepherds took them out into the fields, and showed them first what they had shown to Christian before.

Then they had them to some new places. The first was Mount Marvel, where they looked, and beheld a man at a distance, that tumbled the hills about with words. Then they asked the Shepherds what that should mean. So they told them, that that man was the son of one Mr. Great-grace, of whom you read in the first part of the records of the Pilgrim's Progress; and

MOUNT MARVEL.

t Ezek. xxxiv. 21.

he is set there to teach pilgrims how to believe down, or to tumble out of their ways, what difficulties they should meet with, by faith.[u] Then said Mr. Great-heart, I know him, he is a man above many.

MOUNT INNOCENCE.

Then they had them to another place, called Mount Innocence. And there they saw a man clothed all in white; and two men, Prejudice and Ill-will continually casting dirt upon him. Now, behold, the dirt, whatsoever they cast at him, would in a little time fall off again, and his garment would look as clear as if no dirt had been cast thereat. Then said the pilgrims, What means this? The Shepherds answered, This man is named Godly-man, and this garment is to show the innocency of his life. Now, those that throw dirt at him, are such as hate his well-doing; but, as you see the dirt will not stick upon his clothes, so it shall be with him that liveth innocently in the world. Whoever they be that would make such men dirty, they labour all in vain; for God, by that a little time is spent, will cause that their innocence shall break forth as the light, and their righteousness as the noonday.

MOUNT CHARITY.

Then they took them, and had them to Mount Charity, where they showed them a man that had a bundle of cloth lying before him, out of which he cut coats and garments for the poor that stood about him; yet his bundle or roll of cloth was never the less. Then said they, What should this be? This is, said the Shepherds, to show you, that he who has a heart to give of his labour to the poor, shall never want wherewithal. He that watereth, shall be watered himself. And the cake that the widow gave to the prophet, did not cause that she had the less in her barrel.

u Mark xi. 23, 24.

They had them also to the place where they saw one Fool and one Want-wit washing an Ethiopian, with intention to make him white; but the more they washed him, the blacker he was. Then they asked the Shepherds what that should mean. So they told them, saying, Thus it is with the vile person; all means used to get such a one a good name, shall in conclusion tend but to make him more abominable. Thus it was with the pharisees; and so it shall be with all hypocrites.

THE WORK OF ONE FOOL AND ONE WANT-WIT.

Then said Mercy, the wife of Matthew, to Christiana her mother, Mother, I would, if it might be, see the hole in the hill, or that commonly called the By-way to hell. So her mother brake her mind to the Shepherds. Then they went to the door; it was on the side of an hill; and they opened it, and bid Mercy hearken a while. So she hearkened, and heard one saying, Cursed be my father for holding of my feet back from the way of peace and life. Another said, Oh, that I had been torn in pieces before I had, to save my life, lost my soul! And another said, If I were to live again, how would I deny myself, rather than come to this place! Then there was as if the very earth had groaned and quaked under the feet of this young woman for fear; so she looked white, and came trembling away, saying, Blessed be he and she that is delivered from this place!

MERCY HAS A MIND TO SEE THE HOLE IN THE HILL.

Now when the Shepherds had shown them all these things, then they had them back to the palace, and entertained them with what the house would afford. But Mercy, being a young and breeding woman, longed for something that she saw there, but was ashamed to ask. Her mother-in-law then asked her what she ailed, for she looked as one not well.

MERCY LONGETH, AND FOR WHAT.

Then said Mercy, There is a looking-glass hangs up in the dining-room, off which I cannot take my mind: if, therefore, I have it not, I think I shall miscarry. Then said her mother, I will mention thy wants to the Shepherds, and they will not deny it thee. But she said, I am ashamed that these men should know that I longed. Nay, my daughter, said she, it is no shame, but a virtue, to long for such a thing as that. So Mercy said, Then, mother, if you please, ask the Shepherds if they are willing to sell it.

IT WAS THE WORD OF GOD.

Now, the glass was one of a thousand. It would present a man, one way, with his own features exactly; and, turn it but another way, and it would show one the very face and similitude of the Prince of pilgrims himself. Yes, I have talked with them that can tell, and they have said that they have seen the very crown of thorns upon his head, by looking in that glass; they have therein also seen the holes in his hands, his feet, and his side. Yea, such an excellency is there in this glass, that it will show him to one where they have a mind to see him, whether living or dead; whether in earth, or in heaven; whether in a state of humiliation, or in his exaltation; whether coming to suffer, or coming to reign.[v]*

Christiana therefore went to the Shepherds apart, (now the names of the Shepherds were Knowledge, Experience, Watchful, and Sincere,) and said unto them, There is one of my daughters, a breeding woman, that I think doth long for something that she hath seen in this

v James i. 23—25. 1 Cor. xiii. 12. 2 Cor. iii. 18.

* O what a blessed thing it is to long for the word of God, so as not to be satisfied without it, and to prize it above and beyond all other things! Love to the word excites the soul to say with David, "I have longed for thy salvation, O Lord," Psal. cxix. 174. This is a special mark of a gracious soul.

house; and she thinks that she shall miscarry if she should by you be denied.

EXPERIENCE. Call her, call her, she shall assuredly have what we can help her to. So they called her, and said to her, Mercy, what is that thing thou wouldst have? Then she blushed, and said, The great glass that hangs up in the dining-room. So, Sincere ran and fetched it, and with a joyful consent it was given her. Then she bowed her head, and gave thanks, and said, By this I know that I have obtained favour in your eyes.

SHE DOTH NOT LOSE HER LONGING.

They also gave to the other young women such things as they desired, and to their husbands great commendations, for that they had joined with Mr. Great-heart in the slaying of Giant Despair, and the demolishing of Doubting-castle.

About Christiana's neck the Shepherds put a bracelet, and so did they about the necks of her four daughters; also they put earrings in their ears, and jewels on their foreheads.

HOW THE SHEPHERDS ADORN THE PILGRIMS.

When they were minded to go hence, they let them go in peace, but gave not to them those certain cautions which before were given to Christian and his companion. The reason was, for that these had Great-heart to be their guide, who was one that was well acquainted with things, and so could give them their cautions more seasonably, to wit, even when the danger was nigh the approaching. What cautions Christian and his companion had received of the Shepherds,* they had also lost by that the time was come that they had need to

* No good thing, done in the name and to the glory of Christ, shall be forgotten of him, nor go unrewarded by him. He gives us grace to work for him; and then gives a reward of grace for our works.

put them in practice. Wherefore, here was the advantage that this company had over the other.

From thence they went on singing, and they said,

Behold how fitly are the stages set
For their relief that pilgrims are become,
And how they us receive without one let,
That make the other life our mark and home!

What novelties they have to us they give,
That we, though pilgrims, joyful lives may live.
They do upon us, too, such things bestow,
That show we pilgrims are where'er we go.

When they were gone from the Shepherds, they quickly came to the place where Christian met with one Turn-away, that dwelt in the town of Apostasy. Wherefore of him Mr. Great-heart their guide did now put them in mind, saying, This is the place where Christian met with one Turn-away, who carried with him the character of his rebellion at his back. And this I have to say concerning this man;—he would hearken to no counsel, but once a falling, persuasion could not stop him. When he came to the place where the cross and sepulchre were, he did meet with one that bid him look there; but he gnashed with his teeth, and stamped, and said he was resolved to go back to his own town. Before he came to the gate, he met with Evangelist, who offered to lay hands on him, to turn him into the way again. But this Turn-away resisted him, and having done much despite unto him, he got away over the wall, and so escaped his hand.

HOW ONE TURN-AWAY MANAGED HIS APOSTASY.

Then they went on; and just at the place where Little-faith formerly was robbed, there stood a man with his sword drawn, and his face all over with blood. Then said Mr. Great-heart, Who art thou? The man

made answer, saying, I am one whose name is Valiant-for-truth. I am a pilgrim, and am going to the Celestial City. Now, as I was in my way, there were three men did beset me, and propounded unto me these three things: 1. Whether I would become one of them. 2. Or go back from whence I came. 3. Or die upon the place.[w] To the first I

ONE VALIANT-FOR TRUTH BESET WITH THIEVES.

answered, I had been a true man for a long season, and therefore it could not be expected that I should now cast in my lot with thieves. Then they demanded what I would say to the second. So I told them, the place from whence I came, had I not found incommodity there, I had not forsaken it at all; but finding it altogether unsuitable to me, and very unprofitable for me, I forsook

w Prov. i. 10—19.

it for this way. Then they asked me what I said to the third. And I told them, my life cost far more dear than that I should lightly give it away. Besides, you have nothing to do thus to put things to my choice; wherefore at your peril be it if you meddle. Then these three, to wit, Wild-head, Inconsiderate, and Pragmatic, drew upon me, and I also drew upon them. So we fell to it, one against three, for the space of above three hours. They have left upon me, as you see, some of the marks of their valour, and have also carried away with them some of mine. They are but just now gone: I suppose they might, as the saying is, hear your horse dash, and so they betook themselves to flight.

GREAT. But here was great odds, three against one.

VALIANT. 'Tis true; but little or more, are nothing to him that has the truth on his side: "Though an host should encamp against me," said one, "my heart *shall* not fear: though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident," &c. Besides, said he, I have read in some records, that one man has fought an army: and how many did Samson slay with the jawbone of an ass!*

GREAT. Then said the guide, Why did you not cry out, that some might have come in for your succour?

VALIANT. So I did, to my King, who I knew could hear me, and afford invisible help, and that was sufficient for me.†

* Truth will make a man valiant: and valour for truth will make a pilgrim fight with wild-headed, inconsiderate, and pragmatic opposers. The blood he loses in such a battle, is his honour; the scars he gets, are his glory.

† Enough indeed. He who is engaged for God's truth, shall never want God's help. To fight for God, and pray to God, is the Christian's glory.

GREAT. Then said Great-heart to Mr. Valiant-for-truth, Thou hast worthily behaved thyself; let me see thy sword. So he showed it him.

When he had taken it in his hand, and looked thereon a while, he said, Ha! it is a right Jerusalem blade.*

VALIANT. It is so. Let a man have one of these blades, with a hand to wield it and skill to use it, and he may venture upon an angel with it. He need not fear its holding, if he can but tell how to lay on. Its edge will never blunt. It will cut flesh and bones, and soul and spirit, and all.

GREAT. But you fought a great while; I wonder you was not weary.

VALIANT. I fought till my sword did cleave to my hand; and then they were joined together THE WORD. THE FAITH. as if a sword grew out of my arm, and when the blood ran through my fingers, then I fought with most BLOOD. courage.†

GREAT. Thou hast done well; thou hast resisted unto blood, striving against sin. Thou shalt abide by us, come in and go out with us; for we are thy companions. Then they took him, and washed his wounds, and gave him of what they had, to refresh him: and so they went on together.

Now, as they went on, because Mr. Great-heart was delighted in him, (for he loved one greatly that he found to be a man of his hands,) and because there were in

* Great-heart is an excellent judge of swords. He well knows those which are forged in the fire of love, well-tempered with truth, and will do great execution upon enemies to both.

† Blessed fighting, when hand and heart are engaged, and the sword grows united to both! O ye trimmers and lukewarm professors, who will tamely give up, or meanly compound for peace, by the barter of truth; let this shame and confound you!

company them that were feeble and weak, therefore he questioned with him about many things; as, first, what countryman he was.

VALIANT. I am of Dark-land; for there was I born, and there my father and mother are still.

GREAT. Dark-land, said the guide; doth not that lie on the same coast with the city of Destruction?

HOW MR. VALIANT CAME TO GO ON PILGRIMAGE.

VALIANT. Yes, it doth. Now, that which caused me to come on pilgrimage was this: We had one Mr. Tell-true came into our parts, and he told it about what Christian had done, that went from the city of Destruction; namely, how he had forsaken his wife and children, and had betaken himself to a pilgrim's life. It was also confidently reported, how he had killed a serpent that did come out to resist him in his journey; and how he got through to whither he intended. It was also told what welcome he had at all his Lord's lodgings, especially when he came to the gates of the Celestial City; for there, said the man, he was received with sound of trumpet by a company of shining ones. He told also how all the bells in the city did ring for joy at his reception, and what golden garments he was clothed with; with many other things that now I shall forbear to relate. In a word, that man so told the story of Christian and his travels that my heart fell into a burning haste to be gone after him; nor could father or mother stay me. So I got from them, and am come thus far on my way.

GREAT. You came in at the gate, did you not?

HE BEGINS RIGHT.

VALIANT. Yes, yes; for the same man also told us, that all would be nothing, if we did not begin to enter this way at the gate.*

* The reason why so many professors set out, and go on for a season, but fall away and come to nothing at last, is, because they do

GREAT. Look you, said the guide to Christiana, the pilgrimage of your husband, and what he has gotten thereby, is spread abroad far and near.

CHRISTIAN'S NAME FAMOUS.

VALIANT. Why, is this Christian's wife?

GREAT. Yes, that it is; and these also are his four sons.

VALIANT. What, and going on pilgrimage too?

GREAT. Yes, verily, they are following after.

VALIANT. It glads me at the heart. Good man, how joyful will he be when he shall see them that would not go with him, yet to enter after him in at the gates into the Celestial City!

HE IS MUCH REJOICED TO SEE CHRISTIAN'S WIFE.

GREAT. Without doubt it will be a comfort to him; for, next to the joy of seeing himself there, it will be a joy to meet there his wife and children.

VALIANT. But now you are upon that, pray let me see your opinion about it. Some make a question, whether we shall know one another when we are there.

GREAT. Do you think they shall know themselves then, or that they shall rejoice to see themselves in that bliss? and if they think they shall know and do this, why not know others, and rejoice in their welfare also? Again, since relations are our second self, though that state will be dissolved there, yet why may it not be

not enter into the pilgrim's path, by Christ, who is the gate. They do not see themselves quite lost, ruined, hopeless, and wretched: their hearts are not broken for sin; therefore they do not begin by receiving Christ, as the only Saviour of such miserable sinners. But they set out in nature's strength; and, not receiving, nor living upon Christ, they soon fall away. This is the reason of the inquiry, Did you come in at the Gate? A question we ought to put to ourselves, and be satisfied about.

rationally concluded, that we shall be more glad to see them there, than to see they are wanting?

VALIANT. Well, I perceive whereabouts you are as to this. Have you any more things to ask me about my beginning to come on pilgrimage?*

GREAT. Yes; were your father and mother willing that you should become a pilgrim?

VALIANT. Oh! no; they used all means imaginable to persuade me to stay at home.

GREAT. Why, what could they say against it?

THE GREAT STUMBLING-BLOCKS THAT BY HIS FRIENDS WERE LAID IN HIS WAY.

VALIANT. They said it was an idle life; and if I myself were not inclined to sloth and laziness, I would never countenance a pilgrim's condition.

GREAT. And what did they say else?

VALIANT. Why, they told me that it was a dangerous way; yea, the most dangerous way in the world, say they, is that which the pilgrims go.

GREAT. Did they show you wherein this way is so dangerous?

VALIANT. Yes; and that in many particulars.

GREAT. Name some of them.

THE FIRST STUMBLING-BLOCK.

VALIANT. They told me of the Slough of Despond, where Christian was well nigh smothered. They told me, that there were archers standing ready in Beelzebub-castle, to shoot them who should knock at the Wicket-gate for entrance. They told me also of the wood and dark mountains; of the hill Difficulty; of the lions; and also of the three giants, Bloody-man, Maul, and Slay-good. They said moreover, that there was a foul fiend haunted the Valley

* A sound Christian is not afraid to be examined, and sifted to the bottom. For he can give a reason of the hope that is in him. He knows why and wherefore he commenced a pilgrim.

of Humiliation; and that Christian was by him almost bereft of life. Besides, said they, you must go over the Valley of the Shadow of Death, where the hobgoblins are, where the light is darkness, where the way is full of snares, pits, traps, and gins. They told me also of Giant Despair, of Doubting-castle, and of the ruin that the pilgrims met with here. Further, they said I must go over the Enchanted Ground, which was dangerous; and that after all this, I should find a river, over which there was no bridge; and that that river did lie betwixt me and the Celestial Country.

GREAT. And was this all?

VALIANT. No. They also told me that this way was full of deceivers, and of persons that lay in THE SECOND. wait there to turn good men out of the path.

GREAT. But how did they make that out?

VALIANT. They told me, that Mr. Worldly-wise-man did lie there in wait to deceive. They said also, that there were Formality and Hypocrisy continually on the road. They said also, that By-ends, Talkative, or Demas, would go near to gather me up; that the Flatterer would catch me in his net; or that, with green-headed Ignorance, I would presume to go on to the gate, from whence he was sent back to the hole that was in the side of the hill, and made to go the by-way to hell.

GREAT. I promise you, this was enough to discourage you; but did they make an end there?

VALIANT. No, stay. They told me also of many that had tried that way of old, and that had gone a THE THIRD. great way therein, to see if they could find something of the glory there that so many had so much talked of from time to time, and how they came back again, and befooled themselves for setting a foot out of doors in

that path, to the satisfaction of all the country. And they named several that did so, as Obstinate and Pliable, Mistrust and Timorous, Turn-away and old Atheist, with several more; who, they said, had some of them gone far to see what they could find, but not one of them had found so much advantage by going as amounted to the weight of a feather.

GREAT. Said they anything more to discourage you?

VALIANT. Yes. They told me of one Mr. Fearing, who was a pilgrim, and how he found his way so solitary, that he never had a comfortable hour therein; also that Mr. Despondency had like to have been starved therein: yea, and also (which I had almost forgot) that Christian himself, about whom there has been such a noise, after all his ventures for a celestial crown, was certainly drowned in the Black River, and never went a foot farther, however it was smothered up.*

THE FOURTH.

GREAT. And did none of these things discourage you?

VALIANT. No; they seemed but as so many nothings to me.

GREAT. How came that about?

VALIANT. Why, I still believed what Mr. Tell-truth had said; and that carried me beyond them all.

HOW HE GOT OVER THESE STUMBLING-BLOCKS.

GREAT. Then this was your victory, even your faith.

VALIANT. It was so. I believed, and therefore came

* How natural is it for carnal men to give an evil report of the ways of the Lord; and to discourage those who are just setting out, by telling of the dangers and difficulties they shall meet with! But here is not one word of the pleasures, comforts, and joys that are experienced in the ways of the Lord. No; they believe not one word about them, therefore they cannot speak of them. However, this is a trial of the earnestness and sincerity of our hearts.

out, got into the way, fought all that set themselves against me, and, by believing, am come to this place.*

Who would true valour see.
  Let him come hither;
One here will constant be,
  Come wind, come weather;
There's no discouragement
Shall make him once relent
His first avow'd intent
  To be a pilgrim.

Whoso beset him round
  With dismal stories,
Do but themselves confound;
  His strength the more is.
No lion can him fright,
He'll with a giant fight,
But he will have a right
  To be a pilgrim.

Hobgoblin nor foul fiend
  Can daunt his spirit;
He knows he at the end
  Shall life inherit.
Then fancies fly away,
He'll not fear what men say;
He'll labour night and day
  To be a pilgrim.

By this time they were got to the Enchanted Ground, where the air naturally tended to make one drowsy.

And that place was all grown over with briers and thorns, excepting here and there, where was an

* Here we see, that valiant soldiers of Christ ascribe all to faith. They set out with faith, and they hold on and hold out by believing. Thus they give all the glory to Christ, who is the object, author, and finisher of faith. Here is no talking of free-will, boasting of their own faithfulness, the merit of works, &c. No: souls valiant for the truth are delivered from, and abhor, such unscriptural, vain-glorious prating.

enchanted arbour, upon which if a man sits, or in which if a man sleeps, it is a question, some say, whether ever he shall rise or wake again in this world. Over this forest therefore they went, both one and another, and Mr. Great-heart went before, for that he was the guide; and Mr. Valiant-for-truth came behind, being rear-guard, for fear lest peradventure some fiend, or dragon, or giant, or thief, should fall upon their rear, and so do mischief. They went on here, each man with his sword drawn in his hand; for they knew it was a dangerous place. Also they cheered up one another as well as they could. Feeble-mind, Mr. Great-heart commanded should come up after him; and Mr. Despondency was under the eye of Mr. Valiant.*

Now they had not gone far, but a great mist and darkness fell upon them all; so that they could scarce, for a great while, see the one the other. Wherefore they were forced, for some time, to feel one for another by words; for they walked not by sight.† But any one must think, that here was but sorry going for the best of them all; but how much worse for the women and children, who both of feet and heart were but tender! Yet so it was, that through the encouraging words of him that led in the front, and of him that brought them up behind, they made a pretty good shift to wag along.

* Old pilgrims, ye who have set out well, and gone on well for a long season, consider, ye are yet in the world, which is enchanted ground. Know your danger of seeking rest here, or of sleeping in any of its enchanting harbours. Though the flesh may be weary, the spirits faint, and the harbours inviting, yet beware. Press on. Look to the Strong for strength, and to the Beloved for rest, in his way.

† Though feelings may be lost, light fail, and comforts forsake us, yet faith will supply the want of all. Like Moses, we shall endure, seeing Him who is invisible, Heb. xi. 27.

The way also here was very wearisome, through dirt and slabbiness. Nor was there, on all this ground, so much as one inn or victualling-house wherein to refresh the feebler sort. Here, therefore, was grunting, and puffing, and sighing, while one tumbleth over a bush, another sticks fast in the dirt, and the children, some of them, lost their shoes in the mire;—while one cries out, I am down; and another, Ho, where are you? and a third, The bushes have got such fast hold on me, I think I cannot get away from them.

AN ARBOUR ON THE ENCHANTED GROUND.

Then they came at an arbour, warm, and promising much refreshing to the pilgrims; for it was finely wrought above-head, beautified with greens, furnished with benches and settles. It also had in it a soft couch, whereon the weary might lean. This, you must think, all things considered, was tempting; for the pilgrims already began to be foiled with the badness of the way: but there was not one of them that made so much as a motion to stop there. Yea, for aught I could perceive, they continually gave so good heed to the advice of their guide, and he did so faithfully tell them of dangers, and of the nature of dangers when they were at them, that usually when they were nearest to them, they did most pluck up their spirits, and hearten one another to deny the flesh. This arbour was called The Slothful's Friend, on purpose to allure, if it might be, some of the pilgrims there to take up their rest when weary.*

THE NAME OF THE ARBOUR.

* Deny yourselves, is the word of Christ. The slothfulness, ease, and desires of the flesh, must be denied, or danger will inevitably ensue. To gratify the flesh, is to destroy the Spirit's comfort, if not the soul's salvation. Remember this, when temptations, which promise much ease and pleasure, beset you.

THE WAY DIFFICULT TO FIND.

I saw then in my dream, that they went on in this their solitary ground, till they came to a place at which a man is apt to lose his way. Now, though when it was light their guide could well enough tell how to miss those ways that led wrong, yet in the dark he was put to a stand. But he had in his pocket a map of all ways leading to or from the Celestial City; wherefore he struck a light, (for he never goes also without his tinder-box,) and takes a view of his book or map, which bids him to be careful in that place to turn to the right hand. And, had he not been careful here to look in his map, they had all, in probability, been smothered in the mud, for just a little before them, and that at the end of the cleanest way too, was a pit, none knows how deep, full of nothing but mud, there made on purpose to destroy the pilgrims in.

THE GUIDE HAS A MAP LEADING TO OR FROM THE CITY.

GOD'S BOOK.

Then thought I with myself, Who that goeth on pilgrimage but would have one of these maps about him, that he may look when he is at a stand which is the way he must take?

AN ARBOUR, AND TWO ASLEEP THEREIN.

Then they went on in this Enchanted Ground, till they came to where there was another arbour, and it was built by the highway-side. And in that arbour there lay two men, whose names were Heedless and Too-bold. These two went thus far on pilgrimage; but here, being wearied with their journey, sat down to rest themselves, and so fell fast asleep. When the pilgrims saw them, they stood still, and shook their heads, for they knew that the sleepers were in a pitiful case. Then they consulted what to do, whether to go on and leave them in their sleep, or to step to them and try to awake them. So they concluded to go to them and awake them; that is,

if they could; but with this caution, namely, to take heed that they themselves did not sit down, nor embrace the offered benefit of that arbour.*

THE PILGRIMS TRY TO AWAKE THEM.

So they went in, and spake to the men, and called each by his name, for the guide it seems did know them; but there was no voice nor answer. Then the guide did shake them, and do what he could to disturb them. Then said one of them, I will pay you when I take my money. At which the guide shook his head. I will fight so long as I can hold my sword in my hand, said the other. At that, one of the children laughed.

THEIR ENDEAVOUR IS FRUITLESS.

Then said Christiana, What is the meaning of this? The guide said, They talk in their sleep. If you strike them, beat them, or whatever else you do to them, they will answer you after this fashion; or, as one of them said in old time, when the waves of the sea did beat upon him, and he slept as one upon the mast of a ship, When I awake, I will seek it again.[x] You know, when men talk in their sleep, they say any thing, but their words are not governed either by faith or reason. There is an incoherency in their words now, as there was before betwixt their going on pilgrimage and sitting down here. This, then, is the mischief of it;—when heedless ones go on pilgrimage, 'tis twenty to one but they are served thus; for this Enchanted Ground is one of the last refuges that the enemy to pilgrims has; wherefore it is, as you see, placed almost at the end of the way, and so it standeth against us with the more advantage. For

x Prov. xxiii. 34, 35.

* It is the duty, and will be the practice of pilgrims, to strive to be instrumental to the good of others. But, at the same time, it behoves them to take heed to themselves, and watch, lest they catch harm from them and their conduct.

when, thinks the enemy, will these fools be so desirous to sit down as when they are weary? and when so like to be weary as when almost at their journey's end? Therefore it is, I say, that the Enchanted Ground is placed so nigh to the land Beulah, and so near the end of their race. Wherefore let pilgrims look to themselves, lest it happen to them as it has done to these that, as you see, are fallen asleep, and none can awake them.*

Then the pilgrims desired with trembling to go forward; only they prayed their guide to strike a light, that they might go the rest of their way by the help of the light of a lantern. So he struck a light, and they went by the help of that through the rest of this way, though the darkness was very great.[y]* But the children began to be sorely weary, and they cried out unto Him that loveth pilgrims to make their way more comfortable. So by that they had gone a little farther, a wind arose, that drove away the fog; so the air became more clear. Yet they were not off (by much) of the Enchanted Ground; only now they could see one another better, and the way wherein they should walk.

THE LIGHT OF THE WORD.

THE CHILDREN CRY FOR WEARINESS.

y 2 Pet. i. 19.

* What a sound sleep of infatuation hath this enchanting world cast many a professor into! They are proof against all warnings, and dead as to any means of arousing them. When this sleep of death seizes the soul, it destroys faith, infatuates reason, and causes men to talk incoherently. They have lost the language of pilgrims. Their state is awful: beware of it; pray against it. For "If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him," 1 John ii. 15.

† The word of God is the only light to direct our steps. He who neglects this, is a fool. He who sets up and looks for any other light to direct him, is mad, and knows not what he does. As folly and madness beset him, danger and distress will come upon him. Trembling souls will attend closely to God's word.

Now when they were almost at the end of this ground, they perceived that a little before them was a solemn noise, as of one that was much concerned. So they went on, and looked before them: and behold they saw, as they thought, a man upon his knees, with hands and eyes lifted up, and speaking, as they thought, earnestly to one that was above. They drew nigh, but could not tell what he said: so they went softly till he had done. When he had done, he got up, and began to run towards the Celestial City. Then Mr. Great-heart called after him, saying, Soho, friend! let us have your company, if you go, as I suppose you do, to the Celestial City. So the man stopped, and they came up to him. But as soon as Mr. Honest saw him, he said, I know this man. Then said Mr. Valiant-for-truth, Pr'ythee, who is it? It is one, said he, that comes from whereabout I dwelt. His name is Standfast; he is certainly a right good pilgrim.

STANDFAST UPON HIS KNEES ON THE ENCHANTED GROUND.

THE STORY OF STANDFAST.

So they came up to one another. And presently Standfast said to old Honest, Ho, father Honest, are you there? Ay, said he, that I am, as sure as you are there. Right glad I am, said Mr. Standfast, that I have found you on this road. And as glad am I, said the other, that I espied you on your knees. Then Mr. Standfast blushed, and said, But why, did you see me? Yes, that I did, quoth the other, and with my heart was glad at the sight. Why, what did you think? said Standfast. Think! said old Honest; what could I think? I thought we had an honest man upon the road, and therefore should have his company by and by. If you thought not amiss, said Standfast, how happy am I! But if I be not as I should, 'tis I alone must bear it. That is true, said the other; but your

TALK BETWIXT HIM AND MR. HONEST.

fear doth farther confirm me that things are right betwixt the Prince of pilgrims and your soul. For He saith, "Blessed is the man that feareth always.*

THEY FOUND HIM AT PRAYER.

VALIANT. Well but, brother, I pray thee tell us what was it that was the cause of thy being upon thy knees even now; was it for that some special mercy laid obligations upon thee, or how?

WHAT IT WAS THAT FETCHED HIM UPON HIS KNEES.

STAND. Why, we are, as you see, upon the Enchanted Ground; and as I was coming along, I was musing with myself of what a dangerous nature the road in this place was, and how many that had come even thus far on pilgrimage had here been stopped and been destroyed. I thought also of the manner of the death with which this place destroyeth men. Those that die here, die of no violent distemper: the death which such die is not grievous to them. For he that goeth away in a sleep, begins that journey with desire and pleasure. Yea, such acquiesce in the will of that disease.

HON. Then Mr. Honest interrupting him, said, Did you see the two men asleep in the arbour?

STAND. Ay, ay, I saw Heedless and Too-bold there; and, for aught I know, there they will lie till they rot.[z] But let me go on with my tale. As I was thus musing, as I said, there was one in very pleasant attire, but old, who presented herself to me, and offered me three things, to wit, her body, her purse, and her bed. Now, the truth is, I was both weary and sleepy: I am also as poor

z Prov. x. 7.

* He who feareth always, will pray evermore. The fear of the heart will bring pilgrims on their knees. He who fears to be or go wrong, will pray to be set right. The Lord will direct the heart, and order the goings, of all who cry to him. Fear and prayer go hand in hand. Joys shall attend them.

as an owlet, and that perhaps the witch knew. Well, I repulsed her once and again, but she put by my repulses, and smiled. Then I began to be angry; but she mattered that nothing at all. Then she made offers again, and said if I would be ruled by her, she would make me great and happy; for, said she, I am the mistress of the world, and men are made happy by me. Then I asked her name, and she told me it was Madam Bubble. This set me further from her; but she still followed me with enticements. Then I betook me, as you saw, to my knees, and with hands lifted up, and cries, I prayed to Him that had said he would help. So just as you came up, the gentlewoman went her way. Then I continued to give thanks for this my great deliverance; for I verily believe she intended no good, but rather sought to make stop of me in my journey.*

MADAM BUBBLE, OR THIS VAIN WORLD.

HON. Without doubt her designs were bad. But, stay, now you talk of her, methinks I either have seen her, or have read some story of her.

STAND. Perhaps you have done both.

HON. Madam Bubble! Is she not a tall, comely dame, something of a swarthy complexion.

STAND. Right, you hit it; she is just such a one.

HON. Doth she not speak very smoothly, and give you a smile at the end of a sentence?

* O pilgrims! beware of this Madam Bubble. Know and consider well, that you have a nature exactly suited to accept of her offers, and to fall in love with her promises. The riches, honours, and pleasures of the world, what mortal can withstand? or who can forego them? No one but he who sees more charms in Jesus, more glory in his cross, and more comfort in the enjoyment of his love and presence; and therefore is continually looking and crying to him, "Turn away mine eyes from beholding vanity. Instruct my soul in thy way. Keep me closely following thee. Lord, thou art the portion of my soul!"

STAND. You fall right upon it again, for these are her very actions.

HON. Doth she not wear a great purse by her side, and is not her hand often in it, fingering her money, as if that was her heart's delight?

STAND. 'Tis just so; had she stood by all this while, you could not more amply have set her forth before me, and have better described her features.

HON. Then he that drew her picture was a good limner, and he that wrote of her said true.

GREAT. This woman is a witch, and it is by virtue THE WORLD. of her sorceries that this ground is enchanted. Whoever doth lay his head down in her lap, had as good lay it down on that block over which the axe doth hang; and whoever lay their eyes upon her beauty, are counted the enemies of God.[a] This is she that maintaineth in their splendour all those that are the enemies of pilgrims. Yea, this is she that hath bought off many a man from a pilgrim's life. She is a great gossiper; she is always, both she and her daughters, at one pilgrim's heels or another, now commending, and then preferring the excellencies of this life. She is a bold and impudent slut: she will talk with any man. She always laugheth poor pilgrims to scorn, but highly commends the rich. If there be one cunning to get money in a place, she will speak well of him from house to house. She loveth banqueting and feasting mainly well; she is always at one full table or another. She has given it out in some places that she is a goddess, and therefore some do worship her. She has her time, and open places of cheating; and she will say and avow it, that none can show a good comparable to hers. She promiseth to dwell with children's children, if they

a James iv. 4. 1 John ii. 14, 15.

if they will but love her and make much of her. She will cast out of her purse gold like dust in some places and to some persons. She loves to be sought after, spoken well of, and to lie in the bosoms of men. She is never weary of commending her commodities, and she loves them most that think best of her. She will promise to some crowns and kingdoms, if they will but take her advice; yet many hath she brought to the halter, and ten thousand times more to hell.

STAND. Oh! said Standfast, what a mercy is it that I did resist her; for whither might she have drawn me!

GREAT. Whither! nay, none but God knows whither. But in general, to be sure, she would have drawn thee into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.[b] 'Twas she that set Absalom against his father, and Jeroboam against his master. 'Twas she that persuaded Judas to sell his Lord; and that prevailed with Demas to forsake the godly pilgrim's life. None can tell of the mischief that she doth. She makes variance betwixt rulers and subjects, betwixt parents and children, betwixt neighbour and neighbour, betwixt a man and his wife, betwixt a man and himself, betwixt the flesh and the spirit. Wherefore, good Mr. Standfast, be as your name is; and when you have done all, stand.

At this discourse there was among the pilgrims a mixture of joy and trembling; but at length they broke out and sang:

What danger is the pilgrim in!
How many are his foes!
How many ways there are to sin
No living mortal knows.

b 1 Tim. vi. 9.

Some in the ditch are spoiled, yea, can
Lie tumbling in the mire:
Some, though they shun the frying-pan,
Do leap into the fire.

After this, I beheld until they were come into the land of Beulah, where the sun shineth night and day. Here, because they were weary, they betook themselves a while to rest. And because this country was common for pilgrims, and because the orchards and vineyards that were here belonged to the King of the Celestial Country, therefore they were licensed to make bold with any of his things. But a little while soon refreshed them here; for the bells did so ring, and the trumpets continually sound so melodiously, that they could not sleep, and yet they received as much refreshing as if they slept their sleep never so soundly. Here also all the noise of them that walked the streets was, More pilgrims are come to town! And another would answer, saying, And so many went over the water, and were let in at the golden gates to-day! They would cry again, There is now a legion of shining ones just come to town, by which we know that there are more pilgrims upon the road; for here they come to wait for them, and to comfort them after all their sorrow! Then the pilgrims got up, and walked to and fro. But how were their ears now filled with heavenly noises, and their eyes delighted with celestial visions! In this land they heard nothing, saw nothing, felt nothing, smelt nothing, tasted nothing, that was offensive to their stomach or mind; only when they tasted of the water of the river over which they were to go, they thought that it tasted a little bitterish to the palate; but it proved sweeter when it was down.

DEATH BITTER TO THE FLESH, BUT SWEET TO THE SOUL.

Drawn by H. Melville. Engraved by W. Floyd.

In this place there was a record kept of the names of them that had been pilgrims of old, and a history of all the famous acts that they had done. It was here also much discoursed, how the river to some had had its flowings, and what ebbings it has had while others have gone over. It has been in a manner dry for some, while it has overflowed its banks for others.

DEATH HAS ITS EBBINGS AND FLOWINGS, LIKE THE TIDE.

In this place the children of the town would go into the King's gardens, and gather nosegays for the pilgrims, and bring them to them with much affection. Here also grew camphire, with spikenard and saffron, calamus, and cinnamon, with all the trees of frankincense, myrrh, and aloes, with all chief spices. With these the pilgrims' chambers were perfumed while they stayed here; and with these were their bodies anointed, to prepare them to go over the river when the time appointed was come.

Now, while they lay here, and waited for the good hour, there was a noise in the town that there was a post come from the Celestial City, with matter of great importance to one Christiana, the wife of Christian the pilgrim. So inquiry was made for her, and the house was found out where she was. So the post presented her with a letter. The contents were, Hail, good woman; I bring thee tidings that the Master calleth for thee, and expecteth that thou shouldst stand in his presence, in clothes of immortality, within these ten days.

A MESSENGER OF DEATH SENT TO CHRISTIANA.

HIS MESSAGE.

When he had read this letter to her, he gave her therewith a sure token that he was a true messenger, and was come to bid her make haste to be gone. The token was, an arrow with a point sharpened with love, let easily into her heart, which by degrees wrought so

effectually with her, that at the time appointed she must be gone.

HOW WELCOME DEATH IS TO THEM THAT HAVE NOTHING TO DO BUT TO DIE.

When Christiana saw that her time was come, and that she was the first of this company that was to go over, she called for Mr. Great-heart her guide, and told him how matters were. So he told her he was heartily glad of the news, and could have been glad had the post come for him. Then she bid him that he should give advice how all things should be prepared for her journey. So he told her, saying, Thus and thus it must be, and we that survive will accompany you to the river side.

HER SPEECH TO HER GUIDE.

TO HER CHILDREN.

Then she called for her children, and gave them her blessing, and told them that she had read with comfort the mark that was set in their foreheads, and was glad to see them with her there, and that they had kept their garments so white. Lastly, she bequeathed to the poor that little she had, and commanded her sons and daughters to be ready against the messenger should come for them.

TO MR. VALIANT-FOR-TRUTH.

When she had spoken these words to her guide, and to her children, she called for Mr. Valiant-for-truth, and said unto him, Sir, you have in all places showed yourself true-hearted; be faithful unto death, and my King will give you a crown of life. I would also entreat you to have an eye to my children; and if at any time you see them faint, speak comfortably to them. For my daughters, my sons' wives, they have been faithful, and a fulfilling of the promise upon them will be their end. But she gave Mr. Standfast a ring.

TO MR. STANDFAST.

TO OLD HONEST.

Then she called for old Mr. Honest, and said of him, "Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile." Then said he, I wish you a fair day when you

set out for Mount Sion, and shall be glad to see that you go over the river dryshod. But she answered, Come wet, come dry, I long to be gone; for however the weather is in my journey, I shall have time enough when I come there to sit down and rest me and dry me.

TO MR READY-TO-HALT.

Then came in that good man Mr. Ready-to-halt, to see her. So she said to him, Thy travel hitherto has been with difficulty; but that will make thy rest the sweeter. But watch, and be ready; for at an hour when ye think not, the messenger may come.

TO MR. DESPONDENCY AND HIS DAUGHTER.

After him came Mr. Despondency and his daughter Much-afraid; to whom she said, You ought with thankfulness for ever to remember your deliverance from the hands of Giant Despair, and out of Doubting-castle. The effect of that mercy is, that you are brought with safety hither. Be ye watchful, and cast away fear; be sober, and hope to the end.

TO MR. FEEBLE-MIND.

Then she said to Mr. Feeble-mind, Thou wast delivered from the mouth of Giant Slay-good, that thou mightest live in the light of the living, and see thy King with comfort. Only I advise thee to repent of thine aptness to fear and doubt of his goodness, before he sends for thee; lest thou shouldst, when he comes, be forced to stand before him for that fault with blushing.

HER LAST DAY, AND MANNER OF DEPARTURE.

Now the day drew on that Christiana must be gone. So the road was full of people to see her take her journey. But, behold, all the banks beyond the river were full of horses and chariots, which were come down from above to accompany her to the city gate. So she came forth, and entered the river, with a beckon of farewell to those that followed her.

The last words that she was heard to say were, I come, Lord, to be with thee and bless thee! So her children and friends returned to their place, for those that waited for Christiana had carried her out of their sight. So she went and called, and entered in at the gate with all the ceremonies of joy that her husband Christian had entered with before her. At her departure, the children wept. But Mr. Great-heart and Mr. Valiant played upon the well-tuned cymbal and harp for joy. So all departed to their respective places.*

MR. READY-TO-HALT SUMMONED.

In process of time, there came a post to the town again, and his business was with Mr. Ready-to-halt. So he inquired him out, and said, I am come from Him whom thou hast loved and followed, though upon crutches; and my message is to tell thee that he expects thee at his table to sup with him in his kingdom, the next day after Easter; wherefore prepare thyself for this journey. Then he also gave him a token that he was a true messenger, saying, "I have broken thy golden bowl, and loosed thy silver cord."[c]

PROMISES.

After this, Mr. Ready-to-halt called for his fellow-pilgrims, and told them, saying, I am sent for, and God shall surely visit you also. So he desired Mr. Valiant to make his will. And because he had nothing to bequeath to them that should survive him but his crutches and his good wishes, therefore thus

c Eccles. xiii. 6.

* O how blessed is the death of the righteous, who die in the Lord! Even a wicked Balaam could wish for this. But it will be granted to none but those who have lived in the Lord, whose souls have been quickened by his Spirit to come unto Jesus, believe in him, and glory of him as their righteousness and salvation, and desire to be found in him, in life, in death, and at the bar of judgment. O may we cry to the Lord, to make us of this happy number!

he said, These crutches I bequeath to my son that shall tread in my steps, with an hundred warm wishes that he may prove better than I have been. Then he thanked Mr. Great-heart for his conduct and kindness, and so addressed himself to his journey. When he came to the brink of the river he said, Now I shall have no more need of these crutches, since yonder are chariots and horses for me to ride on. The last words he was heard to say were, Welcome life!* So he went his way.

HIS WILL.

HIS LAST WORDS.

After this, Mr. Feeble-mind had tidings brought him that the post sounded his horn at his chamber-door. Then he came in, and told him, saying, I am come to tell thee that thy Master hath need of thee, and that in a very little time thou must behold his face in brightness. And take this as a token of the truth of my message: "Those that look out at the windows shall be darkened." Then Mr. Feeble-mind called for his friends, and told them what errand had been brought unto him, and what token he had received of the truth of the message. Then he said, Since I have nothing to bequeath to any, to what purpose should I make a will? As for my feeble mind, that I will leave behind me, for that I shall have no need of in the place whither I go, nor is it worth bestowing upon the poorest pilgrims: wherefore, when I am gone, I desire that you, Mr. Valiant, would bury it in a dunghill. This done, and the day being come on which he was to depart, he entered the river as the rest. His last words were, Hold out, faith and patience! So he went over to the other side.

FEEBLE-MIND SUMMONED.

HE MAKES NO WILL.

HIS LAST WORDS.

* See the joyful end of one ready to halt at every step. Take courage hence, ye lame, halting pilgrims.

When days had many of them passed away, Mr. Despondency was sent for; for a post was come, and brought this message to him: Trembling man! these are to summon thee to be ready with the King by the next Lord's day, to shout for joy for thy deliverance from all thy doubtings. And, said the messenger, that my message is true, take this for a proof: so he gave him a grasshopper to be a burden unto him.[d]

MR. DESPONDENCY SUMMONED.

Now, Mr. Despondency's daughter, whose name was Much-afraid, said, when she heard what was done, that she would go with her father. Then Mr. Despondency said to his friends, Myself and my daughter you know what we have been, and how troublesomely we have behaved ourselves in every company. My will and my daughter's is, that our desponds and slavish fears be by no man ever received, from the day of our departure for ever; for I know that after my death they will offer themselves to others. For to be plain with you, they are ghosts which we entertained when we first began to be pilgrims, and could never shake them off after; and they will walk about, and seek entertainment of the pilgrims: but for our sakes, shut the doors upon them.* When the time was come for them to depart, they went up to the brink of the river. The last words of Mr. Despondency were, Farewell, night; welcome day! His

HIS DAUGHTER GOES TOO.

HIS WILL.

HIS LAST WORDS.

d Eccles. xii. 5.

* Pilgrims, mind this. It is as much your duty to strive, in the strength of the Lord, against unreasonable doubts and slavish fears, as against sin. Nay, are they not, in their own nature, the worst of sins? as they spring from infidelity, and dishonour God's precious truth, glorious grace, and everlasting salvation. Never, never, then, cherish or give way to them, but resist, and shut the door of your hearts against them.

daughter went through the river singing, but none could understand what she said.

Then it came to pass a while after, that there was a post in the town that inquired for Mr. Honest. So he came to the house where he was, and delivered to his hand these lines: Thou art commanded to be ready against this day sevennight, to present thyself before thy Lord, at his Father's house. And for a token that my message is true, "All the daughters of music shall be brought low."[e] Then Mr. Honest called for his friends, and said unto them, I die, but shall make no will. As for my honesty, it shall go with me; let him that comes after be told of this. When the day that he was to be gone was come, he addressed himself to go over the river. Now, the river at that time overflowed its banks in some places; but Mr. Honest in his life-time had spoken to one Good-conscience to meet him there, the which he also did, and lent him his hand, and so helped him over. The last words of Mr. Honest were, Grace reigns! So he left the world.*

MR. HONEST SUMMONED.

HE MAKES NO WILL.

GOOD-CONSCIENCE HELPS MR. HONEST OVER THE RIVER.

After this it was noised abroad that Mr. Valiant-for-truth was taken with a summons by the same post as the other, and had this for a token that the summons was true, "That his pitcher was broken at the fountain."[f] When he understood it, he called for his friends, and told them of it. Then said he, I am going to my Father's; and though with great difficulty I have got hither, yet now I do not

MR. VALIANT-FOR-TRUTH SUMMONED.

e Eccles. xii. 4. f Eccles. xii. 6.

* O how happy to die, under a sweet sense of the reign of grace! Such have their consciences purified by the blood, and made good by the faith of the resurrection, of Jesus. And they shall reign with him, in his kingdom.

repent me of all the trouble I have been at to arrive where I am. My sword I give to him that shall succeed me in my pilgrimage, and my courage and skill to him that can get it. My marks and scars I carry with me, to be a witness for me that I have fought His battles who now will be my rewarder. When the day that he must go hence was come, many accompanied him to the river-side, into which as he went he said, "Death, where is thy sting?" And as he went down deeper, he said, "Grave, where is thy victory?" So he passed over, and all the trumpets sounded for him on the other side.*

HIS WILL.

HIS LAST WORDS.

Then there came forth a summons for Mr. Standfast. This Mr. Standfast was he that the rest of the pilgrims found upon his knees in the Enchanted Ground. And the post brought it him open in his hands; the contents thereof were, that he must prepare for a change of life, for his Master was not willing that he should be so far from him any longer. At this Mr. Standfast was put into a muse. Nay, said the messenger, you need not doubt of the truth of my message; for here is a token of the truth thereof: "Thy wheel is broken at the cistern. Then he called to him Mr. Great-heart, who was their guide, and said unto him, Sir, although it was not my hap to be much in your good company during the days of my pilgrimage, yet, since the time I knew you, you have been profitable to me. When I came from home, I left behind me a wife and five small children; let me entreat you at your return, (for I know

MR. STANDFAST.

HE CALLS FOR MR. GREAT-HEART.

HIS SPEECH TO HIM.

* In the truth of Jesus, is victory. He who is most valiant for it, shall share most of its comforts in life and in death. O Lord, increase our faith in the never-failing word of truth and grace, for thy glory and our soul's triumph!

that you go and return to your Master's house, in hopes that you may yet be a conductor to more of the holy pilgrims,) that you send to my family, and let them be acquainted with all that hath and shall happen unto me. Tell them moreover of my happy arrival at this place, and of the present and late blessed condition I am in. Tell them also of Christian and Christiana his wife, and how she and her children came after her husband. Tell them also of what a happy end she made, and whither she is gone; I have little or nothing to send to my family, unless it be prayers and tears for them; of which it will suffice that you acquaint them, if peradventure they may prevail. When Mr. Standfast had thus set things in order, and the time being come for him to haste him away, he also went down to the river. Now there was a great calm at that time in the river; wherefore Mr. Standfast, when he was about half way in, stood a while, and talked with his companions that had waited upon him thither. And he said, This river has been a terror to many; yea, the thoughts of it also have often frightened me; but now methinks I stand easy; my foot is fixed upon that on which the feet of the priests that bare the ark of the covenant stood while Israel went over Jordan.[g] The waters indeed are to the palate bitter, and to the stomach cold; yet the thoughts of what I am going to, and of the conduct that waits for me on the other side, doth lie as a glowing coal at my heart. I see myself now at the end of my journey; my toilsome days are ended. I am going to see that head that was crowned with thorns,* and that face that was spit

HIS ERRAND TO HIS FAMILY.

HIS LAST WORDS.

g Josh. iii. 17.

* Oh, the blessedness, and joy of faith! How does it bring near, and realize the sight of Christ in glory! Do we indeed see Christ by the

upon for me. I have formerly lived by hearsay and faith; but now I go where I shall live by sight, and shall be with him in whose company I delight myself. I have loved to hear my Lord spoken of; and wherever I have seen the print of his shoe in the earth, there I have coveted to set my foot too.* His name has been to me as a civet-box; yea, sweeter than all perfumes. His voice to me has been most sweet; and his countenance I have more desired than they that have most desired the light of the sun. His words I did use to gather for my food, and for antidotes against my faintings. He has held me, and hath kept me from mine iniquities; yea, my steps hath he strengthened in his way.

Now, while he was thus in discourse, his countenance changed; his strong man bowed under him: and after he had said, Take me, for I come unto thee, he ceased to be seen of them.

But glorious it was to see how the open region was filled with horses and chariots, with trumpeters and pipers, with singers and players upon stringed instruments, to welcome the pilgrims as they went up, and followed one another in at the beautiful gate of the city.†

eye of faith? Is he the one, the chief object of our souls? Is he precious to us? Verily, then we shall count our days on earth toilsome ones, and long for the full fruition of him in glory. Oh! it will be our great glory to see that dear Man, whose blessed head was crowned with thorns, and whose lovely face was spit upon, for us. O that we may be living every day upon him and to him, till we see him as he is, and enjoy him where he is, crying, "Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly!"

* Can you say this? Do you love to hear of the precious name of Jesus? Do you covet to follow him, and to tread in his steps? Oh, what has grace wrought! Be humble before Jesus. Be joyful in him, and thankful to him.

† At the close of this excellent book, let me address one word, reader, to your soul and mine. What think we of a pilgrim's life, and a pilgrim's death? His life begins with the knowledge of Christ,

As for Christiana's children, the four boys that Christiana brought, with their wives and children, I did not stay where I was till they were gone over. Also, since I came away, I heard one say that they were yet alive, and so would be for the increase of the church in that place where they were, for a time.

Should it be my lot to go that way again, I may give those that desire it an account of what I here am silent about. Meantime I bid my reader

FAREWELL.

and ends by dying in him, and eternally enjoying of him. And all through life, the pilgrim looks to, and lives upon, Christ. Blessed beginning! comfortable living! joyful dying!

Now, have we part and lot in this matter? Is Christ our life? the life of our souls? If he is, we shall live by faith upon him, rely on his atonement, glory in his righteousness, rejoice in his salvation, desiring to have done with all sin, and to be dead to all self-righteous confidence; and in heart, lip, and life, studying to glorify him, by devoting ourselves to him, looking, longing, and waiting for his coming to receive us to Himself, that where He is, there we may also!

As many as live by this faith, and walk according to this rule, peace be on them, from the holy, blessed, and glorious Trinity. Amen.

THE END.

LONDON: PRINTED BY FISHER, SON, & CO.

For nearly four centuries, Constantinople remained the same—an Asiatic and Mohammedan city on an European and Christian soil. Incipient innovations, however, tell us that a great change, effected principally by the fearful energies of one determined and enlightened man, is in progress, and will soon obliterate the peculiar features of this singular Capital and all it contains, and assimilate them to the civilized nations by which it is surrounded.

Its local beauties and peculiarities, it is true, must remain unaltered, as the permanent character which the hand of nature has impressed upon it. Its seven romantic hills, its golden harbour, its lovely Bosphorus, its exuberant vegetation, and its robust and comely people, will still exist,—but the swelling dome, the crescent-crowned spire, the taper minaret, the gigantic cypress waving over the last resting-place on earth, and indicating that silence and sorrow and sadness dwell there, the snow-white turban, the brilliant-coloured beniche, the light caïque, and the ponderous galley, will no longer give to its lands and waters those peculiar and beautiful characteristics which now distinguish them—they will probably pass away even in the memory of living man, and the future traveller will search for them only in the repertories of pictorial representation.

In addition to Constantinople and its Environs, this Work will comprise Views of the Seven Churches of Asia Minor. These awe-inspiring scenes, so strongly attesting the truth of the Gospel, and the fulfilment of prophecies, which doomed the lukewarm votaries of Christianity to dispersion, and their once crowded temples to neglect, cannot fail to excite the highest degree of interest in every bosom warmed with a spark of religious feeling. On the score of novelty, they will also have paramount claims upon public attention.

To secure such Drawings as would not only faithfully portray the landscape portion of these interesting objects, but, in addition, the habits, manners, religious peculiarities, customs, and costumes, that so strikingly distinguish the Osmanlie from every other native of Europe, the publishers engaged the services of Mr. ALLOM, whose talents as an artist has already advanced him to a high rank in his profession. His figures are always happily grouped, and introduced for some object of instruction: and as no part of Europe is less known from written history than "the land of those who bend the knee at Mecca," so, none can more advantageously be placed before the public in expressive scenic representation than the Turkish Empire. The Drawings, which on their arrival in London were exhibited at "The Graphic Society" and "Artists' Conversazione," excited universal admiration.

For the literary part, the valuable assistance of the Rev. ROBERT WALSH, LL.D. and of JOHN CARNE, Esq. has been procured—both peculiarly qualified for the task assigned them:—the former, from the prominent situation he held as an attaché of the British Embassy at the Ottoman Porte, and by the able and popular manner in which he has already written upon Constantinople—the latter, from personal acquaintance with the hallowed scenes to be depicted. The whole, thus embellished and illustrated, bids fair, the proprietors trust, to become a standard work, alike valuable as a pictorial and historical record of scenes and times which can never fail to excite inquiry and stimulate research, and, in continuation with the Illustrations of Fisher's "Syria and the Holy Land," already published, will constitute one beautiful and uniform delineation of

"This clime of the East, this land of the Sun"

FISHER, SON, & CO., LONDON, PARIS, & NEW YORK.